

Boycotts and BarFlies

<http://www.fanfiction.net/s/3912153/1/>

Author: <html><head> <META HTTP-EQUIV='Content-Type' CONTENT='text/html; charset=UTF-8'>

Chapter 1 to 38

Saved by Fanfiction Downloader

Program, Updates: <http://www.home-eisele.de>

Bugs, Errors, Problems: raimond@home-eisele.de

Chapter: 1

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

So here is a new story...very different from my others, so give it a chance. I wanted to try and write a Bella and Edward fall in love story. Everyone is human and living in Portland, Oregon. Review and let me know if it sucks. It's based on that cliché that as soon as you stop looking for a girlfriend/boyfriend that's when you fall in love.

Boycotts and Barflies

Love isn't something you find. Love is something that finds you.
--Loretta Young

BPOV

I found myself on yet another bad date...the story of my life it seemed. The Italian restaurant was dimly lit, with the smells of garlic and tomatoes filling the air around us. The clanking of dishes rang in my ears as I intently studied the red and white checkered tablecloth, pushing breadcrumbs from my roll into a small pile, wondering how much longer I would have to endure this torture. I glanced up when I suddenly heard my name called, and saw my date, Tyler, looking at me with an irritated look on his face.

"Sorry Tyler, I zoned. You were saying... something about that new computer program at work. I'm listening, I swear." Tyler worked for an insurance company...Mr. Exciting... not! He had been dribbling on endlessly about accident rates in the Pacific Northwest since we got to the restaurant. Like an answer to an unspoken prayer, my cell phone vibrated in my pocket. I glanced down at the phone and saw the caller ID said 'Alice'. Thank God! I was almost free...

"Oh, Tyler, I'm so sorry, I need to get this. I told Alice not to bother me unless it was an emergency." Yes, I was using the oldest trick in the book, having the girlfriend call midway through the date with an 'emergency' so I could bail if the date sucked. Unfortunately for me, this happened quite often on my dates lately, so much in fact, that I started going to church regularly so God wouldn't be tempted to give my mom some terminal illness as a punishment for all my lying about her health.

"Alice, I told you not to call unless it's an emergency, I'm on a date with Tyler." I mouthed the word 'sorry' to Tyler of extra effect. He shrugged like it was no big deal.

"Hi Bells, does he suck?" Alice giggled. I heard Rosalie in the background scream "I warned you Bella..."

"I had no idea..." I answered, trying not to burst into laughter.

"Oh come on, he practically has 'dull' tattooed across his forehead. What story are you going to use today, mom in the hospital, mom took a nasty fall, mom hit by a bus? You know those would require extra prayers this week Bells..." Alice teased.

"I that's terrible..." I quipped back. Tyler looked confused trying to decipher my end of the conversation.

"Ok, it's that bad huh? Going for maximum impact, ready to bolt immediately? Well, I don't know what you were thinking in accepting the date, he isn't even cute Bella. Just because he lives in the building, doesn't mean you have to go on a date with him, you should have just said no or told him we were lesbians...something. God, we seriously need to discuss raising your standards when you get home. Put him out of his misery...go with the naked mom story. Movie starts in fifteen..." Fortunately, Alice talks incredibly fast so it only took her seconds to relay the message. Every so often, I would drop my head into my hands to sell the story a bit more.

"Of course I understand... no, thank you so much for letting me know Alice! I'll meet you there." I snapped the phone shut and tossed my napkin on the table. "Tyler I have to go..." I proceeded to replay my favorite sob story of my schizophrenic mom who forgot to take her meds and was found naked in a phone booth downtown. I turned on the waterworks, a gift I had, that came in quite handy. After a few apologies and a doggie bag, no point wasting perfectly good food when there are starving people in the world, and it was Alice's payment for saving me, I ran out of the restaurant into the chilly, Portland air. 'Free at last, Free at last' I thought, as I jumped into my car and cranked the radio.

I smelled the popcorn as soon as I stepped off of the elevator. Alice and Rosalie must be close to starting the movie, so I rushed down the hall, not wanting to miss it. "Hi Honeys! I'm home..." As I came through the door, I gently tossed my keys into the wicker basket on the counter. Alice and Rosalie were perched on the couch, remote control and popcorn in hand.

"Bella!" They squealed in delight. "You escaped!!"

Rosalie, Alice and I had been best friends for the last two years. We met during college, and after a horrible time living with insane roommates in the dorms, we decided to get an apartment together and have enjoyed every minute of it. These days, we were all currently in the midst of a 'dating drought' as we liked to call it. None of us could find a decent guy so we had been going on a series of random dates that ranged from bad to disgusting on the date scale. Lately, our Friday nights involved one or two of us being saved from a bad date, a big bowl of popcorn and a Brad Pitt movie to take our minds off of our misery.

"Rose, what are you doing home already? You had a date too...how'd you get home before me?" Her date was at the same times as mine but I remembered she had already been home when Alice called me.

She blushed furiously at my question. Rosalie had very high standards when it came to guys. I loved her, but if a guy wasn't able to be on the cover of a magazine, she really had no interest in him. That was Rose, that's just how she was wired. If it was a blind date, she always had the guy wear a red rose on his lapel so she could check him out before she actually introduced herself to him, or run away if he wasn't up to her standard of good looking.

"You know I hate blind dates, I did it as a favor to this girl at work, and after seeing this guy, I'm not sure I'm going to ever speak to Cindy again! He was this scrawny blond guy with a cheesy mustache! I mean really, when have I ever liked a guy with facial hair? Ug! I gave the hostess twenty dollars to tell him I threw up in the parking lot." She said completely unashamed of her actions. Rosalie was not one to waste her time with being

nice, and I was glad she liked me, because I wouldn't want to be on her bad side.

They made their way over to the kitchen counter and plopped down at the bar stools. I placed the foil swan with my leftovers in it in front of Alice. "Thank you for saving me from Tyler the Dull." I said with a bow as I stood across the counter from her.

"No problem Bella, but next time, please listen to us when we tell you someone isn't right for you, we know these things...I can see the future..." She said in her silly psychic voice as she rolled her eyes back in her head. It was her silliness I loved most about her, Alice could always put a smile on my face.

"So we are the big losers this weekend Rosalie, at least I got a decent appetizer out of it and Alice got a foil swan of lasagna." I laughed trying to be a 'glass half full' girl.

Rose rolled her eyes "Yes Bella, but that is also an hour of your life you will never get back, an hour wasted... on a dork. I however, spent my hour productively...shopping! Look at these fabulous shoes I found." She squealed as she threw her foot into the air happily.

After an extensive discussions about the versatility of black patent leather heels in your fall wardrobe, I let out a loud sigh. "Girls what are we going to do about all these losers we have been going on dates with? Where are all the good guys hiding?"

Alice laughed "If we just keep going, eventually we will have dated every loser in the greater Seattle area, and then we'll finally come across a nice guy."

"Yes, but we'll be eighty years old by then, in a nursing home, eating pudding, and making Popsicle stick sculptures!" I teased. "OOHH can we be roomies in the nursing home?" Alice squealed. "Then, we can wear out Juicy sweat suits and make all the other old people jealous of our fabulous style."

"Enough about getting old and wrinkly, lets focus on the here and now, where we look fit and fabulous. I'm with Bella, I'm tired of kissing frogs, I want to make out with a prince." Rosalie whined. "Is that so much to ask? One hot, gorgeous, mentally stable, gainfully employed, guy that doesn't smell like mothballs with an amazing personality..." Her eyes glazed over as she began to dream of her perfect man.

I glanced over at Alice and she had the same dreamy look on her face. I went to the refrigerator, took out three beers and opened them before I placed one in front of each of us. "I propose we go on a Boy Boycott until 2008." I said as I waved my beer into the air. "Who's with me?"

Both of them thought about it for a few seconds before smiles crept onto their faces. Alice of course, had questions "What are the rules of a boy boycott? No dates I assume, but what else?? Can we kiss random boys? What if they kiss us, well it doesn't happen to me much, but Rose gets that a lot so I figured I'd ask..."

"Whoa there Alice, lets make a list!" I mumbled as I dug in the drawer for a pen. Rose snatched a notebook off the nearby desk as I chuckled her the pen.

"Ok, Boy Boycott Official Rules" she wrote across the top of the page.

Rule number one : No dates.

Rule number two: No tongue kissing with boys. Closed lip kissing fine. If a guy crams his

tongue down your throat unexpectedly, it doesn't count unless you kiss him back. (AKA Roslaie's rule)

Rule number three: No sex... of any kind. If you wouldn't want to see your parents do it in front of you that counts as 'sex' and it's off limits.

Rule number four: Each of us puts \$200 into the pot. If you break the rules of the boycott, you lose the money. The last person (s) standing gets the money to spend on a hot new pair of shoes to be worn on their first date of 2008 and gets eternal bragging rights about their superior will power.

Rosalie flipped the paper around so Alice and I could read it and check to see if we agreed with all the rules. We quickly scanned the list, and I was the first to sign the paper followed by Alice, and finally Rosalie. I ran into my room and grabbed my emergency money and put \$200 cash onto the counter. Alice and Rose did the same thing. We hid the winnings in the cookie jar and tucked it in the corner of the counter.

"To the boycott!" I said as I raised my beer into the air. "To the boycott!" Rosalie and Alice said in unison.

EPOV

The smoke in the club was starting to burn my eyes. I glanced to my left and saw Emmett and Jasper sitting on the nearby bench, with a blond draped over each of their laps. Suzie and Sandy, were a set of twins from California with incredible bodies, but about as much personality as a toilet seat.

"Eddie..." I heard a whiny voice whisper in my ear. I turned to my right to see Donna, my date for the evening, and brainless friend of the twins, pouting inches from my face. "Eddie, why aren't you paying attention to me." She asked as she snaked her way into my lap. Because your dull, dim, disgusting, drab, desolate, demonic...I thought to myself. Nice use of the letter 'D' Edward...

I flashed a smile that I knew would let me get away with anything and said "Donna, my name is Edward not Eddie, please try and remember that or I won't answer you next time..." I saw Emmett start laughing out of the corner of my eye as Suzie, or was it Sandy, stroked his hair.

"Come on Edward let's dance!" Donna squealed. "I love this song." She shouted over the music, pulling on my arm.

"I don't dance Donna, sorry." Jasper raised an eyebrow at me. He knew I was lying, I loved to dance, but Donna wasn't even worth the walk across the dance floor. I looked at both Emmett and Jasper and pinched the bridge of my nose with my fingers which was our sign for 'Get me the hell out of here before I vomit.'

They both laughed, and stood up, somewhat knocking Suzie and Sandy to the floor. "Sorry ladies, Edward has a migraine, we need to be going. Thanks for a pleasant evening...we'll... see you around." Jasper said, as he gallantly kissed Suzie's hand, or was it Sandy's?

We went through the formality of exchanging phone numbers with them, however, the one I gave Donna was to a local pizza joint. My favorite way to end a bad date. A few kisses on the cheek later and we were in Emmett's Jeep flying down the highway.

"What the hell were we thinking guys? If I had to listen to one more story about Donna's boring sorority I was going to stab myself with a pencil." I shuddered at the memory. My evening had been filled with countless stories about rushing and pledging...she was mind-numbingly dull.

"Hey man, it was twins! I had to go for it, you never know, sometimes twins can be a really good time. Of course this time, not so much...God were they stupid or what? You know Suzie ...or was it Sandy...well anyway whoever she was, she actually asked me if she was the first girl I'd picked up at work! Can you imagine..." Emmett laughed.

Jasper, Emmett and I had known each other for years. We met in college and started bar tending at a local nightclub The Downunder for the last eighteen months. It was easy money and working with my buddies was the best. On more than one occasion, we had taken out girls we had met while bar tending. We lovingly called them the 'Bar-Flies'. Some of our co workers I'm sure, considered us man-whores for our free wheeling ways, but we were young and good looking so we used what we had, to our advantage. More often than not, the girls ended up being bubble heads and we left them sitting in some nightclub, never to see them again. Tonight was no different.

Since it was common knowledge I always kept my refrigerator stocked, Emmett and Jasper parked the car and followed me up to my apartment for a late night snack. Three beers, and a package of mini corn dogs later we were sitting around my kitchen table questioning if there were and real girls in the Greater Portland area.

"Look at us. Just how pitiful are we? It's 10:45 on a Friday night and we are huddled around the table eating mini corn dogs and drinking beer alone." I complained. Of course, being alone with my friends was a far better option than being out on a horrible date with another brainless Barbie, but I needed something... something more in my life.

"We do look like losers I'll give you that. And we are good looking guys, what is wrong with us?" Emmett asked with irritation. Jasper looked at me and shrugged, but Emmett was right. We were good looking, tons of girls threw themselves at us every night, unfortunately they weren't girls you could have a conversation with that lasted more than 3 minutes. Their skills were more in the physical realm, rather than intelligence. Definitely not the kind of girls you'd ever take home to meet your mom that's for sure.

Jasper thought about it for a second as he chewed on his last corn dog. "You know, I don't think there's anything wrong with us...what's that one song... 'Looking for Love in all the Wrong Places'...I think that's our problem. I mean, my mom keeps telling me I'm not going to meet a nice girl at the bar, all the nice girls wouldn't be caught dead picking up a guy in a bar, they're off at the museum or the library. Maybe she's right."

Emmett's mouth fell open in shock "Are you seriously suggesting we go trolling the library for chicks? Or a museum...wait, like Art museum or are we talking dinosaur bones, I could do the dinosaur bones, Art will just make my eyes hurt."

I considered Mama Whitlock's point, most nice girls don't hit on the bar tenders at the bar...it seemed like a reasonable assumption. It only followed suit that libraries and museums wouldn't be filled with bimbos and brainless twits. You had to actually know what a book was to be at the library and one must appreciate Art to be at a museum.

Slamming my hand on the table, I said. "I think we should give it a try! Let's go look for the nice girls in town. No more Bar-Flies. If we meet them at the bar, they are off limits."

I glanced back and forth between Emmet and Jasper trying to gage their reactions to my suggestion. Emmett was more interested in chugging his beer than answering my question. Jasper however looked deep in thought.

"I'm with Edward, no more Bar-Flies, bring on the smart girls." He said with great enthusiasm. "Emmett?" Jasper asked. We both knew it was an all or none proposition it was the only way it would work.

A grin came across Emmett's face "Care to make it interesting, say with a small wager?" As childish as it sounded, we loved making bets with one another. We'd bet on the weather, how much snow we'd get over the winter, if Jasper would go home with a blond or brunette. If there was something to bet on, we found it.

"What is the bet Emmett?" I asked, my interest peaked.

"Well, don't they say sex ruins a relationship? And we are looking for quality girlfriends right? So, we each put \$200 in a pot and the last guy to have sex wins the money. That helps make sure none of us cheat and go have some meaningless quickie with a Bar-Fly. Sound reasonable?"

"Let's do it!" Jasper and I said enthusiastically. This probably wouldn't be easy, we were well outside our comfort zone by looking for nice girls, but we were going to give it our best effort. I for one loved a good challenge and this was sure to be one. Smart girls were...well smart.

Who knows what we may find if we look for love in all the right places.

So there it is chapter one... do you like it? Do you hate it? Please review and let me know. I am still working on my other story too...this has just been in my brain the last few days and I'm having fun with it! Thanks to my friend who I shared it with...you know who you are :) Review...

Chapter: 2

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Changes

BPOV

It was still early when I woke up to the strange sensation of my bed vibrating underneath me, while the sun streamed in through my window. "Are we having an earthquake?" I mumbled into my pillow, still refusing to open my eyes.

"No." A pixie like voice rang from the edge of my bed.

"Well, then unless you are Brad Pitt and you're trying to wake me up, to make sweet love to me, GO AWAY!" I screamed as I threw the covers tightly over my head. My arms braced for the wrestling match I knew would ensue.

Alice however, never being one to play fair, instead of fighting to free my head as a way to get me out of bed, she pulled up the bottom part of my comforter and began tickling my feet. "Bella, wake up, come on Bella, get up! We have things to do today."

I groaned and sat up in bed "What do we have to do today? It is Saturday... Saturdays were made for sleeping in. Why am I up at..." I glanced at my clock "8:30am!! Are you insane?" Before I could throw the blanket back over my head, Alice scooped it up off the bed and ran onto the family room with it. I streaked after her in my t shirt and underwear and tackled her somewhere near the coffee table.

"Ha! Give it back Alice. I'll see you in a few hours." I teased as I victoriously dragged my blanket back into my room and locked the door behind me.

"Drop the blanket" I heard a menacing voice say behind me.

"AARRGGHHH!" I screamed as I jumped into the air, flapping my arms to fend off my attacker.

Laughter filled my ears as I opened my eyes to see Rosalie flopped across my bed laughing hysterically. "Bella, that was priceless! Your face..." She said in between gasps for air.

"My loving roommates ladies and gentlemen. One tries to freeze me to death by stealing my blanket and the other tries to give me a heart attack all before 9 am!" I said as I sat down on my bed with a huff.

Alice tapped on the door. "Can I come in now please Bella! It's no fair Rose is in there..." She started whining like a little kid. I rolled my eyes at Rosalie and strolled over to the door and propped it open a crack. "What is the plan for today before I allow you to enter?"

"Just a little shopping silly, now move." Alice shoved open the door with her tiny frame and leapt to join Rose on my bed. Shopping with Rose and Alice was an experience not to be taken lightly. They worked as personal shoppers, a dream come true for them, to tell

the truth. And as much as I hated to admit it, they really did have an eye for things, but they were always trying to get me to dress more like them. I dressed for comfort, and if I was being totally honest, invisibility. I didn't like attention. They however, dressed to be noticed the second they entered the room

Our clothes illustrated our differences perfectly. They were self confident, and self assured women who stood out in a crowd. I conversely, was average, and mousy and I knew it. Guys would never look at me the same way they looked at Alice and Rose. There were guys in their league, the good looking model types, and then my league, the accountants and computer geeks.

"Fine, I'll go shopping, but I get two vetoes this time instead of the usual one, got it?" I insisted. Alice and Rosalie agreed grudgingly, they knew I could be extremely stubborn. If they went too overboard with their clothing choices for me, I could call into effect the veto and replace one item of their choosing with one item of mine, that way I got at least one thing I liked each shopping trip, this time, I would get two.

"Go shower and we'll head out! We are going to have so much fun." Alice shrieked as she ran out of my room to prepare for a day at the mall. I let out a large sigh, gave Rose a little shove, and dashed into the shower.

"Bella, what in the world do you have against fabrics with Lycra in them?" Alice shouted at me in the middle of the store as she waved a blue shirt in my face. We had been at the mall for hours trying on hundreds of outfits, so many in fact, that my head started to spin.

"That shirt clings to me Alice, I like things that flow." I fought back. I had already used both my vetoes of the day so I wasn't the proud owner of leather pants and a red sequin tube top. Now, I was on my own, and without a veto. It was up to me to persuade her to chose another shirt, however Alice wasn't easily swayed.

"You like things that are a size too big Bella, things that you can hide in, this looks amazing on you. It shows that you actually have some curves there honey." She said as she looked me up and down. "You're getting it, and these jeans to go with the shirt, no arguments. Your vetoes have all been used. HA!" She stormed over to the cashier and handed the girl her credit card. "This outfit is on me and I guarantee when you wear it, it will be a night to remember!"

With our final purchase jammed into my bag, we headed to lunch. The server brought over our drinks and I sucked down my whole glass of iced tea before I even had time to realize how thirsty I was. "So Bella, Alice and I have something we'd like to talk to you about..." Rose said with a bit of hesitation in her voice. I looked suspiciously at both of them, waiting for one of them to begin.

"Ok, there's the thing. Since we have a few weeks until we are allowed to date, we thought it might be a good time for you to...um...broaden your horizons when it comes to guys. We think you should use these weeks to...loosen up a bit?" Rose said carefully, waiting to see if I was going to haul off and hit her. Instead, I gave her a confused "Huh?"

"Bella, Bella, just like at a buffet, there all sorts of different 'flavors' if you will, of guys, exotic, spicy, foreign, hearty, and sweet, for you to sample, however you keep going for the comfort food section of the buffet. How many times can you eat fried chicken before you throw up? Haven't you ever just wanted to walk over and grab a handful of something different?" Alice asked excitedly as she leaned across the table awaiting my response.

"So, over the next few weeks, you want me to grab a handful of some foreign guy? Wouldn't that be against one of our rules or something?" I mumbled as I sucked the last sip of tea from my glass.

"Come on Bella we are serious. You keep choosing these dorky boring guys. You could do so much better than that..." Rosalie said with such sincerity, I almost believed her. But then I looked at her beautiful face and Alice's winning smile and crashed back to reality.

"Thanks girls, I know you mean well, but you two can 'eat from any part of the buffet' and no one would question you being there, I'm just not in your league, never have been, never will be. Can we drop the topic please." I asked as I tried to hold in the tears I felt creeping into my eyes.

"How can you say that Bella? You are great, funny, smarter than both of us combined, beautiful, loving and kind. Any guy, would be lucky to have you. All we are suggesting is that you raise your standards a little. Try flirting with a few guys you might not normally flirt with, what's the harm? You can't go on a date with them anyway and if you get rejected, who cares? You were going to go home with Rose and I anyway...no harm done. Come on Bella, we'll help you, let us teach you our ways...right Rose?" Rosalie nodded her head vigorously in agreement, her eyes wide with excitement. "Please Bella, for me will you just try..." Alice unleashed the full power of her pouty lip on me and of course, I caved.

"Fine Alice, I'll try. My face may be red permanently after this however...and I make no guarantees that I will be able to pull this off. Of course, if I am going to go outside my comfort zone in the next few weeks, you two will be joining me. When I think of a little character expanding activity for each of you, you have to go with the flow...no complaints. Deal?" I asked. I even raised an eyebrow at them, to dare them to disagree.

"This could be quite interesting for all of us." Rose whispered with a playful smile on her face.

O)O)O)O)O)O)O)OOO)

The next few weeks of the boycott were actually quite fun. Without having to worry about getting dates for the weekend or dreading being set up, our stress level went down tremendously. Our weekends turned into 'Girl's Night Out' and we would open the phone book and pick a new club every night.

Rose and Alice were teaching me the finer points of flirting. So far, I had flirted with a body builder who could lift 400 pounds, even Rose admitted later he was freakishly large, there was the pro soccer player from Brazil...from the international section of the buffet no doubt, and the guitar player with hair as long as mine. Needless to say, they had been pleasant conversations, but none of them were my cup of tea. The girls were however, proud of my willingness to try and talk to these guys, and I started to feel a bit more confident.

On Wednesday, I found Rosalie with her nose in the latest issue of Cosmo when I flopped down on the couch next to her. "Hi Rose! Guess what? I thought of something new I want you to try during our Boy Boycott. Are you up for it?" I asked. She lowered the magazine and looked seriously into my eyes.

"What is it Bells?" She asked with great caution.

"Football! I got three tickets to a Seattle Seahawks game this weekend. Are you up for a road trip?" I begged as I bounced excitedly on the couch. Sports were so not Rosalie's thing, but I loved football, probably because my dad was a complete sports junkie, so his love of football rubbed off on me. "Oh come on Rose, big, muscular guys in tight pants...I know you can appreciate that, I'll even bring binoculars for you...and there is shopping there too..." I didn't mention every item for sale had a Seahawk on it, she didn't need that much information.

"Fine Bella, but if some stupid football fan spills beer or nachos on me, I'm gonna smack the hell out of him." I threw my arms around her and squealed toward Alice's room. "Alice, she said yes! Looks like we're going on a road trip this weekend!"

With the girls both agreeing to go to the game, I threw on one of my cozy cardigan sweaters and headed out to pick up the tickets from my friend Angela. She was also working on her Masters in English at the university and was in most of my classes. She was working at the library this afternoon, so I headed over to the check out desk. Sure enough, Angela was sorting through the books in the return bin, making nice neat piles around the mess of books at her feet. "Bella! How are you today?" She waved from behind the stack of books in her hand.

"Hey Angela! Wow, looks like the book return threw up over here. What's up?" I started gathering books into my arms and placed them up on the counter trying not to mess up the piles she had already started.

"It's just that time of the year when we send out missing book notices, I guess a lot of people did some searching and found books under their beds this week." she chuckled as she continued sorting.

"I came to grab those tickets from you if that's still OK?" I asked eagerly.

"So you talked Rosalie into going huh? Was it the, hot guys in tight pants speech?" She said with a big smile.

"Yes, that and the shopping. I hope she likes Seahawk green!" We both began laughing as we imagined Rosalie dressed from head to toe in Seahawk gear. Of course if anyone could wear it and make it look hot, it would be Rose. Angela reached for her purse and dug around until she found the tickets.

"Have a great time! I was hoping to be further along on my research paper by now, but with things being so busy here...I've got behind. I'm just glad you will be able to go and use the tickets." Angela said with a smile. She glanced around at all the books and sighed. "Well, I guess I better get back to sorting."

"You know what, I have some time before I'm meeting Alice. How about I help you get some of these back on the shelves before I leave?"

"Bella, you are a lifesaver! I have a date with Ben tonight and I don't want to be stuck here late...thanks!" She pushed two huge piles in my direction. Lucky for Angela, I had spent so much time at this library, I was an honorary employee. I knew the Dewey decimal system as well as any librarian in town.

I walked around the desk and pulled a book cart over and began loading it with books. Angela threw a clipboard in my direction so I could keep track of the titles I was putting back on the shelves. I put on my glasses which were thick rimmed and black, and then

pulled a rubber band out for my purse. I threw my hair up into a tight bun, to keep it out of my face as I sorted the massive pile of books. When my cart was full, I headed off to the shelves.

The cart was finally starting to look halfway empty when I flopped into a nearby chair to take a break. I blew the pieces of hair out of my face that had fallen down of my bun. I must look lovely I thought to myself. As I stood up and headed down the next aisle, I saw three heads bobbing around on the other side of the bookcase. I could tell by their voices it was three guys, and they were snickering. Idiots I thought as I climbed up onto my stool and got back to my work. The thick book about Sherman's March to the Sea fell off the cart with a thud. "Crap" I mumbled as I climbed down off the stool but before I could get to the book, a hand reached out and held the book out to me.

"I believe you dropped this." A husky voice said in my ear. Startled, I spun around to see the biggest guy I had ever seen in my life standing inches from my face. I took a step back from him and removed the book from his hand.

"Um, thank you very much. Glad it didn't land on your foot." I laughed nervously.

"No problem." The big guy said as he stood there looking at me.

"Can I help you with something?" I asked, trying to be helpful.

"Yes, I was wondering if you could tell me where do you keep the old issues of Playboy?" The big guy asked in a completely serious voice.

"Sorry champ, no Playboys here. I do have some Medical books over in the reference section that you could probably see some boobs in, they'll just be old saggy boobs though, sorry. Do you know where the reference section is?" I pointed over his head very seriously. I took another book off the cart and climbed back up the stool to put it away. While I was up there, I heard a beautiful voice teasing the big guy.

"There you are. We thought you got lost, this being your first time in a library and all." I turned to see a guy with piercing green eyes joke as he slapped the big guy on the back. The tall blond stood leaning casually against the bookshelves. "Shut up!" I heard the big guy hiss before I came off the stool and he tried again.

"Um, thanks, I think I'll pass on the saggy, medical boob books, thanks. So what is your name?" He asked in what I think he considered a sexy voice, but I just found it creepy.

"My name? Wait a minute..." Something just hit me. What are three, exceptionally good looking guys doing in the library, which they all but admitted they have never set foot into before today's unless... "Did you guys hear somewhere that libraries are good places to try and pick up girls? Was it on the news again? Just so I know...are you actually hitting on me in the library?"

The look on the big guy's face was priceless. His mouth hung open while his friends were doubled over in silent laughter, politely remembering they were in a library after all. I glanced back at my cart and realized I still had a ton of books to get through so I decided to wrap this little chat up.

"Listen, you seem like a nice enough guy so I have a suggestion for you. Why don't you try a nice strip club, then you can get girls and boobs all at the same time. Not many girls here at the library are going to flash you their boobs, sorry. We library girls like to leave

something to the imagination..." Without waiting for their response, I took the cart and pushed it right past them, leaving the big guy speechless and his friends in tears of laughter.

Good job Bella... I thought to myself. Rose will love this one.

With my heart pounding in my chest, I hurried off a few aisles away to catch my breath a bit and hopefully lose them. Out of the corner of my eye, I saw a very large figure walk down the main walkway toward the door. I looked up and saw a beautiful pair of green eyes glance down the aisle at me, highly amused. I don't know what possessed me, but before I knew it, I winked at him and my mouth turned up into the biggest grin. He returned my grin and dashed off after his friends. My body got a bit tingly and then I shook it off and dove back into the books.

An hour later, I finished reshelving the last book on my cart. I hustled up to the desk and gave Angela a tired smile. "Bella I owe you big time! Thank you so much, I love you" She ran over than threw her arms around my neck.

"No problem, Ang. The afternoon was interesting to say the least. Did three guys come up here and try and hit on you too?" I asked with a laugh. Angela just looked at me like a sprouted a third eye. "No...why you got hit on?? In the library?"

I blew it off "Yeah, some guy was looking for playboy magazine, so I suggested he and his friends go to a strip club instead of the library. One of them was actually cute...Oh gosh look at the time! I need to run, Alice will kill me if I'm late.. thanks again for the tickets Angela." And I hurried out the door to meet Alice.

Please reveiw and let me know if I should continue :) Check out my poll too, it will end soon...

Chapter: 3

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks for all the supportive reviews! Here is a chapter just for you. This is Edward's side of the meeting at the library :

Playboys

EPOV

Another night at work, another Bar-Fly trying to pick me up. "Are you sure I can't make you change your mind? We could have a lot of fun together?" She whispered as she ran her fingers through my hair. Her long red hair cascaded over her freckled shoulders as she leaned across the bar.

"Sorry, but I have a girlfriend and she's a real bitch. Oh look, here she comes. Hi, honey." I waved over at Vicki, one of our servers at the bar. She was a nice girl, but her 12 facial piercings often made people afraid of her at first. She gave me a slightly confused wave back until I casually nodded my head at the redhead and she took the hint. Her eyes lit up with understanding and she blew me a kiss, then glared at the red head.

"That's your girlfriend?" she asked completely stunned.

"Yep. I told you she's a bitch. Last time someone hit on me at work, she broke the girl's nose." I said quite dramatically.

"Oh, well...um ...I gotta run, my friends are waiting for me...um see ya." She took one more quick glance in Vicki's direction before she sprinted out the door.

"Shoo bar fly, shoo" I heard Emmett laugh with a wave of his hand. Jasper just shook his head and said "I thought you might cave there for a second Edward, she was really cute."

"I'm not losing my \$200 bucks that quickly, give me some credit please." I said as I wiped down the bar. The lights had just come up, last call was over, so we started closing down shop. Emmett began washing glasses and Jasper took inventory. Vicki came over and smacked me in the back of the head.

"What the hell was that about? Can't you just tell your admirers to go away all on your own? I'm going to start charging every time you use me as your cover and make me blow you a kiss Edward. It's so lame. Now if you want, I'd be happy to punch them or perhaps even spit on them, that's more my style." Vicki had the toughest exterior, but was underneath it all, she was a really loyal friend which is why we got along so well.

I gave her a quick hug. "Thank you for saving me. You know you love being my pretend girlfriend Vicki, Steve even gave us his blessing." Steve was her very large boyfriend. He was a 6' 5" biker guy covered in tattoos who looked like he could eat me for breakfast. One night when he was at the bar, I told him of our no more Bar Fly bet and he offered Vicki as our 'personal fly swatter' he had called her.

"So have you guys found any nice girls yet? It has been a few weeks...how much longer do I have to do this? Last night it was Emmett and Jasper, tonight it was you Romeo. You guys better spend the next few days hunting for some nice girls. Don't you have this weekend off?" she asked faking irritation.

"Yeah- finally a free weekend. Don't worry, if we're lucky we'll have found some nice girls by then." I said to her with a wink.

"Good luck with that boys...see you in a few." She said with a wave as she ran over to Steve who was standing in the doorway grinning at her.

"Bye Vicki! Bye Steve!" Emmett yelled as they clasped hands and walked away.

It was close to 3am when Jasper dropped me off at home. I dropped my keys on the counter and immediately crawled into bed, pulling the covers tightly over my head. I flipped on my radio and drifted off to sleep. I was having the most wonderful dream about this girl in a blue sweater. I was just about to get close enough to kiss her when the phone started ringing.

My eye peeked out from under my blanket and I was temporarily blinded by the bright morning sun. I glanced at the clock as I started swatting my hand toward the sound of phone. Eventually, I knocked the receiver off the cradle and it crashed to the floor. "Crap!" I shouted "I'm coming, just a minute, stupid phone" I mumbled as I grabbed the receiver and rolled back onto my bed. "It isn't even noon yet, this better be important..." I hissed into the phone.

"How much beauty rest do you need pretty boy?" I heard Emmett quip into the phone.

"It's not beauty rest I need Emmett, what I need is time away from the SOUND OF YOUR VOICE!" I screamed into the phone.

"Dude! I have delicate ears you know...Jasper, you talk to the crab." I heard the phone hit something hard before Jasper's groggy voice said "Edward?"

"Did he just wake you up too?" I asked, now somewhat amused.

"Yes, do you want me to wait to kill him until you arrive or should I finish him off myself?" Jasper asked with a laugh.

"No wait for me, I want to see him suffer. So what the hell is the reason for the early wake up call?" I asked as I sat up in bed and tried to stretch.

"All I know is he ran in the room and jumped on my bed and blabbered something about going hunting today."

"Hunting? Like with guns? Don't you usually have to get up well before noon to do that? And I think we need a license or something..." I asked completely confused now. We had never gone hunting before, we never even so much as fished.

The extension picked up at Jasper's and I heard Emmett's voice. "We're going hunting for girls you idiots! Get yourselves clean and smelling good, we are going to look for some nice girls. I hear they are attracted to guys that smell nice, so get a move on. You have an hour!" Then he hung up his extension.

"Ok, Jasper, I'm going to go make myself 'smell good' for some mystery nice girls that we probably won't meet today. See you soon." I laughed as I hung up the phone. Emmett could really get into things sometimes, I wondered to myself where we would be hunting for today's adventure.

I pulled up in front of their apartment a half hour late only to find them waiting outside on the sidewalk. Emmett hopped into the front while Jasper slid into the backseat. "Hey Edward, ready for some fun?" Emmett asked as he rubbed his hands together in anticipation.

"Where are these nice girl hunting grounds you spoke of earlier?" I asked, playing along with his hunting theme. He took in a dramatic breath before saying "To the library my friend!"

After driving in circles for nearly twenty minutes, we found a branch of the Portland Metropolitan Library, not far from their apartment. We hopped out of the car, ran our fingers through our hair, and went inside. It was relatively empty as we walked through the lobby, a number of senior citizens were gathered in some chairs for some sort of workshop from what I could tell. I elbowed Jasper "Look, all the nice girls have grey hair!" Jasper let out a laugh while Emmett rolled his eyes.

"Guys, come on, it's like a nightclub, you have to work the room, see who's here...mingle. You know what I mean?" Emmett signaled like a stewardess showing you where the emergency exits were on the plane. "Let's check the place out and find the action."

Jasper and I just shook our heads "Lead the way Emmett, this is your show" I said as I held out my arm. After a minute of looking around at the signs, Emmett headed off to the Fiction section of the library. Having no real game plan, we walked aimlessly up and down the aisles, looking at the thousands of books we passed. The only people to cross our paths were a man in his late forties flipping through a book on kitchen remodeling, an elderly woman who was looking for the restroom, and a three year old who escaped from the children's section of the library and was hiding on a shelf from his mother.

"Great hunting grounds Emmett. Jasper, you better call your mom this afternoon and let her know, the nice girls are most definitely not at the library." We all snickered at the possible conversation between Jasper and his mom.

"This place is so boring!" Emmett whined "I mean who needs all these books? Do they have magazines here too?" He asked turning to me for the answer.

"Yes, Emmett they have magazines at the library too, a number of different ones for your information." I said still laughing.

Emmett's face lit up at this fact. "Do you think they have Playboy here? That would make this library thing a lot more fun!" He said with a mischievous grin on his face.

Jasper rolled his eyes "Emmett I highly doubt the public library stocks back issues of pornographic magazines." Emmett and I started really snickering at hearing Jasper say pornographic magazines...just too funny. I reached up and grabbed a book off briefly before returning it to its original place on the shelf.

"Why don't you ask someone about the Playboys Emmett, if you are that curious?" I teased, never thinking he's actually do it. Before I could stop him, he darted out of our aisle and rounded the corner.

"If he finds porn in this library, I will buy a round of beers tonight" Jasper laughed. I leaned against a bookshelf and flipped through a cheesy romance novel to kill some time while I waited for the scream that would surely come when Emmett asked some poor unsuspecting employee where to find the latest issue of Playboy. After a few minutes with no scream, I decided we should look for him. I put the book back on the shelf and started walking with Jasper. I heard Emmett's voice, not far away.

"I believe you dropped this?" I heard Emmett say. What was with his voice? Jasper looked at me too, he noticed the difference. I shrugged my shoulders and we peeked around the corner of the next aisle to spy on him.

Emmett was handing a book back to the librarian girl. She had her hair wound up into a bun on the top of her head, however a bunch of those hairs had fallen out of the bun over the course of her day and were dangling in front of her face. She had what looked like a pencil sticking out of the top of her bun and her eyes were covered by a pair of thick, black rimmed glasses that you would consider 'librarian glasses'.

She kindly asked if she could help Emmett with something and he said yes, and then he did it. I heard him ask where the Playboys were. Jasper nudged me, waiting for the screaming to ensue, but nothing happened. If anything, the girl looked slightly amused by the question.

She then proceeded to apologize to Emmett, saying they didn't carry that magazine, but there were some medical journals he could find a pair of old saggy boobs in, over in the reference section. I had to bite my lip to keep from laughing out loud. She pointed in the direction of the reference section and then gracefully climbed back up her step stool, to return a book from her cart onto the shelf, completely ignoring Emmett.

I heard him sigh in annoyance, but my eyes were fixed on the girl with the pencil in her hair. I could see her red lips, smiling while she had her back turned to Emmett, like she was playing a game with him, just waiting for the next move. I immediately wanted to get closer, so I stood up and came around the corner.

"There you are. We thought you got lost, this being your first time in a library and all." I joked to Emmett. The girl on the stool spun around to look at me. Her big, brown eyes met mine briefly and then she looked away, back to Emmett who had mumbled "Shut up" under his breath.

He tried to ask the girl her name, but she was too quick for him. She turned things back on him again with her question "Wait a minute...Did you guys hear somewhere that libraries are good places to try and pick up girls? Was it on the news again?" Her eyebrows raised knowingly as she looked at us.

Jasper slapped me on the arm and I doubled over in laughter, but I kept it quiet, knowing we were still in a library and it would probably annoy the librarian if we were loud. I definitely didn't want her mad at me. I heard her draw a deep breath before she went on to suggest Emmett go to a strip club so he could get boobs and girls all at the same time. I was close to gasping for breath when I saw her push her cart past us, not even waiting for Emmett's answer.

"That went ...well." Jasper managed to get out between breaths. "Your face Emmett..." Was all I could say.

"Your mom's idea sucked Jasper! That girl wasn't very nice..." Emmett mumbled as he

stormed out of the aisle and headed toward the door. Jasper and I finally caught our breath and started off behind him. I glanced down one aisle as we neared the exit and found the librarian with the brown eyes looking through her rack of books. She glanced up, and again our eyes met. She gave me a quick wink and a smile as I walked past which made my heart race.

Maybe there are nice girls at the library. I thought to myself as I ran after Emmett and Jasper.

There you have it! Next chapter the girls go to the football game and is titled : Wiener:) Review please...

Chapter: 4

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks for all the reviews! Hope you like this chapter...It's the Wiener? Wednesday update...

Wiener?

BPOV

The drive to Seattle was so much fun. I made a CD of our favorite songs and we spent the two and a half hour drive singing along to all the songs and making elaborate hand motions to go along with the songs. We got the funniest looks from the other cars as they passed us, but we didn't care, we were having a blast.

I held the tickets in my hand as we walked in the entrance gate. The guy scanning the tickets looked at them and smiled, "Wow these are great seats ladies. Follow the signs for Club Level to the elevator Enjoy the game." He motioned us through the turnstile and we headed left following the signs like we were instructed. A gentleman in a blue green sports coat stood in front of a set of elevators marked 'Club Level Seating' we gave him the tickets and he wished us a good day as we entered the elevator.

The doors opened and we were overwhelmed by the smell of mouthwatering foods that were arranged on a buffet to our right. "These are some tickets Angela gave us" I mumbled. Rose and Alice nodded their heads in agreement. We each made a plate of food and ordered a drink from the bar and went and sat at a table overlooking the stadium.

"Ooh I want one of those foam fingers Bella! Where do we get those?" Alice asked with a huge smile on her face.

"I bet there's a souvenir stand somewhere on this level that carries them. Why don't you go wander and we'll wait here for you?" I offered. Alice squealed, grabbed her purse and ran over to a gentleman with one of the foam fingers. He smiled and pointed her in the direction of the stand where he purchased it. She took off like a shot and didn't reappear for fifteen minutes. Rose and I were just about to go search for her when suddenly, someone caught our attention.

Out of the corner of our eye we saw a pixie-like girl wearing a Seahawks hat, jersey, scarf and of course, foam finger waving frantically at us.

"Alice?" Rose asked as she lifted the bill of the cap to get a good look at her face. "What the hell happened to you? Did you stumble into the locker room and get turned into the honorary team mascot?" She asked in horror.

"No, Miss Party pooper. I'm just trying to show some team spirit! Look, I got you guys hats too!" In her hand were two baseball caps that matched hers exactly. Rose looked horrified, I'm sure imagining what the hat would do to her beautiful hair. I, on the other hand, shrugged and whipped my hair into a quick pony tail, pulled it through the back of the hat, and put it proudly on my head "Go Seahawks!" I said pumping my fist into the air.

Rosalie grudgingly put her on and growled “Yeah... go birds...”

We finished eating and walked down to our seats which were in the front row of the club level. Rose had the binoculars pinned to her face most of the first half rating the rear ends of all the Seahawk players. Having chosen her favorite butt, she decided mid way through the second half, that she wanted to get his Jersey from one of the vendors in the stadium. I handed her a tickets so she could get back up to the club level and find us again. Alice and I stayed put, enjoying the rest of the game.

A half hour had passed, when Rosalie finally came back, wearing her hat, the new jersey and a totally pissed off look on her face. “What happened to you Rose?” Alice asked. Other than her furious face, Rose looked fabulous in the Jersey. Somehow, she had managed to cut it so it was more like a half shirt rather than a bulky jersey. In her hand was a small bag of popcorn as she flopped into the seat next to me.

“Ugh...guys at football games are such pigs!” There was venom in her voice as she spoke. “So, I leave the club level in search of my jersey which I find, no problem. After a trip the the bathroom and a few minor alterations, it was wearable so I changed into it and started heading back this way. I decided to stop at a concession stand before I came back up in the elevator because the popcorn smelled so good. While I'm standing in line, waiting for my popcorn, the guy next to me just leans over and grabs my ass!” Alice and I started laughing because we both knew what Rose did when guys touched her without permission, she decked them.

“I turned around and said 'what the hell to you think you are doing' and he gave some lame excuse about not trying to grab my ass, he was trying grab... his wiener! Can you believe it?” She was so furious she was almost shouting, and by now, her story had got the attention of a few people sitting around us who had turned our way and burst into laughter.

“He actually... he said he was trying ...to ...grab his wiener?” I gasped while trying not to pee my pants I was laughing so hard.

“What did you do?” Alice giggled, even though we knew the answer.

“I decked him of course. He was pretty big too, but he should have a nice black eye by morning! You know he had the nerve to try and follow me up here? Luckily, Tony, the guy in the green coat, stopped his regular admission ass at the elevator.” She said with a humph.

“Sorry you were molested at the football game Rose. I thought it would be fun...” I said trying to keep a straight face, biting my lip.

“Oh Bella, I'm having fun, perverts and all. And actually, he was kind of cute for a perve...” She gave me a big hug so in knew she wasn't really mad. “How can I be mad when I'm surrounded by muscular guys in tight pants?”

We spent the last few minutes of the game laughing about Wiener Guy as we had lovingly named him. Rose decided she wanted to get on the Jumbo-tron screen, so she kept flirting with the camera guy until her face was flashed for all 67,000 people in attendance to see. Her image was greeted with a roar of applause and cat calls which made her day.

Hats, popcorn jerseys and foam fingers in hand, we filed out of the stadium after an exciting day at the game and began our long trip back to Portland laughing about the little adventure we had at the football game.

O)OO)OOO)O))O)O)O)O)O)OO)OOO)O)OOOO)O

EPOV

So our quest to find a nice girl hadn't been going very well. After the fiasco at the library, Emmett refused to even touch a book, I'm sure he was still scarred from the beating his ego took at the hands of the 'naughty librarian' as Jasper and I had taken to calling her. I was laughing again at the memory of Emmett's face as he was getting shot out of the air by the librarian with the beautiful smile, when my phone started ringing.

"Edward, It's Emmett, gas up the car and be over here in twenty minutes. Oh, yeah, bring your laundry." I heard him hang up without waiting for a response from me.

"No problem Emmett, I'll love to fill up my car with gas and spend my Monday morning at the laundromat. Why didn't I think of that myself?" I mumbled to myself as I went to my room and gathered my laundry for our day's adventure.

I seriously considered driving right past them when I saw the piles of laundry on the sidewalk. But I knew they would just chase the car and make a scene, so I pulled up and parked. "And why are we going to the laundromat today Emmett? We do have perfectly functioning washers and dryers in our apartments."

Jasper let out a groan as he lifted a large laundry basket and headed for the trunk of my car. He tossed the mountain of laundry in and climbed in the backseat. "This is our latest stop on our quest for nice girls..." Jasper muttered.

"And there are nice girls doing their laundry on a Monday afternoon? Won't all the nice girls be at work and the unemployed ones be at the laundry?" I asked as Emmett jumped into the front seat.

"Edward, trust me. I looked it up on line and it said the laundromat is a happening place these days. People go there all the time to meet people while they wait for their unmentionables to dry." He said as he jokingly elbowed me in the side.

The trip to the laundromat was, as predicted, a complete disaster. There were no 'nice' girls at the laundromat like Emmett had read on line, there were two old women, who spent the hour smoking and doing crossword puzzles, while Jasper and I thought of a number of different ways to kill Emmett without being caught by the police. We also decided Emmett was no longer allowed to pick where we looked for girls ever again.

We didn't even stay at the laundromat long enough to fold our clothes, when they were dry, we ran for the door. Back at Emmett and Jasper's apartment, we were sprawled out in the family room, trying to sort our clothes which had all got mixed together into one giant pile

With my own clothes folded in my laundry basket, I turned to the guys and said "I'm outta here. Thanks Emmett for the lovely, girl filled afternoon. It's one I won't soon forget, I can promise you that. See you guys at work."

I was the first one to get to work tonight, Jasper and Emmett came flying in fifteen minutes late, full of apologies. "Sorry Edward, it's not my fault. Emmett took a little longer than normal to get ready this evening." Jasper whispered shaking his head in Emmett's direction. I was about to ask what made him take so long when Vicki came screeching over

to the bar.

“Oh my god Emmett what happened to you? Did you get in a fight?” She had grabbed his face and pulled it closer to hers so she could inspect his eye. Emmett's face got very red at all the attention Vicki was paying to his little injury, one I knew he wished, he could make disappear.

“Oh, it's no big deal Vicki, I just...um...ran into something. It was an accident, a misunderstanding...” He was being very evasive, which made Vicki even more suspicious. She wheeled around and faced Jasper “Did you do this to him? Did you guys get into fight this weekend?” Jasper silently shook his head no, but I could see he was using all his concentration to keep a straight face. Emmett watched from behind Vicki, waiting to see if we'd keep our mouths shut.

With Jasper's denial, she turned her anger toward me “Edward , how could you?”

“Stop yelling Vicki, we didn't do anything. Stupid over there, picked a fight with someone at the football game yesterday, that 's all. And for the record, it was all his fault...” I looked at Emmett who was mouthing 'thank you' to me from behind Vicki's back.

“Well, your eye looks like hell Emmett and the makeup you tried to plaster on it isn't covering jack!” She stormed off to help the other servers set up their stations.

Without a word to Emmett, I picked up my clipboard and started going through the checklist. Jasper walked in back, snickering, while Emmett changed the kegs around back. If Vicki only knew the real story behind Emmett's eye, she'd be laughing her ass off. I thought as I finished getting things ready to open the bar.

The Downunder was packed tonight. There were three parties going on, plus it seemed like everyone in Portland decided to come to the club. I had felt a migraine coming on all evening, but I tried to shrug it off because of how busy we were, I didn't want to leave Jasper and Emmett one man short. I was desperately trying to hang on, however when I broke out in a cold sweat and threw up, I knew I needed to go home.

The next morning, I felt much better and decided to give the guys a call to apologize for leaving them short handed last night. A very groggy Emmett answered on the third ring “MM...Hello?”

“Hey Emmett it's me.”

“Hey Edward man, how are you feeling? Did your head explode or anything cool like that?” He teased.

“Thanks for your concern Emmett man, I'm fine, I was going to apologize for having to leave last night, but now I don't feel so bad.” I snarled into the phone. My anger had no affect on Emmett except to make him boom with laughter.

“So how was it last night? Did I miss anything?” I asked when Emmett's laughter died down a b

“OOOHHH Jasper almost lost his \$200 last night!” His voice became much more animated.

“What happened?? How did he almost lose his money?” I asked. Then I heard Jasper pick up another line at their house.

"For the last time Emmett, I did not almost lose my money! Nothing happened so shut up about it!" Jasper snapped.

"This is a private conversation Mr. Nosy. Did Edward call you? No, he called me so get off the phone!" Emmett yelled.

"Will one of you just tell me what happened instead of bickering please?" I interrupted.

Emmett decided to start the story. "So I was minding my business..."

Jasper interrupted "He was flirting with a bachelorette and her friends at the bar trying to earn some extra tips...minding his own business, my ass."

Emmett cleared his throat "ANYWAY, I look over at Jasper and he is all frozen like a deer in the headlights looking across the bar at this chick. He was so preoccupied, a customer actually had to throw a maraschino cherry at his head to get his attention."

I couldn't help but to laugh at that mental image.

"It gets better. The girl then, must see him looking at her like some sort of stalker but still bravely comes over and orders a drink from him. He is so distracted by her, that instead of putting the Coke for her rum and Coke in the glass, he pours it onto his shoe and damn near flooded behind the bar!"

"The nozzle malfunctioned I told you! I hit the fill button and the stream of Coke came out, but I couldn't get it to stop! It had nothing to do with being distracted by her..." his voice got all sappy at the end.

"Edward, he actually had drool coming down the side of his mouth... AARRRGHH! Stop it Jasper...get away...I'm telling the truth...I saw drool...AAARRGGHH... put down the pillow."

I heard the phone drop to the floor and go sliding across the hardwood while Emmett and Jasper wrestled in the background. A few seconds of cursing later, there was the sound of a slamming door and the click of a lock. Emmett returned to the phone victorious.

"I'm back. Dude, I'm telling you he was hot for this girl. She was cute, real tiny though. I don't think he even said a single word to her. Then, when I jokingly called her a Bar-Fly, he put me in a headlock. We may need to hold an intervention for him or something."

"Well I'm sorry I missed all the action last night. You know what I think Jasper needs? A trip to the gym to work out his aggressions. I'll pick you guys up in twenty minutes." I was still chuckling about Jasper's love connection with a mystery girl when I pulled up in front of their apartment.

Jasper climbed in the backseat and Emmett jumped up front with me. I couldn't resist the urge to tease Jasper just a bit "So Jasper tell me, how does it feel to be in love with a Bar-Fly?" I felt his hand smack the back of my head as Emmett's laughter filled the car as we headed off to the gym.

My poll officially closed and the results for Favorite Line By Edward in Twilight is...drum roll please... "Afraid of a needle, but a sadistic vampire intent on torturing her to death, sure, no problem, she runs off to meet him. An IV on the other hand..." a distant second was "Yes, you are exactly my brand of heroin." Thanks to all who voted. I will come up with a new poll soon :)

I need help from my hip readers...let's say...hypothetically, in a future chapter of this story, Bella was going to be practicing her dancing I guess more appropriately 'grinding' and booty drops with Rosalie...I need a good, hot song to do that to, ...suggestions?? If it's left to me I'll pick some horrible song from the 80's or 90's of course... HA

Drop me a review please...

Chapter: 5

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks to all who have helped me in my quest for a song. I think I finally know what I am doing, but you will not see it until Chapter 7 so you'll just have to be patient...which I know none of you will do very well ;)

Sweaty

BPOV

I adjusted my headphones so they were securely on my ears before I walked out of the locker room. With my i pod, towel and water bottle in my hand I headed over to an open treadmill. I set the resistance level, draped the towel over the bar and started jogging.

The treadmill faced a mirrored wall so I could see all the people moving through the gym behind me. My eyes stopped on one of the TV's where a sports show was running highlights from the Seahawks game this weekend. Thoughts of Wiener Guy and his black eye popped into my head, making me laugh.

Thirty minutes and a bottle of water later, I was done with my run so I happily stopped the treadmill. Sweat had started dripping down my forehead so I gave my face a quick wipe with the towel in my hand. Knowing I still wanted to do a few machines before I left, I grabbed my empty water bottle and headed over to the water fountain to refill it. While I was walking, my favorite song started playing on my i pod so I cranked the volume as I approached the water fountain. Singing a little bit to myself as I filled the water bottle, I waited until it was full to the very top, before screwing on the lid. I bent over and took a quick sip from the fountain, and then turned to head back to the machines when I crashed into something hard or rather someone.

Two strong arms grabbed me as I found myself in an embarrassing position with my face and sweaty body clamped to some strange guy's chest. "OH SO SORRY!" I said without even looking up at him and blushing a new shade of red. I took a deep breath and nervously glanced up to see two, gorgeous green eyes looking down at me.

He opened his mouth to say something, but I couldn't hear him. "HUH?" I said again, and for some reason that amused him because he started shaking with laughter. I realized I was still pressed up against his chest and started to back away when I felt his hand brush against my cheek. My heart started beating like it had been back on the treadmill at his touch.

His fingers looped around my head phone and he gave it a gentle tug, freeing my ear and sending music poured into the air around us. "Can you hear me now?" I heard his velvety voice say in my ear.

The music! It was up so loud I couldn't hear him standing behind me, I couldn't hear what he said and I probably screamed 'SORRY' at the top of my lungs. "Um, I can hear you. Sorry about that before..." mumbled as I forced myself to look away for his green eyes,

they were so perfect, and so familiar. As I helplessly stared at him, I was shocked when I realized who he was, he was one of the guys from the library. He looked different in less clothing...so much better.

He continued to be amused "Yeah I know, you already said that. Well actually you kind of yelled it, but I still got the message, no harm." Two other people came up behind him and I immediately recognized them as the other guys from the library, and the big one had a nasty black eye.

"Hey, Playboy, long time no see." I laughed as the big guy from the library came and stood next to me. Playboy was the nickname Alice, Rose and I had given him after I told them the story from the library, when we had finally stopped laughing that is.

The look of confusion on his face was priceless. He was racking his brain trying to place where he knew me from...a one night stand, school, the supermarket, his apartment building...I could see him ticking things off at a rapid rate with no success.

In his defense, I had my hair up in a tight bun and I was standing on a stool most of the time when we first met rather than the ponytail and much tighter gym clothes I was currently dressed in. He looked over at the guy with the green eyes, for help, but he was still looking curiously at me, which made me blush again.

Needing a distraction, I glanced up at the tall blond who suddenly started smiling widely, he had remembered me at least.

"Do I...did we...have we met before?" The big guy finally stammered after a few hand gestures.

"Yep." I said, dragging out his torture a bit longer.

"Where did we meet?" He asked completely puzzled.

"We met during your first time..." I said, trying not to break out into a fit of laughter when I realized how that could be taken. I meant at the library, but that gave away too much information so I cut the part off. The tall blond was leaning against the wall laughing now. I saw the guy with green eyes glance at him and then glance back at me, try to figure out the joke he was missing out on. I gave him a quick wink and a smile and that's when it clicked.

He made small 'o' with his lips as he ran his fingers through his bronze, slightly sweaty hair. A huge smile broke out on his face. He decided to join in on the fun. "Come on Emmett, don't tell me you can't remember your first time?"

"Suzy Carmichael from West high?" He asked puzzled "I thought you were taller..."

"No, sorry, not Suzy." I gave a fake, frustrated sigh. "I guess I didn't make that much of an impression on you, oh well. Congrats to whoever gave you that black eye. Enjoy your workout guys." And with that, I headed off to do some upper body machines. I didn't dare turn around to see his face, but I smiled when I heard the laughter coming from behind me, I knew they had let him in on the joke.

I quickly went through the upper body machines, I knew I was running short on time and I had to meet up with Rosalie in a bit. I watched a personal trainer torture his client to pass the time and a few times I even dared to glance over at the big guy, Emmett, and his friends as they were lifting weights. Countless girls did a double take when they walked past the guys, some even asking for help with the free weights. I rolled my eyes

as they worked the gym. This seems like a much better place for them to meet girls. I thought sarcastically to myself.

Whenever I would find myself looking over at them, the guy with the green eyes would catch me staring and smile. Every time, my stomach filled with butterflies. He looked so cute in his tank top and gym shorts that left little to the imagination. Remember the boycott Bella, remember the boycott I kept saying as I felt my arms muscles burning. But somehow, I couldn't stop myself from glancing over, just to see the sweat glisten off his body as he thrust the weights into the air...

Thankfully, the next time I looked at the clock, it was time for me to leave. I quickly wiped down the machine with my towel, and headed for the locker room. I paused at the trashcan to toss in my empty water bottle when I heard someone holler "See you around Suzy!" from across the gym. I turned and saw Emmett waving with his friends. I threw my hand up over my head to wave as I ran into the locker room with a huge grin on my face.

I quickly jumped into the shower and let the hot water run down my shoulders and back. I scrubbed the sweat from my body and hair as the scent of strawberries filled the shower. All through the shower I found myself smiling whenever I thought about him, and his green eyes, his muscles, this hair, the sweat...eventually my cheeks started to hurt. The Boycott Bella, a great pair of shoes and eternal bragging rights plus he's way out of your league...I told myself, snapping myself back into reality as I climbed out of the shower.

I quickly dried off and got dressed into a pair of jeans and my favorite 'Bite Me' t-shirt I bought at the mall this last shopping trip with my veto. Alice and Rose had been so mad, but I thought it was perfectly funny. I grabbed my hair dryer and quickly dried it so I didn't catch pneumonia on my way home. I packed my sweaty clothes into my backpack, took one more look in the mirror and headed out of the locker room.

I wonder if they are still herel thought to myself. Bad Bella, Bad Bella! I didn't have much time to continue punishing myself because my eyes were immediately met a pair of sexy green ones leaning against the wall outside the women's locker room.

"Hey." He said pushing himself up off the wall and stepping toward me.

"Hi." I said praying I wouldn't blush too badly as I talked to him. He was perfect, Rose and Alice's league perfect. Even now, totally sweaty, he was still gorgeous. His hair had that intentionally messed up but with a perfect look to it. His body was tone and fit, and I knew that for a fact because I remembered exactly how it felt when I was pressed against it earlier. As a matter of fact I couldn't stop thinking about it. The butterflies returned and I felt my face turn red.

"Sorry about Emmett, he can be a dork sometimes, well actually most of the time. I just hope he didn't offend you the other day at the library?" He said with a smirk on his face.

"No, he's pretty harmless. But thanks." I said as I flung my backpack over my shoulder. My answer made him smile for some reason.

"So if you wait a few minutes we can go grab a coffee..." He said with confidence. I raised an eyebrow at his arrogance. This has to be a joke, set up by that guy Emmett for yanking his chain so much. I thought to myself. Three different girls walked past us while we were talking and said a flirty "Hi" to him, like I wasn't even there and they were ten times prettier than me. No, he was in Rosalie's league, not mine. All three of these guys were for that matter.

"Sorry I can't. I'm Boycotting guys until 2008." I said playfully as I forced myself to walk away from him. I only got a foot or two when I felt his hand touch me shoulder and a shock went through my body.

"Wait. Can I at least get your name?" He asked, sounding hopeful.

"Call me, Suzy." I laughed, and with that, I headed out the doors of the gym and into my car.

O)O)O)OOO)O)O)O)O)O)

EPOV

"So Jasper are you going tell me anything about your mystery woman?" I asked as I sat down and took a break on the weight bench.

"Can't...talk...lifting ...heavy things." Jasper gasped as he lifted the dumbbells over his head. As I sat and waited for him to finish, I noticed a girl wandering around the free weights, trying to be subtle, but every few seconds she'd glance my way.

"Excuse me, you look like a big strong guy...can you show me how to lift these weights properly. I wouldn't want to hurt myself." She giggled, which I assume was intended to be cute, but it made my skin crawl. I saw Emmett out of the corner of my eye.

"See that guy over there, the big one...ask him, he's really good with the weights. He can teach you all kinds of things." Her eyes grew wide with excitement and she chased off after him like a dog after a bone. Jasper started laughing. "Not nice to sick her on Emmett man, not nice."

"Give me a break, he loves this kind of thing, look at him." I pointed over at Emmet who was inches behind the girl holding her arms and helping her lift the weights over her head as she flirted furiously with him.

Jasper put the weights down and sat next to me on the bench to grab a drink of water. "Sooooo, I'm waiting..." I prodded.

"There's nothing to tell Edward, I saw this girl at the bar. She was gorgeous and for some reason I went all panicked and couldn't have a coherent thought. My emotions were all over the place. I may have got a little distracted and spilled some Coke on my foot too..." he admitted with a sheepish grin.

"Did you get her name, a number anything?" I asked. It was rare for Jasper to be rendered speechless by a girl. He was cool and quiet, but to be flustered was very weird.

"No, not that it would have mattered, we do have a little wager about no Bar-Flies and since that is where I met her, she's off limits remember?" I could tell he was more than a little bummed, but he didn't know her at all, she could be a pea brained bubble head like the rest of the bar girls.

"Don't worry Jasper, if it is meant to be, then you will meet again." I chuckled as I slapped him on the back. I looked at my empty water bottle and got up from the bench still laughing about Jasper's predicament. "I'm going to fill this up, I'll be right back."

When I got to the water fountain, there was a girl already there filling up her water

bottle. Her long brown hair was pulled up in a ponytail and she was singing along with her iPod. I could hear the music from where I was standing behind her so I knew she had it turned up really loud. I couldn't help but laugh a little. I was glancing at my watch when all of a sudden something soft and warm crashed into my chest. My arms instinctively flew around her, the girl from the water fountain.

She didn't even look up at me before she shouted "OH, SORRY!" a little louder than she should have, but with the volume so high on her iPod she didn't even notice. A few people around us jerked their heads in our direction. Her big brown eyes finally decided to look up and she who she had smashed into as I said "No problem"

"HUH?" she shouted again. I couldn't hold my laughter in especially when she blushed realizing just how tightly she was still pressed up against my body. She started to slowly step away from me, but before she got too far, I reached out and gave a tug to her earphone. The music came blaring out of the earphone.

I leaned much closer and said "Can you hear me now?" Her eyes grew huge, probably finally realizing how loud her responses were earlier. "Um, I can hear you. Sorry about that before..." she said while looking down at her shoes.

"Yeah I know, you already said that. Well actually you kind of yelled it, but I still got the message, no harm." I chuckled. Her face finally turned up to meet mine again and I was immediately taken by her eyes. They were so beautiful, like nothing I had ever seen before, and yet somehow, familiar.

I heard his laugh coming up behind me as I stood there just staring at the girl in front of me. Her face immediately flashed with amusement as she looked at Emmett which I found odd.

She started smiling and said "Hey, Playboy, long time no see." I caught a hint of sarcasm in her voice as she said that to him.

I immediately looked at Emmett who was frantically trying to figure out who this girl was. I started thinking back to all the girls I had ever seen him with and this girl definitely wasn't one of them, I would have remembered her... My eyes were quickly back on her when she looked up at me and blushed the most beautiful shade of pink, so beautiful I had to stop myself from reaching out and touching her face.

Jasper started giggling, he obviously had figured it out. I wonder if this was his mystery girl, she was definitely cute enough to make any guy speechless, but Emmett would remember her, it was just last night.

I heard Emmett start muttering incoherently "Do I...did we...have we met before?"

She simply smiled and said "Yep." She was trying to torture him, I like this girl...

"Where did we meet?" Emmett's brain was in overdrive, another second and smoke would come out of his ears.

"We met during your first time..." Her voice trailed off, she purposely didn't finish the sentence. His first time what? I thought frantically. Jasper was still laughing I looked over at him and then my eyes met hers. Where do I know her from?

But then I knew, she gave me a wink and smiled, and instantly I was back at the library and she was standing over her cart of books. I ran my hand through my hair at the

memory. She was the 'naughty librarian' and I had to admit she looked a lot different without her glasses and in her gym shorts and a tight fitting t-shirt. I snapped my head up and stopped staring at her body and said "Come on Emmett, don't tell me you can't remember your first time?"

His face scrunched up "Suzy Carmichael from West high?" He asked puzzled "I thought you were taller..."

I could barely contain the laughter building up in my body. Jasper was leaning against the wall dying and without skipping a beat, she gave a frustrated sigh and said "No, sorry, not Suzy. I guess I didn't make that much of an impression on you, oh well. Congrats to whoever gave you the black eye. Enjoy your workout guys." And she walked off leaving Emmett standing there with his mouth open.

"What then hell just happened? Did I sleep with her or something and I just can't remember? She's hot, I doubt I'd forget that..." Emmett said scratching his head in confusion.

Jasper found his voice first, I was too busy laughing and staring at her as she walked away. Her ponytail bounced behind her as her hips swayed gently from side to side.

"She's the girl from the library you idiot! The one you asked for the Playboys...remember now?" Jasper managed to croak out.

"Damn, she's much hotter without the glasses..." Was all he could think to say. That made us all burst into laughter again. I shook my head and finally was able to fill up my water bottle before heading back over to the weights.

Through the rest of our workout, I was distracted by her...the girl from the library. I even caught her looking over at us a few times. For some reason, when our eyes met, I just couldn't look away. Unfortunately, one of those times, I was supposed to be spotting Emmett as he was bench pressing some ridiculous amount of weight and I was so busy staring at her, I didn't see Emmett's face turning purple until he kicked me.

"God Edward, I could have died a second ago, and all because you have the hots for the 'naughty librarian'..." Emmett teased. I punched his arm as my only response.

She caught my eye as she hopped off a machine and headed for the women's locker room. Emmett turned to see what I was staring at and smiled. "Yeah, you don't have a thing for her at all do you..." he teased and then he yelled "See you around Suzy!" And he waved his hand like a maniac when she turned around. She just smiled and waved as she walked around the corner.

"Come on Edward, you should ask her out. She's not a Bar-Fly...go for it. Jasper, come talk some sense into him..." Emmett waved Jasper over into our little conversation.

"Edward, go for it. She seems smart and funny and she doesn't take crap from any of us which, I have to say, is rather refreshing. Just think how much fun it will be to watch her confuse Emmett again." Jasper joked.

"Well, I hate to break up the slam on Emmett fest going on, but I'm going to hit the showers. Let's be ready to leave in fifteen minutes OK?" Emmett grabbed his towel and started walking away "Oh and Edward, you better ask her out, if you don't I will." He gave me a sinister grin and headed to the locker room. "She thinks you're a pervert...she'd never go" I yelled to him causing a few people to stare at Emmett as he

walked away laughing.

Jasper put a comforting hand on my shoulder "He's right Edward, you should ask her out. She seems like a normal human being, it might be a really nice change of pace for you. And, if you and Emmett don't ask her out, I just might." He finished with a smile. "I'm hitting the showers. You may want to go wait by the women's locker room and see if you can catch her on the way out..."

"Thanks Jasper..." I mumbled as I sat down against the wall. I nervously ran my hand through my hair as I waited. I probably look like some kind of stalker waiting outside the women's locker room I thought to myself with a laugh. Why am I so nervous?

This was so not like me, I was the guy that sat back and let the girls come to him. I never had to put any effort into getting a girl, I'd just pick the one I liked best and be done with it. They always liked me, I never had to get them to like me.

I was counting the ceiling tiles when I saw her come out of the locker room. I stood up from the wall I had been sitting against. "Hey."

"Hi." She said shyly as her face immediately turned a beautiful shade of pink again.

"Sorry about Emmett, he can be a dork sometimes, well actually most of the time. I hope he didn't offend you the other day at the library?" The smile on her face made me grin. She hadn't seemed offended, but I wanted to make sure.

"No, he's pretty harmless. But thanks." She said as she put on her backpack

Uh, oh she's getting ready to leave. I better ask...but how...play it cool Edward, she's just a girl...

"So if you wait a few minutes we can go get coffee..." I said as confidently as possible even though I was terrified at her answer. Her brows furrowed like she didn't like something I had said, and then she looked a little sad. By the time she actually spoke, she was back to her playful self.

"Sorry I can't. I'm Boycotting guys until 2008." And with that she started walking away from me. I quickly put my hand on her shoulder to stop her.

"Wait. Can I at least get your name?" I asked, at least then I'd have a way to find her.

"Call me, Suzy." She replied with a laugh and walked away.

Well that went well...I thought as I banged my head against the wall.

"HA HA looks like Eddie is sleeping alone tonight. She is immune to your charms." Emmett boomed from behind me.

"Shut up Emmett, I was sleeping alone anyway thanks to our little bet. And, I may have got shot down by 'Suzy' but at least I didn't get a black eye from a girl!" I replied with acid in my voice.

"How many times do I have to say it was an accident!" Emmett fumed at me.

"Sure Emmett, that kind of thing happens all the time..." I scoffed as I grabbed my bag

and headed to the car.

I have a new poll up if you are interested. I hope you enjoyed Sweaty... drop me review and say hi!

Chapter: 6

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

I dedicate EPOV this chapter to LGF for the great idea! Hope you like this one ;)

Eyecandy

EPOV

"Guys, how difficult is it to have some food in the refrigerator? I mean come on, ketchup, butter and beer doesn't even cover one food group!" I complained as I slammed shut the door. "Now I know why we are always over at my place. I understand the value of food."

Jasper rolled his eyes at me. "Fine Edward, shall we take a trip to the grocery store so you can show us the finer points of food shopping?" Emmett's ears perked up at the mention of the grocery store.

"Hey, I bet we can find some nice girls at the grocery store! That place is loaded with chicks. They are always there buying crap...let's go." Before either of us could object, he grabbed his coat and was standing by the door. "Come on guys..."

"I thought we forbade him from picking the nice girl hunting grounds ever again." I mumbled to Jasper as we got our coats.

"Well, we really do need food, and maybe he'll do something stupid again, it could be quite entertaining..." Jasper pointed out. How could I object to watching Emmett make an ass of himself, it was always funny, and as long as we stood far enough away from him, no one would know we were together.

The parking lot of the Safeway was packed. Emmett tried to steal a space from a little old lady who rolled down her window and spat a slew of profanities at us while laying on her horn. "You really have a way of making friends with the ladies wherever we go Emmett." I laughed.

As we entered the store, Emmett grabbed the cart while Jasper and I purposely walked ten paces behind him. You would have thought Emmett never was at the grocery store before, he walked up to the vegetables and started touching everything like a little kid.

Jasper couldn't stand it any longer "Emmett, drop the kiwi and let's get moving."

"But they're so round and furry...You know what they look like? They look like the balls on a ..."

"Emmett" I hissed tilting my head in the direction of a five year old who was staring up at him in amazement and terror. His mom quickly grabbed his hand and ushered him away.

In an effort to get out of the store in under three hours, I gave Emmett the simple task of finding a bag of apples and a watermelon. It seemed harmless enough, but a few seconds later, I saw him following a girl our age, who had obviously just been at the gym, she was

still in tight yoga pants and a short hooded sweatshirt. Emmett glanced our way and gave us a wave while pointing at the poor unsuspecting girl's back.

I shook my head 'no' and Jasper waved him away from the girl but he ignored us. Instead, he picked up two melons from the display in front of him and held them to his chest like breasts and made a goofy face. The girl he had been stalking with the produce, turned around unexpectedly and saw Emmett, breasts and all, and hit him in the head with the eggplant she had just selected from the shelf, crushing it in his hair.

Emmett dropped the melons with a splat and they began rolling across the floor. The produce manager saw the whole exchange and walked over to Emmett with a serious look on his face.

"Hi sir! You have some really nice... melons in this store..." Emmett said awkwardly to the angry manager.

"That was my niece, you sicko!" The manager growled as he stepped closer to Emmett.

Jasper and I headed in the opposite direction to the frozen foods, never once looking back to see what happened to him.

BPOV

"Oh, Renee she just waked in the door, hang on I 'll get her for you.." I heard Alice say as I opened the door of our apartment. I tossed the keys into the basket and grabbed the phone from Alice's extended hand. She just shook her head and laughed.

"Hi mom. How are you?" I asked tentatively. My mom called every day, most of the time for no reason other than to tell me of some gossip from back home about someone I haven't seen since high school. As much as I hated to admit it, sometimes, I would just let the machine pick up so I could be spared.

"Hi Bella! Were you at class?" Renee asked quickly. That was the other thing about mom, if she called long distance, she became a fast talker. She could talk at the speed of light to get the conversation over as quickly as possible, to save 57 cents.

"Yes mom, I just got in, so what's up?" I waited for her to get to the point of today's call. Maybe my old Art teacher from High School had died and she was going to read the obituary, or something.

"Oh, you'll never guess what happened. One of my old friends, who I haven't seen in forever called, and she is moving to Forks too! Isn't that great?" I could tell she was excited, I unfortunately, wasn't really listening, I was looking through my mail.

"Yep mom that's great..." I mumbled as I looked at my Visa bill...darn all that shopping with Alice I thought.

Renee started talking again and I missed the first part, because I was waving the bill at Alice to show her the total, when I heard. "Her friend's son...Portland...and date"

"Whoa mom, stop right there...Listen there is something you should know, I am boycotting boys for a while." There was silence on the line, and then crying.

"Mom, why are you crying?"

"So who is it? Is it Alice or Rosalie?" She said in between sobs.

"Alice or Rosalie what mom?" I was missing something, damn I really should pay attention when she fast talks...

"Which one of them turned you into a lesbian!" She cried. I however, burst into hysterical laughter.

"Mom, Alice, Rose and I are not lesbians we have just been dating too many loser so we are taking a break from dating, not from boys forever...OK" God my mom could be dim sometimes. Rose walked into the room and burst out laughing when she heard my last statement.

"Oh...OK. Bella, well when this silly Boycott is over I'm going to give you his number. I gotta go to yoga class, I love you!" and before I could say good bye, the phone went dead.

Alice giggled "So now she thinks we're lesbians?"

"Apparently... at least I know she won't give my number out to any guys for a while." I rolled my eyes. "So what's on the agenda for this evening ladies? I don't have class until late tomorrow so you want to go out?"

Alice jumped to her feet squealing "OOOHH I know the perfect place! We can get a bite to eat and dance and.."

Rose interrupted "And see the guy you haven't stopped talking about since you saw him last night? Is that where you want to go?" She asked suspiciously. A big smile on her face, Alice started jumping up and down saying "Please, please, please, please..."

"See, this is what happens when you go out to a bar with one of your clients instead of Bella and I...you fall in love." Rosalie said sarcastically as she batted her eyelashes and put her hand over her heart.

"Ok, Rose, let's go see Mr. Wonderful, who she can't date for another three and a half weeks..." I teased while Alice continued bouncing in place.

"Fine." Rosalie said grudging. "But there better be some other cute boys there for me to look at because if I have to watch you make goo goo eyes all night, I may throw up!" Alice picked up a pillow from the couch to launch at Rose, but she was in her room before she had a chance to throw it.

After an hour of showers and general beautification, we were ready to hit the town. Rosalie was in a short red dress that showed off her legs. Alice was in a long sweater and a pair of leggings while I had been physically forced into a black patterned mini skirt, with a black, off the shoulder top and a pair of knee high black boots.

When we pulled in front of the Downunder, it looked like any other bar we had been to over the course of our Boy Boycott. The dance floor was on the lower level, with the tables wrapping around on the second floor in a 'U' shape. The bar was against the far back wall with a two story blue lit wall behind it. It was very cool inside. Alice led the way upstairs to a table where we could see the bar and the dance floor. I saw her leaning over the rail and peer toward the bar.

Rose caught the puzzled expression on my face and said "She's looking for Mr. Wonderful, apparently he's a bartender."

I giggled and when Alice flopped down into the chair. I could tell by her expression he wasn't there. "Well this sucks! No eye candy for me to look at while I eat." Alice pouted.

I tried to raise her spirits "It is still kind of early Alice, maybe he'll be here later." That seemed to do the trick because a smile returned to her angelic face.

The drink menu had an extensive selection of mixed drinks. I was scanning it when our server came over to the table. "Hi ladies. My name is Vicki and I'll be your server. How are you doing tonight?" she asked.

Alice blurted out "Cool piercings...how many do you have?" Alice asked in wonder.

"18, but you can only see 12 of them." Vicki said with a wink. Alice's eyes got wide "Cool..." was all she could say. "Did they hurt? I cried my eyes out when I got my ears pierced. I can't imagine how much it hurts to get your eyebrow pierced."

"That wasn't the most painful one, but that's all I'll say.." she grinned as she watched Alice's eyes get big. "So, can I get you ladies something from the bar?"

Alice popped out of her seat "Oh, can you get me that tall, blond, and gorgeous guy that was working last night? I'll take him and a few maraschino cherries." I smacked my hand to my forehead Rosalie snarled "Alice please..."

Fortunately, our server was very laid back, and appreciated Alice's forwardness. "Oh, Jazz...yeah he's a cutie. He 'll be here in about a half hour, those guys down there now are the early shift. He'll be here soon." Alice started grinning from ear to ear.

Vicki leaned in and said "Of course, I should tell you, he and his buddies, the other two bartenders, they have sworn off dating girls from the bar. Normally, I wouldn't share that bit of info and let you make a fool out of yourself, but I like you..."

"Alice." She answered offering Vicki her hand.

"Yeah, I like you Alice."

"Well I like you too Vicki, and you know what's perfect? The girls and I here are in the middle of a Boy Boycott until the new year so we can't date them either! It's perfect. " Alice beamed.

Vicki just laughed. "Yeah, it's perfect. I can't wait to see this one play out. Ok, let me get you some drinks and I'll be back to take your order." Vicki wrote down what we wanted and headed down to the bar. When she was out of earshot, Rose ripped into Alice.

"What the hell was that Alice? Bring me the guy from the bar? Have you lost your mind?"

"Oh come on Rose, I know I can't date him so calm down, there's no harm in just window shopping. It's like visiting the puppies at the pet store, you go look at them, and they are so cute, they make you smile. Then they get all excited to see you and they lick your hands and face and then you go home without one. I just wanted to look at the puppy, is that so wrong?" She asked with her best pouty face.

"Yes Alice, that is wrong on too many levels to explain right now" Rose laughed. I just nodded my head in agreement.

Vicki returned with my Cosmo, Alice's Rum and Coke and Rosalie's margarita. Before she left, she took our food order and put a red reserved plaque on our table.

"What's that for?" I asked having never seen one before.

"Oh, that's so you ladies can go down and dance while you wait for your food, or... mosey down to the bar later...if you wanted to, and no one will take your table." Vicki said with a warm smile.

"Wow thanks..." I said gratefully.

"I like you ladies...you seem...nice." She smiled at her own private joke and headed off to her other tables.

"Well, you heard the lady, lets go dance girls!" Rosalie exclaimed as a song she liked started pulsing through the club.

We ran down the stairs and joined in the crowd that had gathered on the dance floor. Rose and Alice had been teaching me new dance moves as part of my 'raising of my standards' education and I was getting to be a pretty good little dancer if I did say so myself. My gyrating and hip shaking looked almost as good as Alice's. We spent the next twenty minutes dancing together and Rose even got a phone number from some random guy on the dance floor.

As we arrived back at our table, I sucked down my Cosmo. I had got so hot while dancing and forgot to get a water. Rose and Alice finished off their drinks too before Vicki came over with our food. She said she'd be right back with another round of drinks.

We didn't realize how hungry we were until I looked up saw both Rose and Alice were already done with their food. The only thing that remained were a few stray bread sticks in a basket. Just then, Vicki appeared grinning from ear to ear with a fresh tray of drinks.

"Here you go ladies. Alice, yours was made special, by your favorite bartender..." Vicki teased with a wink as she placed the glass in front of her and then walked away. Alice jumped out of her seat and flew to the rail scouring the bar for him.

I knew from her squeal when she found him down at the far end of the bar. Rose and I jumped up and ran over to see him. From a distance he looked familiar...Before I could figure it out, Rosalie started screaming "It's him! Oh my God, it's Wiener Guy!" She was pointing wildly at the bar.

"Where Rose? Are you sure?" I asked, puzzled.

She leaned over my shoulder and pointed to the second guy behind the bar. "See, he has the black eye!" She hissed into my ear. But I wasn't listening, because my eyes were fixed on the third person behind the bar...they guy with the green eyes from the gym.

Completely shocked, I stumbled back into my chair and grabbed my Cosmo and downed it on one gulp. Rose and Alice both came and sat down with the most confused expressions on their faces.

"Bella what the hell is going on with you?" Rose asked.

"Those guys, I kind of know them. Rose, Wiener Guy is the Playboy! And Alice, Jazz, is one of his friends and the third guy down there...he's the guy from the gym, and the library... the one with the green eyes." My head started to spin and my heart started racing. I didn't know if it was from the shock or the two Cosmos I had chugged in the last twenty minutes.

Rose sprung to the rail and check out the guy from the gym. "Bella he's hot! Why didn't you go have coffee with him?"

"Because we have a stupid Boycott in effect Rose...that and I figured he was way out of my league." I said sadly.

"Oh stop it Bella, he is definitely in your league. He is just the kind of guy you should be going after...if we weren't boycotting guys right now. " She said as she returned to her seat.

"Funny thing is, I told you today I thought you'd like the Playboy, before we knew he was Weiner Guy that is... his name is actually Emmett, and he is definitely your type, minus the ass grabbing." I said looking at her seriously. I turned to Alice "And Jazz is really cute and nice Alice, he was the first one to recognize me from the library." I said encouragingly.

We all stood up and went to spy on the guys over the rail. I could tell Rose was trying to evaluate Emmett. The smirk on her face told me she thought he was hot at the very least, but the ass grab would be hard for her to put aside.

"Like what you see ladies?" I heard Vicki ask with a loud laugh when she saw us hanging over the rail looking at the boys.

"Vicki! Just the lady we needed to talk to. Do you have a minute to sit with us?" Alice begged. No one could resist a begging Alice, Vicki was no different. She sat down in the empty chair and starting chomping on a bread stick with us.

"So Vicki, how well do you know the guys down at the bar?" Alice asked, as she leaned across the table not wanting to miss anything she said.

"Well, I've know them for a year I guess. They are nice guys really, they take out a bunch of girls from the bar, but rarely sleep with them, they usually make an excuse and leave them at a bar somewhere, never to speak to the again. Edward gives the duds the number to a pizza joint as his phone numbers when they don't like a girl but she asks for it. Then a few weeks ago, they swore off Bar-Flies, that's what they call girls the meet in the bar, and are on a 'quest' to meet nice girls." I started laughing.

"That explains why they were trolling for girls in the library when I met them. " I chuckled. Vicki leaned in closer "They went to the library? I didn't even know Emmett knew libraries existed!"

"Oh you haven't heard the half of it!" Rose laughed.

We spent the next ten minutes telling Vicki all our different run ins with the guys. She almost peed her pants when she heard that Rose gave Emmett the back eye. "He told us he got in a fight with some drunk guy at the football game. What a liar!" Vicki roared with laughter. "Oh and by the way Bella," she turned to me "The 'guy from the gym', his name

is Edward.”

Edward... that's a sexy name. I thought.

“Sooo Vicki, would you like to help us have a little fun with the boys?” Alice asked as she rubbed her hands together like a villain in a movie.

“Oh, I would love to get them back for every kiss I've had to blow to the big chickens while pretending to be their girlfriend since this stupid bet went into effect. What can I do to help?”

We put our heads together and decided we would come back tomorrow night to put the plan into action. Vicki confirmed that the boys would all be working tomorrow and she would be there to help out too if we needed her. There was one last thing we needed to do before we left for the evening.

“Vicki, can you go down there and tell Edward that a friend of Suzy's wants him number? Just make sure Emmett and Jasper are distracted when you do OK?” I asked with enthusiasm.

“You know he's probably going to give you the number to the pizza place right?” Vicki asked unsure why I wanted it.

“Yeah, I know...I just want to see where he likes to get his pizza from...” My face gave away that I had ulterior motives and Vicki just grinned.

“I knew I liked you girls...they aren't going to know what hit them.” We watched through the railing as she made her way down to the bar. I could see her pointing to something behind the bar that got Emmett and Jasper's attention. They looked confused and disappeared under the bar. Vicki scooted down to where Edward was and began whispering in his ear. I made sure to stay out of sight when he started looking in our direction.

“Alice, go to the rail and wave to him.” I hissed in a low voice. Alice gracefully dangled herself over the rail and waved like she was on a parade float. “Ok, enough! You're laying it on a bit thick don't you think?”

She laughed and came back to sit at the table with us. “He is really cute Bella...I would totally approve if we weren't boycotting boys right now.” She said with a giggle.

Vicki came back up a few minutes later and started laughing as she sat down at our table. She handed me a white napkin from the bar with a phone number scrawled on it with the letter 'E' above it.

“Here you go Bella. I thought his neck was going to snap when he spun around to look for 'Suzy's friend.' His first question was if Suzy was with her... Good call having Alice wave. I told him I didn't think there was anyone named Suzy up here, which was the truth...then he looked bummed and scribbled the number.”

I grabbed my phone and dialed the voice on the line said “Mama Rosa's Pizza. Is this for pickup or delivery?”

I snapped my phone shut and looked at my fellow conspirators “Perfect...”

So there it is, Next chapter they meet, finally along with the songs I asked you guys for help with. Also, next chapter Emmett and Rose will share the full story of what happened

at the football game when she hit him! A big shout out to the people who knew where I got the name Suzy Carmichael from...well done.

Please review and I have a new poll up if you are interested. Thanks for reading and reviewing!

Chapter: 7

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

A huge thanks to all of you for your song suggestions!!! Thanks to thefoodsnob for her help on the songs. Paralyzer came in a close third to the two songs I used.

So many of you asked what Bella has planned, which surprised me because I thought it was pretty obvious...but I guess not. Let's just say this is something I would totally do in real life...which I'm now concerned makes me a sociopath :) Enjoy!

Previously on Boycotts and Barflies...

Vicki came back up a few minutes later and started laughing as she sat down at our table. She handed me a white napkin from the bar with a phone number scrawled on it with the letter 'E' above it.

"Here you go Bella. I thought his neck was going to snap when he spun around to look for 'Suzy's friend.' His first question was if Suzy was with her... Good call having Alice wave. I told him I didn't think there was anyone named Suzy up here, which was the truth...then he looked bummed and scribbled the number."

I grabbed my phone and dialed the voice on the line said "Mama Rosa's Pizza. Is this for pickup or delivery?"

I snapped my phone shut and looked at my fellow conspirators "Perfect..."

Grinders

EPOV

"Edward!" Vicki said as she scooted over to my end of the bar. Emmett and Jasper were under the bar checking the connections to the kegs.

"What's up?" I asked while digging for a couple of beers to fill an order.

"I have a customer requesting your phone number there, big guy." She punched my arm playfully. My eyes rolled at the thought.

"That's very unlike you Vicki, aren't you supposed to be discouraging girls from asking for my number right now o' great flyswatter?" I asked suspiciously.

"Hey, she offered me twenty bucks, even I have a price..." She said with a laugh. I grabbed a napkin off the bar and started to write the number for Mama Rosa's when she added "Oh yeah, I was supposed to tell you she's a friend of Suzy's? I don't know what that means, but just passing along the info..." My hand stopped on the napkin.

Quickly I asked, "Where is this girl sitting Vicki?" She motioned up to the left, I spun around and started looking along the rail to see if she was really there. A small girl with

short black hair caught my eye as she waved furiously at me, but she was alone. Probably a different Suzy...I thought to myself. I finished writing the number and tossed it to Vicki.

"Next time, I get a cut of the money." I snarled.

"Thanks Edward. You're just too cute for your own good." She said as she headed to the kitchen to pick up an order.

For the rest of the night, I was in a really bad mood. Jasper and Emmett actually accused me of having PMS because I was so moody. I had a ton of questions for Vicki but she snuck out of work before I had a chance to interrogate her further about the girl who asked for my number.

The following evening...

BPOV

"Bella, will you please stop being so darn stubborn?" Alice shouted as I held the bathroom door shut.

"No Alice, I am not wearing those pants. They hardly cover my rear, so if I bend in any way..."

"If you bend in any way they will get to look at your cute little butt. Would that be the worst thing ever? I have an adorable thong you can wear under the jeans.." Alice slid the lacy thong under the bathroom door.

"I'm not wearing that Alice..." I said into the door.

"Fine, then go commando for all I care, but you will wear these jeans and the blue shirt. If not, I am going straight to the bar and giving Edward your phone number." She banged on the door again to let me know just how serious she was.

I opened the door a crack "You wouldn't dare..."

"Try me Bella, just try me" She hissed in my face.

I flung open the door to have a face off with Alice. Even though I was taller, she was far more intimidating. "Give me the damn clothes, Alice" I said extending my hand out to her. She started jumping up and down with joy.

"You won't regret this Bella, I swear..." She said as she clapped her hands together

"I already do Alice, I already do..." I said as I gathered the clothes and stormed off to change.

A half hour later, we met up in the family room all dolled up and ready to go. I was wearing the outfit Alice had bought for me at the mall, minus the thong, which I flung back at her like a rubber band.. Commando was far better than floss for my rear.

"Going commando Bells? How sexy of you!" Alice giggled.

Alice was dressed in a short, white baby doll dress with silver accents along the straps and bodice. I looked over at Rosalie to take in her outfit, and just started laughing.

"Rose honestly, you are the only person I know who could wear that outfit and make it look so hot! He is going to die when he sees you." I laughed. "That's the plan." She said

as she checked her hair one more time in the mirror.

Rosalie elected to wear her Seahawks half shirt/Jersey from the football game. This time however, she wore nothing under it, exposing her flat, bare stomach. She went with a tiny, jean mini skirt that made her already perfect legs look five feet long. She finished the whole ensemble off with the black patent leather heels she had bought when she skipped out on her date weeks ago.

"Let's go have some fun girls!" Alice squealed as we grabbed our purses and headed downstairs to the parking lot. We hopped into Alice's car and sped over to the Downunder. Vicki had told us they were working the later shift again, but we wanted to get there just before they arrived so we had time to safely get out of sight and set the plan in motion at the correct time.

We walked in the bar and guys started shouting "Go Seahawks" at Rosalie immediately. A normal person would have been the slightest bit embarrassed at all the attention, for Rosalie, it was like air. She took it all in and it made her happier, more confident. Halfway to the bar, Vicki spotted us and headed our way "Ladies, how nice to see you again. I have your table ready, come on let's get you upstairs before the idiots show up!"

She led us upstairs to the same table we had been at the night before. The little red reserved sign was already on the table when we sat down. We quickly ordered drinks and an appetizer to tide us over until the boys arrived. My stomach was doing flips but I couldn't tell if it was from nerves or the fact that my pants were so tight, blood wasn't properly flowing to the lower half of my body.

We decided to run downstairs and danced for a few songs, to kill some time until the food, and the boys arrived. When we went back up to our table, our appetizers were waiting, along with fresh drinks. Vicki left us a note on a napkin 'They're Here!' I took out my cell phone and dialed the phone number Edward had given us last night on the napkin.

"Mama Rosa's Pizza, will this be for carryout or delivery?" A voice asked. I had to plug my ear so I could hear over the music.

"Delivery please." I answered.

"Address?" the voice asked again.

"Do you know a place called The Downunder?"

"Sure"

"Well I work there and we are having a bit of a party for the staff. I would like ten large pizzas with everything but anchovies on them. You can just drop them off at the bar. Ask for Edward and have the delivery guy tell him Suzy called the order in for him." I was trying so hard not to laugh.

While I was on the phone, I couldn't help but look down at the bar where Edward was working feverishly to fill orders. He looked incredible in a tight black t shirt with the Downunder logo embroidered on the chest and a pair of snug fitting jeans. Even as he was busy, he managed to have the most perfect smile on his face. I was watching him stand there and take a drink of water from a glass behind the bar when I was abruptly snapped back into reality.

"Hello Miss? Are you there? It will be there in twenty minutes and I asked if you wanted your total?" the voice on the phone asked with some irritation.

"Not really, Edward can worry about that. Thanks!" I quickly clicked the phone shut and looked at Rose and Alice. "Let's see if he has a sense of humor.." I said lightheartedly.

Dancing had made us hungry and thirsty so we easily finished off the appetizers and our drinks. Vicki came up a short while later and joined us. "I'm on break so I thought I'd hang out up here with my girls and get a better view of things. Can I just tell you I have been looking forward to this all day! My husband thinks you ladies are geniuses." We spent the next ten minutes listening to a bunch of Vicki's stories from working at a bar for the past year. Some of them, had us howling with laughter.

"How much longer for the pizza to arrive Bella?" Rose asked glancing down at the front door, sipping her second margarita of the evening

I quickly checked my watch, "About five minutes, if they are running on time." Alice got up and went to the rail to watch Jasper again. She had been staring at him since he walked in the door. Abruptly, she turned to face us "OH my gosh, that bimbo is hitting on Jasper!" Her hands were on her tiny hips as rage washed over her face. Vicki stood on her chair and looked for herself.

"Don't worry your pretty face Alice, they don't call me the flyswatter for nothing." She laughed as she gave Alice an encouraging nod and took off down the stairs. We all gathered at the rail to watch Vicki in action.

She stormed right over to where Jasper and the girls were talking and slammed her notebook onto the bar and started waving her arms wildly. We couldn't hear any of the conversation, but by the look on the girl's face and Jasper's for that matter, Vicki was playing the bitchy girlfriend thing perfectly. Alice started laughing when the girl tried to leave so fast, she tripped over her own feet, falling and spilling a drink on her shirt. The last thing we saw, was her scurrying to the restroom, glaring back at Vicki.

Edward and Emmett were doubled over in laughter while Jasper just stood there a bit shocked. He waved Vicki over, probably to ask what that was all about, when I was suddenly distracted by a guy in a bright purple jacket carrying a tall stack of pizza boxes. As he moved through the club, at times he would disappear into the crowd, but the pile of pizzas stayed ever visible. He moved closer to the bar and we all held out breath waiting for their reaction.

Jasper and Vicki were still deep in conversation when the delivery guy set the pizzas on the bar and pulled out a long strip of paper, no doubt with Edward's name on it, and the total for the order. Emmett walked up and asked the guy something and pointed to Edward who was busy pouring a drink. Emmett looked his way and must have called Edward's name because his head snapped to Emmett and his eyes got big when he saw the huge pile of pizzas sitting on the bar. Slowly, he walked over and started talking to the delivery guy.

Vicki saw the pizzas and looked up in our direction and started laughing, but quickly covered her mouth with her hand so no one noticed. I looked back at Edward who was now shaking his head no over and over again. The delivery guy leaned over and showed Edward the piece of paper and whatever he said made Emmett and Jasper explode into laughter. Vicki ran her fingers through her hair and when her hand was hidden beside her head flashed us a but thumbs up. Mission accomplished.

Alice, Rose and I started laughing as Edward threw up his hands in frustration and pulled out his wallet, and tossed the guy a wad of cash. The guy looked like he was apologizing, but Edward had walked over to the pizzas and just shook his head, I'm sure wondering what the heck to do with them.

Jasper and Emmett seemed thrilled by the pizza and threw open a box and began happily eating. Edward stood there fuming, running his hand through his hair over and over again. "He's so cute when he's frustrated Bella" Rose whispered in my ear.

"Yeah...he is cute isn't he..." My eyes were following him as he started moving the boxes of pizza off the bar top one by one and onto a nearby table. He looked inside one of them to see what kind of pizza there was, but made a face. He moved to the second, and made yet another face. After looking in the third box and rolling his eyes, he sulked away, apparently not a fan of pizza with the works.

He saw Vicki, and went straight over to her and started waving his hands at the pizza. "Uh,Oh...this can't be good." Alice said as she nervously tapped her fingernails on the rail. We exchanged scared glances and quickly sat down and tried to peer through the bars of the rail and see what was going on, but when we looked back at the bar, Vicki was gone.

"Where did she go?" Rose asked trying to get a better look at the floor. All of a sudden Vicki ran over to our table.

"Our cover is blown! He saw me laughing and looking up here, he knows something is up! He's coming up to my section of tables to look for 'Suzy'! Run ladies run..."

Faster than I ever thought possible in three inch heels, we leapt out of our chairs and hurried down the set of stairs that were farthest away from the bar and hid down on the dance floor. There were tons of people down there so we'd be safe.

While we were dancing, we all took a post to watch. Alice kept an eye on the bar, so she could tell us when Edward got back and so she could watch Jasper. Rose kept an eye on the staircase in case he headed to the dance floor and I kept my eyes up at the rail where we had been sitting.

Two minutes after we ran away, Edward leaned over the rail very close to where our table was looking down at the dance floor. Thankfully, we were dancing across the room where there wasn't the greatest lighting so he wouldn't see us. Still, I ducked my head down and let my hair fall over my face to hide just in case. He didn't look nearly as mad as I thought he might. He looked over to the bar and shrugged his shoulders like he was signaling Emmett and Jasper he couldn't find us.

After that, I didn't see him again. Rose was certain he hadn't come down the stairs, but Alice didn't see him at the bar yet either. They were playing really good music at the club so we were perfectly happy to stay in the cover of the dance floor for a while. Rose and Alice were teaching me a few new moves, specifically, Rose insisted I practice my booty drop, because as she so lovingly put it "Bella, you look like my grandma tying her shoe, not like you're doing a sexy dance move."

Alice leaned over and said "I can't stand it any more, I need to know if he remembers me. I'm going to go casually order a drink from Jasper,... Oh, there's Edward, he's back at the bar! I'll go keep an eye on him and see if I can hear what he's saying about the pizzas. You guys stay over here and I'll be right back." She skipped away from us, her white

dress flowing behind her.

I turned around and said into Rosalie's ear over the loud music "She is soooo not winning our bet. Those shoes are as good as mine!"

She raised her eyebrows high in the air "And what about me? Am I chopped liver or something

"You never stood a chance Rose...you like boys way too much!" I teased. I felt her give my rear a hard whack.

"Just for that insult Bella, this whole next song, you have to practice your grinding moves on me...show me what you got girl." Cyclone by T-pain came on and everyone of the dance floor started moving and gyrating together. I insisted Rose stand behind me while I danced, especially in the jeans I was wearing, one wrong bend and a cheek might just fly out. And the last thing I wanted was some random guy looking at my butt.

Rose and I were having a great time, the beat was slow and sexy, making it easy to dance to. Rosalie danced right up behind me and helped my hips find the right beat when I got off track. While I danced, I had a view of one section of the bar and could see Edward every so often as he walked to get something. Whenever I saw him, I would stop dancing and get off beat which would annoy Rose to no end. I tried to do a booty drop toward the end of the song, and Rosalie growled.

"Come on Bella, you can do better than that." she hissed in my ear "OOHH, Here's the perfect song for you." The DJ put on Hot in Herre by Nelly, one of Rosalie's favorite songs. "Ok, just listen to the music and just think of some really hot guy, and pretend you are dancing for him. Impress me, and I won't bother you again for the rest of the night. I swear!" She held up her hand like a good little girl and crossed her heart.

I rolled my eyes at her "Fine, I will unleash the full potential of my dance moves on you, but if I start to look like I'm having a seizure or something, please stop me. And whatever you do, stay behind me, these pants leave little to the imagination..." Rose snuggled up right behind me and I closed my eyes for a second and I remembered the gym, when I was pressed up against Edward's chest and just how good that felt. I started dancing, and thinking of Edward as I moved my hips with Rosalie's.

"That's it Bella, keep it up girl!" Rose said encouragingly in my ear. "Try a few booty drops and remember, arch your back."

My first one was a disaster, Rose started laughing behind me "Do you have a back condition or something what the heck was that? Try another one."

I glanced over at the bar and saw a small flash of white that appeared to be sitting on the bar top. Is that Alice sitting up there? I thought to myself. My view was temporarily blocked by the heads of people on the dance floor. I stood there for a second, dumbstruck, trying to get a better view of the bar to see if it was her. When I stopped moving, I felt Rosalie's hands on my hips, as she once again began moving them with hers.

"Sorry Rose, I thought I saw Alice...I'm dancing, I'm dancing...I mumbled." I better give her what she wants or I will be down here all night. I thought, never taking my eyes off the bar. I once again thought of Edward and did my best few minutes of grinding and booty drop combo of the night. Rose let out a whistle behind me, so I knew I had managed to impress her.

My eyes were still on the bar, searching for Alice, when I felt Rose brush my hair over my shoulder and lean in to say something in my ear.

Instead of hearing Rosalie's voice, I heard a voice that was silky and smooth say "Thanks for the pizza Suzy."

I immediately was covered in goosebumps when I realized who it was. And, I also realized it was his body I was grinding against at this very second.

I spun around to see Edward no more than an inch away from me. With my face blushing an incredible shade of crimson, I croaked "Edward..." I searched over his shoulder and found Rose a few feet away laughing her ass off. I mouthed "You're dead" to her and looked back up at Edward.

"Aren't you supposed to be working?" I asked completely flustered, as I took a step away from him trying to separate my body from his. But when I moved away, he just took one step closer, closing any small distance that I had created. He had the cutest crooked smile on his face as he leaned in to say something else.

"I am working. I better go back or Emmett will have my head. You know where I'll be if you want to talk, or anything. Oh, and thanks for the dance, it was really...hot." He reached down and took my hand kissed the top of it before winking at me and heading back to the bar.

I couldn't move, I just stood paralyzed on the dance floor, Rosalie came running over still laughing "Sorry, Bella but I have to do whatever I can to win those shoes... and I think that just increased my chances of winning, big time! You guys looked so hot together on the dance floor."

Still unable to speak, I headed up the stairs back to the table where I snatched up my Cosmo and downed the whole thing. When my breathing and pulse returned to the normal range I glared at my so called friend "That was evil Rosalie Hale! How long was he behind me? Do I even want to know..."

She shook her head 'no' but answered anyway. "We switched when you stopped dancing because you were distracted by something at the bar. He jumped in and put his hands on your hips and got you dancing again. That was the hottest I've ever seen you dance Bella. You really must have been... feeling it...HA!" She cracked herself up and I blushed again.

So it had been Edward that whistled at me when I was dancing, and his hands were on my hips. Shoot me now...just kill me... I thought as I flung my face onto my hands. But on the plus side, he did say the dance was hot...When I regained my composure looked at Rose and said "That was still evil Rose...and I will get you back somehow..."

"I told you Bella, just trying to increase my chances of winning the shoes, there's nothing wrong with that." Her laughter became contagious. Then I remembered what had distracted me before. I jumped up from my chair and looked over the rail to the bar where I saw Alice, sitting on the corner of the bar, with a notebook in her hand taking drink orders and barking them out to Jasper, who happily ran around behind the bar to fill them.

I turned over my shoulder and said "Rose, come check this out!"

"That little pixie! What has gotten into her?" Rose hissed.

"I have no idea, but I guess he remembered her. Come on, let's go make Emmett's day! Your turn." I said playfully to Rose. She whipped a mirror out of her purse and quickly fixed her hair and put on a fresh coat of lipstick. "Let's do this." She said with a wink and an excited gleam in her eye.

I had to muster all my courage to walk down to the bar and talk to Edward after what just happened out on the dance floor. Every time my mind wandered back to it, I felt the blood rush to my cheeks and began fanning myself from the intense heat radiating off my face.

Somehow, I managed to force one foot after the other and strolled up behind Edward who was standing with his back to the bar. "Edward!" I shouted right behind him. His hands flew up and he spun around nearly spilling the drink in his hand. At first, his face was angry, until he saw it was me then his expression changed to mildly amused.

"Trying to kill me this evening? First the dance, and now screaming at me? You know there's only so much excitement my poor heart can take." He put his pale hand over his heart and grinned. "So what brings you here? Did you miss me?" He asked as he leaned over the bar, his green eyes twinkling.

"No, I came to apologize for you know...rubbing myself all over you before. If it makes you feel any better it was the most embarrassing moment of my entire life, and you got to witness it." I grinned uncomfortably. "Sorry you had to endure that."

"Actually, I rather enjoyed myself." God why does he have to be so cute?

"Suzy!" I heard Emmett boom from down the bar. "Thanks for the pizza!" In all my mortification over the dirty dancing incident, I totally forgot about the pizzas. But then, I saw Rosalie heading toward us. I grabbed Edward's hand on the bar and leaned over to him.

"You're going to love this. See the girl over my shoulder who looks like a Seahawks cheerleader?" Edward leaned to the left so he could get a peek at Rose. His face looked slightly frightened as he shook his head yes.

"Just watch a master at work." I whispered and let go of his hand. I folded my hands on the bar and patiently waited as Rose approached.

Emmett had his head ducked under the bar and was rummaging through a box when Rose put both hands on the bar top and leaned over it to get his attention. "Excuse me. Can I get a drink please?" She asked in what I knew to be her version of the 'sexy voice'.

Emmett's held up one finger without looking at her, which frustrated the hell out of Rose. She was using her best stuff here and he wasn't even paying attention.

"Does he know her?" Edward asked leaning his head closer to me. Anytime he got close, my heart would thunder in my chest.

"Kind of..."

At that second, Emmett finally looked up and saw Rosalie, who could have been the Seahawks pin up girl draped over the bar on front of him. His eyes went from her face, to her cleavage, and back to her face in the span of one second.

Then he froze, and his eyes grew wide. The box he had just took out from under the bar, fell to the floor causing one thousand straws to scatter behind the bar. I heard Jasper

cursing at the other end.

“Oh my god! It's you...” Emmett mumbled.

“How's the eye?” she asked pointing in the direction of his black eye.

Edward turned to face me “SHE gave him the black eye?” His eyes were unable to hide his joy and amazement.

“Yes she did. She's got a wicked right hook.” I saw Emmett start stammering as he tried to apologize to Rose who had her hands firmly planted on her hips, but one of the corners of her mouth was turning up slightly.

“No wait, I really am sorry. I would never...I mean, I guess I probably would have, look at you...wow...but not in the line at the football game...and I probably would have waited until I at least knew your name... Hi...nice shirt...Go Seahawks?”

Edward and Jasper seeing their friend flounder came over to rub it in. “Emmett!” Edward said as he patted him on the back “Introduce us to your friend. She seems to be quite the football fan. Did Emmett tell you we were at the game this weekend?”

Jasper caught his breath and added “You look like a big fan, were you by any chance at the game too?”

Emmett started furiously wiping down the bar, trying to not pay attention, but Rose wasn't letting him off that easy. “Why as a matter of fact, we were at the game weren't we girls?” She looked over at Alice and I, and we nodded. “And that's where I met your friend here.”

As Emmett continued wiping off the bar, Rose grabbed his arm and said “Would you like to tell them the story of how we met, or should I?”

His face went white, and he was pleading her with his eyes not to tell, but Rosalie wasn't one to show mercy. She took a deep breath and started the story “Well, I had just gone and bought my jersey and on my way back up to the club level when I smelled popcorn and decided to stop at the concession stand and get some. So I'm standing in line and as the guy gives me my popcorn I feel someone reach over and grab my ass.” She glared in Emmett's direction as he opened his mouth to protest, she put her hand over it before a sound escaped.

“So I turned to him and said 'What the hell to you think you're doing?' and he turns to me and says 'I wasn't trying to grab you, I was trying to grab my wiener.'” Rose couldn't go on with the story because Edward and Jasper actually collapsed onto the bar in hysterics.

Emmett pried Rosalie's hand off his mouth and held it in his hand for a second. “Wait, that's not exactly how it happened...can I please tell my side of it?” Alice and I had tears streaming down our faces as Edward and Jasper gasped for breath.

“Go ahead Emmett, I'm sure your explanation will make it all better.” Jasper laughed.

“Ok, so you guys were there, I got hungry so I went down to the concession stand too, and I must have been next to her in line, but I didn't notice her” Rose let out a small huff at the thought that a guy hadn't noticed her.

Emmett picked up on that and smiled, "I was watching the TV so I didn't miss any of the game, you were on the other side of me otherwise I totally would have noticed you." Then he winked at her and Rosalie smiled.

"So anyway, when I got to the window I ordered a large hot dog, you know the 1/3 pound ones because I was starving and had been thinking about this hot dog all game. The guy tells me I was lucky I got the last one. When he handed me the hot dog, I also went to pick up the hot pretzel I had to get for someone..." He glared at Jasper who saluted him with a middle finger "And when I turned, the last jumbo hot dog slipped out of my hand and I went to grab it, but I missed and I guess that's when my hand accidentally grabbed your ass." He looked at Rosalie very apologetically.

"So your lame excuse about grabbing your wiener was true?" Rose asked laughing now.

"Yes, and that's what I tried to explain to you before you decided to deck me." Emmett said pointing back up at his bruised eye "Then, when I tried to follow you to explain, you sicked the elevator boy on me and I was stuck looking like a perverted ass grabber with a black eye."

My cheeks burned from laughing. At some point during my fit, I must have grabbed Edward's hand because I became very aware we were touching when I started to calm down. I nervously slid my hand away from his and looked up to see his green eyes looking deep into mine. "So how much of Emmett's story did you guys know?" I joked, trying to take his focus off of me.

"He had told us he accidentally grabbed some girls ass, but he left out the part about his wiener...no wonder she decked you Emmett." Edward said as he looked down the bar. "In his defense he did whine the rest of the game about not getting his hot dog."

"Shut up Edward. Why don't you and Suzy there go enjoy some pizza?" Emmett snarled as he turned his attention back to Rosalie who wanted to get a closer look at her handiwork. Emmett happily leaned closer for her to check his eye.

Something Emmett said snapped me out of my fog. "Oh gosh, here." I pulled some money out of my pocket and held it out to Edward who looked completely puzzled.

"What is that for? My pain and suffering because of the dance?" He teased.

"Very funny Edward,. No, it's for the pizzas." I dropped the money onto the bar, but he just pushed it back at me.

"I'm not taking your money."

"Take the money, the look on your face was worth it. And from the looks of it, you don't like pizza with the works very much." I said glancing over at the pile of pizza that some of the other employees were now helping themselves to.

"Not a big fan of onions, sorry." Edward said while quickly getting a few beers for one of the servers.

"Yeah, it would probably make it difficult to make out with all your bar flies with onion breath." I bit my lip to keep from laughing when he again looked confused.

"How did you know about BarFlies...never mind, Vicki. I need to have a little chat with my

friend later. "He said looking up at Vicki's section of tables. He smiled and turned his attention back to me with a grin.

"And for your information, there's only been one girl I've met in the last few weeks I wanted to kiss and the first time we met, wasn't here at the bar, so she isn't really a bar fly even though she is becoming a regular here." He raised his eyebrows playfully as he continued unleashing the full power of his charms on me. I felt my face getting hot, so I nervously played with my hair to try and hide my face a bit.

"So, I want to know how many times you've had girls send you pizzas from this place." I asked glancing over at the Mama Rosa's boxes.

He laughed "Never."

"No one ever called you in an order before when you gave them the bogus number? Why not?" I asked amazed.

"Probably because they weren't nearly as clever as you are..." He half whispered. He glanced down at the money which was still sitting in front of him. "Please take this back, I don't want it, I gave out the number, I should face the consequences."

"Well, now I feel bad. I stuck you with a bunch of pizzas you won't even eat... the least I could do is pay for them."

"You know what you can give me instead of money?" His eyes started twinkling again.

"I'm not kissing you."

"Who said anything about a kiss?" he asked innocently. I was still suspicious.

"I'm not giving you my phone number either, I don't know you, you could be a stalker or something.."

"I don't want your phone number either...well I do but that's not what I want right now..."

Completely confused, I narrowed my eyes suspiciously as said "Well what do you want then?"

"Your real name please. I've seen pictures of Suzy Carmichael and let's just say Emmett wasn't very 'selective' for his first time, if you know what I mean. Every time I call you Suzy, I see her face, and it is starting to make me ill. Besides, you seem to already know my name, so it's only fair." He stood there like a statue waiting for my answer.

I sat quietly and twirled a piece of my hair around my finger while I made him wait. He started getting nervous like I was going to turn him down, so I said playfully, "I don't know that I want to tell you that yet...I kinda like you calling me Suzy..."

"Hey Edward, hey Bella!" a voice came from over my shoulder. Alice. I dropped the piece of my hair in disgust. "Thanks Alice!" I snarled.

Edward laughed out loud and clapped his hands together. "Bella, Bella, Bella...now that, fits you much better." He said as he tucked a stray piece of hair back behind my ear, his fingers brushing lightly against my cheek, giving me chills.

Alice's voice rang out next to me "Bella, we need to get going. Come on Rose, the boys

have work to do and it's getting late." She gave me my coat, and I threw it over my shoulders.

I noticed Edward looked disappointed. "Do you really have to go? Can't you just stay until we close and if you wanted to, we could go get something to eat.." Emmett walked over and echoed Edward's request.

"Sorry boys, we have to go. We need our beauty sleep. Ladies, shall we?" Alice pointed toward the door. I saw her wink at Jasper as she walked away from the bar. Rose blew Emmett a kiss and Edward quietly said "Bye Bella."

"Bye Edward. I'll see you soon." I said as I smiled. My words seemed to make him happier.

"Promise?" He smirked.

"Yeah, I promise. Bye" I gave him a small wave, and yet again, I forced my feet to walk away from Edward.

Before my note...I have a new story I want you all to check out by ronOReds called My Personal Valentine. It is a fantastic story you will all be hooked on, instantly!!! GO CHECK IT OUT...

Hope you liked it! I am closing the poll about babysitting...and I have to say I am shocked so many of you would send your children off to have Jasper, the one most likely to bite them, as their baby sitter. Bella came in first, closely followed by Edward, with Jasper in third.

Personally, I'd leave Emmett in charge because my kids would have fun, they are as diabolical as Emmett and if they had fun with him they'd want him to come back and I'd get to go out more. I'd also forbid him from taking them outside to avoid any unfortunate run ins with raccoons :)

Review please :)

Chapter: 8

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

So many of you asked for this snippet, so I gave it to you. EPOV for a part of the last chapter. From after the pizzas to the end of his dance with Bella. Not sure how I did...Vampire Edward is much easier to write for than warm blooded human Edward...I tried. :)

If you don't want to re-read the same scene, no biggie, you can safely skip this chapter and not be lost.

Urges

EPOV

Onions. Why did it have to have onions? I asked myself as I shook my head in disgust. I looked over at Emmett and Jasper who were thoroughly enjoying my gift from Suzy as I ran my hand through my hair in frustration. Did this mean she likes me or hates me? I asked myself. I gave her the stupid number...last night. Vicki. She was the one who asked for the number last night and mentioned Suzy.

I saw Vicki looking up to her area of tables and... laughing? "Vicki!" I called. She turned to face me and wiped the smile off her face and tried to play dumb.

"Hey Edward, that was nice of you to get pizza for everyone." The glee in her eyes gave her away.

"Spill Vicki. I know you are in on this. Are you trying to teach me a lesson?" I asked pointing at the pizzas.

"Me? No...I swear I did not make the call."

"But you know who did?" She shifted her feet as I watched her intently.

"Maybe..." She mumbled and I saw her nervously glance up to her serving area. Vicki was a horrible liar and yet she had a small smile on her face. That's when it hit me.

"She's here isn't she..." It all made sense. She was here yesterday...she sent Vicki for the number and she wanted to teach me a lesson about giving out the fake number. When I looked back at Vicki, she had taken off like a bat out of hell up the stairs to her serving area.

"Emmett, Jasper, I need to take a quick break!" I shouted down to them as they ate their pieces of pizza.

"Wait where are you going Edward?" Emmett asked. I wanted to quickly follow Vicki, but I needed to talk to him.

"Suzy is here. I think Vicki has made a new friend...I need to run upstairs and see for myself." I heard them making comments about me 'having it bad for the naughty librarian'

as I ran toward the stairs.

Vicki was calmly helping a table in the corner when I got upstairs, but I saw her watching me out of the corner of my eye. I scanned the room, too old, guys, older women, and a bachelorette party. Those were her tables and no Suzy. As I was about to go back downstairs, I saw one empty table with a reserved sign on it. We hardly ever used those, only for special occasions... Vicki saw me walking toward that table and ran over to intercept me.

"Edward, you'll see her when she wants you to. And trust me, she wants you to. Go back to work." She gave me a playful punch on the arm and walked away. I went to the rail near the reserved table and looked down at the bar. Emmett and Jasper looked up trying to see if I found her, but I just shrugged and held up my empty hands.

I better get back to work. If she wants to see me she knows where I am. I told myself. I tried to concentrate on my work, but I was hopelessly distracted. I kept scanning the bar for her, just a glimpse of her brown hair or her eyes, but nothing. I felt my mood getting crabbiest when I looked down the bar and noticed a small girl in a white dress sitting on top of the bar, by Jasper.

I wonder if that is his mystery girl. Emmett said she was tiny I thought to myself. I casually headed down to that end of the bar.

"Jasper, who's your friend?" I asked with a big smirk on my face. He shot me a warning glance that said 'Behave' before he introduced me.

"Edward this is Alice, Alice this is Edward" I held out my hand to her, but as she turned so I could finally see her face, I was stunned "You..." was all I could squeak out.

"I'm sorry?" Alice asked, as her cheeks turned red.

"You were here last night, you're a friend of Suzy's aren't you!" My heart sprung to life in my chest at the thought of talking to Alice and finding out more about Suzy.

"I may know the girl you are talking about, yes..." She giggled. Jasper was slowly putting the pieces of the puzzle together for himself.

"Is she still here? I got her present and I wanted to thank her." I nodded my head in the direction of the pizzas.

"She liked that you had a sense of humor about them." Alice said with a knowing grin. She liked the sense of humor... does that mean she liked... me?

Jasper joined in the conversation "So you made friends with Vicki then? That's quite an accomplishment, she usually hates most of girls in the bar."

"You mean all your Barflies?" Alice teased. Jasper and I both were taken back by the term. "Actually she said we were quite, nice."

"You really did make friends with her... so you guys were here yesterday?" I pressed on.

"Yes we were. We were sitting right up there again." Alice pointed up to where the reserved table was in Vicki's section.

"So do you know where Suzy is right now? I looked upstairs, but she wasn't there." I

really wanted to see her now. There was something about her that I just couldn't get enough of.

"She's hiding on the far side of the dance floor right now. You should go find her, she'd love to see you. She's wearing a blue sweater, tight jeans... and no underwear." She added with a not so subtle wink. "And she's dancing with a girl who is a big Seahawks fan..."

"Thanks Alice, Jasper I like this girl...even if she technically is a barfly!" Alice whapped my shoulder playfully.

I looked at Jasper, who smiled and nodded his head as I flew out from behind the bar and made my way to the dance floor. A few girls grabbed my arms and tried to get me to stop and dance with them, but the only person I wanted to see right now was her. I snaked around the dance floor and found the Seahawks girls first, she was easy to spot in the crowd. In front of her, was the person I had been looking for, Suzy. She was having a conversation with her friend as the DJ started a Nelly song.

I stood against the wall and watched her for a few minutes. Her hair was down this time, and it fell over her shoulders and bounced gently as she danced. The sweater was a stunning shade of blue that looked lovely against her skin.

She closed her eyes and a smile came across her lips right as she started dancing. Her hips moved gracefully with her friend's, her arms moving along her body. I would have watched her dance for hours, but I could no longer stand being so far away from her. There was this inexplicable need to touch her, to just feel her skin.

Never taking my eyes off of her, I walked up on the girls, standing beside her friend for a second, until she noticed me. Suzy had stopped dancing and was now staring up at the bar, looking for something, or someone.

I wonder if she is looking for me. I thought to myself. My heart started racing with excitement at the thought. Her friend must have known who I was, because she turned to me and I asked "Would you mind if I cut in?" she looked me up and down and smiled mischievously.

"Go get her tiger. She has been wanting to grind on you all night. You better bring your 'A' game though, she can dance." Her friend stepped back and I could feel my breathing pick up as I stepped closer to Suzy. I gently reached out my hands and put them on her tiny hips. My fingers grazed an exposed sliver of skin on her side, making me want her even more.

She responded to my touch by leaning back into my body and mumbling "Sorry Rose, I thought I saw Alice...I'm dancing ...I'm dancing". With that said, she began to move her body with mine.

It was as if our bodies were perfectly in tune with one another. Every movement I made, she followed, every breath I took, she took one too. She felt warm against my body and soft, oh so soft. I could have stayed on the dance floor forever, but I glanced over at the bar and saw Emmett and Jasper frantically filling drink orders, and I knew I needed to go, but the urge to stay was just as strong.

I gently swept her hair over her shoulder so I could whisper something in her ear. My mouth was right next to her face when I whispered "Thanks for the pizza Suzy."

She immediately tensed, but thankfully, continued moving her body with mine until she

broke out of her trance and spun to face me.

“Edward ...” She said as her cheeks turned red with the most beautiful blush. My name, she knows my name...I saw her look over my shoulder and threatened her girlfriend, then she recovered nicely. “Aren't you supposed to be working?” As she asked she took a step away from me, but I needed to be close to her, so I took a step forward and smiled as I leaned closer to her gorgeous face so she could hear me.

“I am working. I better go back or Emmett will have my head. You know where I'll be if you want to talk, or anything. Oh, and thanks for the dance, it was really...hot.” Hot was the understatement of the century, but I figured if I said, 'the best moment of my life', or 'it made me want to take you into the back room'...the things I was really thinking, she would have run away.

Instead, I chose to be a gentleman, just like my parents always taught me, and I picked up her little hand and placed a kiss on the top of it and winked before I walked away.

I hoped with every fiber of my being that she would come talk to me. If she didn't, I wasn't sure what I was going to do. All I know is this 'Suzy' girl had caught my eye and suddenly my heart like no one ever had before.

AAAWWWWW I know. So those of you that asked for it, there it is... Review please ;)

Chapter: 9

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Popcorn

BPOV

When the cold of the evening air hit our faces, we were snapped out of our silence. I opened the car doors and we quickly climbed in so we could begin to warm up. Before I pulled out of the parking lot, I turned to Alice and asked the question that had been bugging me since I walked away from Edward.

"Remind me again why we just turned down their offer to go grab some food, and I know about the boycott, but it wouldn't have broke any of the rules.." Rosalie was nodding her head in agreement as we waited for Alice's answer to our burning question.

"Ladies, we are playing hard to get. Hard to get is far more attractive than clingy and desperate, wouldn't you agree?"

I thought about it and said a quick "Sure..."

Rose got very serious for a second and said "Fine we're playing hard to get, I understand that part, but eventually we are going to let them catch us right?"

We spent the rest of the drive home in a comfortable silence, each of us deep in our own thoughts about what had happened tonight. I unlocked the door, tossed my keys into the basket and said to the girls "Get your PJ's and pillows and meet me on the couch in ten minutes." The both smiled and hurried into their rooms to change.

I opened my bedroom door and flopped down on my bed for a minute. My face blushed as I thought back over the night's events, Edward's face when the pizza arrived, him whispering in my ear on the dance floor, the feeling of his hands on my hips, Rosalie and Emmett retelling the wiener story and Alice sitting on the bar helping Jasper.

I grabbed my pajama bottoms and a t shirt and quickly changed. With my pillow under my arm, I headed out to the couch, where Alice was already sitting, bouncing with excitement. Rosalie was in the kitchen making some popcorn and soon came out and joined us

Alice finally burst "Oh my gosh that was so much fun and they are so great!!!"

She started clapping her hands together. "Rose you and Emmett are so cute together and Bella...wow. Talk about chemistry!" Rosalie rolled her eyes at Alice's comment, I however, turned red.

"Get a grip Alice, he's still wiener guy you know. One conversation doesn't make a love connection." Rosalie tried to blow it off, but I could see she was trying way too hard to sound uninterested.

"Rose, we both saw it...and, I for one, distinctly heard you use your 'sexy' voice. You only use that if you are interested in someone." I looked at her suspiciously, and her uninterested facade broke and a huge smile erupted across her face.

"God, he is so cute. And stupid...but I can work with that. And Bella, you saw him working out! I may need to go to the gym with you..." Rose began fanning herself at the thought of Emmett, sweaty and working out.

I turned my attention to Alice who was throwing popcorn into the air and catching it in her mouth. "So, I take it Jasper remembered you?" A piece of popcorn hit her in the nose and she started laughing.

"Yeah, he remembered me. He was getting drinks for someone else, so I hopped up onto the bar and waited for him to notice me." she giggled.

"Very subtle of you Alice." Rosalie teased. Alice just tossed a piece of popcorn at her which Rose easily swatted to the ground.

"You know I don't do subtle very well Rose..." Alice scowled.

Rose responded sarcastically "Really? I hadn't noticed.."

"Anyway... when he finally came over, all he said was 'I've been waiting for you.' and I said 'well here I am'. And then I introduced myself as Alice Brandon, the girl of his dreams." My mouth dropped open in shock.

"To have your self confidence, for a day Alice...wow." I mumbled, shaking my head side to side..

"Oh, please Bella, I saw your little 'dirty dancing' routine with Edward. You didn't look insecure at all when you were rubbing yourself all over him...I could feel the heat all the way over at the bar!" Alice giggled fanning herself. I playfully hit her with a pillow, which quickly snowballed into an enormous pillow fight. I was standing over Alice with two pillows in my hand, when a thought suddenly jumped into my head.

"Alice, you were over at the bar. Why in the world was Edward even on the dance floor to begin with?" Alice looked extremely guilty as I waited for her answer.

"Alice...spill it!"

"Well, when I was sitting on the bar with Jasper, Edward may have recognized me from last night when we asked for his phone number and he may have asked if I was a friend of Suzy's..." She said looking at Rose for help, but Rose was too engrossed in the story herself to run interference.

"And??" I pressed, holding the pillow up higher as a threat.

"And I may have said yes, I knew you. Then he got all cute and excited and he wanted to know if you were at the bar tonight so I might have mentioned you were in the far side of the dance floor, wearing a blue sweater, tight jeans and no underwear...oh yeah, and you were dancing with a Seahawks fan." She threw her hands defensively over her face as the pillow left my hand on a path to her face.

"Are you insane? You told him I wasn't wearing underwear?????" I didn't even know if she

could hear me over Rosalie's hysterical laughter.

"Oh stop it Bella...you loved every minute of it...OUCH ...I was just helping...you should be thanking me...ouch...he just about jumped over the bar to go find you ...stop hitting me!" Alice begged as I pummeled her with pillows. I turned my attention to Rosalie.

"And did you say anything I need to know about Miss Hale?" I asked with raised eyebrows as I took a few steps closer to her. Her eyes were fixed on the pillow in my hand.

"He asked if he could cut in and ...OUCH I didn't even tell you yet... I might have said something along the lines of...'Go get her tiger, she's been wanting to grind on you all night, better bring your A game'...stop it Bella, I can't breathe..." Rosalie squawked from under a pillow.

"Just when I thought I couldn't be more embarrassed in my entire life, you two just proved me wrong. This is so much worse than I thought it was two hours ago...I need a new alias...maybe Joanie Cunningham...that might work." I rambled out loud to myself.

We spent the next two hours talking and laughing about everything that had happened over the last few days. From the boycott, to the boys, and now to counting down the days until our stupid boycott was over. Someone had to be crowned the winner, we were all too stubborn to just cancel the wager, so my plan was going to be to push Alice and Jasper or Emmett and Rose together as fast as possible. The sooner they disqualify themselves, the sooner I could even consider seeing if Edward really liked me.

The next two days, Rosalie and Alice were swamped with work, The holidays were always a busy time of year for them, so I spent most of the day alone. I even tried to sneak to the gym one day to see if I could accidentally run into Edward, with no luck. Thursday night, Alice flopped on the couch after another long day and wanted to plan our weekend.

"So what is the plan for tomorrow night?" Alice asked. Rosalie came and joined us on the couch, eating a bowl of cereal.

"Would it be too desperate to go to the Downunder?" Rosalie asked hopefully, but when Alice rolled her eyes, she knew the answer.

"Yes Rose...if we went there we could just paint desperate across our heads." Alice sighed. "Wait, I have a great idea! Let go see a movie and we'll do dinner after that. What comes out tomorrow?" She grabbed the newspaper and started planning our Friday night

-----Friday night-----

"Alice we are going to a dark, sticky movie theater! There is no reason for all this primping, unless you've decided we can go to the Downunder tonight, in which case Rose and I are going to kill you because we are completely under dressed!" I screamed at her closed bedroom door.

I looked helplessly at Rosalie who decided to try banging on the door while screaming. "Alice, we need to leave in exactly five minutes or we will not have time to get popcorn and I cannot sit through a movie without popcorn and Twizzlers so get a move...on" Alice chose that moment to throw open her door.

"Stop the screeching girls, I'm ready." Alice strolled out of her room. "Perfection takes time

ladies.” She said with a little bow.

I had to drive like a madman to make it to the theater in time for the movie. I knew if we missed the previews Alice would whine for an hour and if Rose didn't have time to get her popcorn and Twizzlers there'd be hell to pay. I bought our tickets on line and quickly printed them out with 5 minutes to spare before the previews were set to start.

A large refillable tub of popcorn, 3 large sodas, 1 bag of Twizzlers, 1 box of snow caps and an order of nachos later, we ran down to the theater just as the lights were dimming for the previews. Alice ran into the third row and sat in the center of it. “Do you think we have enough food?” Alice whispered as the first preview started.

“We have enough food to feed a family of six for a week Alice!” I chuckled as we were shushed by a woman a few seats down. Rosalie rolled her eyes at the woman and shushed her right back.

“How scary is this movie Alice?” I asked when the creepy music started with the opening credit

“It's Stephen King Bella, you'll have nightmares for a week!” Rose hissed in my ear. I began nervously munching on my nachos. To my right, Alice was shaking her Sno Caps around in the box and on my left, Rosalie was balancing a huge bucket of popcorn on her lap while wielding a package of Twizzlers in her hand.

Ten minutes into the movie something flew between my head and Rosalie's. I glanced her way and she looked at me, having seen the flying object too. I shrugged at her and went back to the movie. The creepy music returned and I started to tense up, knowing something was about to happen on screen. I was completely engrossed in the movie, holding Rosalie's hand, when a couple skittles flew over my shoulder and bounced off the seat back in front of me, into my nacho cheese.

“What the hell was that?” I hissed to Rose. “Damn kids...” I mumbled as I turned around in my seat to find the little culprits. I saw no one in the two rows behind us, but in the third row, a young couple was laughing hysterically. I gave them a dirty look and turned back to the movie.

“This movie is kinda creepy don't you think” Alice whispered in my ear as yet another person disappeared into the mist. With my hands tightly across my face, I nodded my head while peering at the screen through a small gap in my fingers.

“Why do these stupid people always go off alone when people are disappearing?” Rosalie mumbled, while gnawing on her Twizzlers. As I reached over to grab a Twizzler from her bag, a handful of popcorn sailed over our heads and scattered into our laps.

“What the hell?” Rosalie screamed, causing the woman down the aisle to start shushing us again. “Hey, someone is throwing popcorn at us, so mind your own business.” She snapped at the woman.

I spun around in my seat to look behind us for the culprits and again the only people laughing were the young couple three rows up. I flipped them off, which for some reason only made them laugh harder and turned back around in my seat.

“Who the hell is throwing stuff at us?” Rosalie asked. Alice was giggling in her seat, apparently she was safely out of range of the popcorn throwing lunatics behind us.

"There is a couple three rows up who keeps laughing, they are the only ones around..." I whispered getting more irritated.

We returned our attention back to the movie. The mist was rolling in. More people disappeared in the movie, and they were climbing through a pitch black building trying to elude the mist. Terrified, I was clutching my tray of nachos with both hands, holding my breath. The mist got closer, and closer and then all of a sudden I felt something warm on the back of my neck and got goosebumps.

It's your imagination Bella, chill out! It's a movie, no deranged killers in the theater...My brain tried to tell my body, but my heart refused to listen, it was still thundering, my hands trembling and I was about to turn around when a velvety voice said in my ear "Who goes to a movie and orders nachos?"

That was all my heart could handle, and I screamed, not just any scream, but a bloodcurdling scream as my nachos flew up into the air. My scream scared Rose so bad, she knocked the popcorn off her lap and into my mine. Alice, on the other hand, was laughing so hard, she dropped her box of Sno caps, sending them cascading all over the floor.

I instantly turned in my seat to see Edward, Jasper and Emmett howling in the row directly behind us. Where the hell did they come from? As I glanced further the theater, most of the people in the place had erupted into hysterical laughter at what had just happened, including the couple I had flicked off minutes ago.

"What the hell do you think you are doing? Were you trying to give me a heart attack?" I hissed as I threw two huge handfuls of popcorn at them.

"I didn't know you were that scared...oh my god...the nachos went everywhere..." Edward gasped.

"You suck! And you owe me some new nachos and refill the popcorn jackass." I threw the now empty large popcorn bucket back at him. He was still laughing as I watched him walk out of the theater.

Emmett leaned over to Rosalie and said "Are you scared Rosalie? If you want, I could come sit next to you, you know, to help you feel safe..." Emmett trailed off hoping she would take the bait.

"I can promise you Emmett, I wouldn't feel the least bit safe sitting next to YOU in the dark. I've seen the crap you are capable of in broad daylight, let alone a dark movie theater. Stay back there, that will make me feel safe." Rose quipped without even turning her head in Emmett's direction. I heard him huff and crash back into his seat. I glanced over at Rose and she gave me a quick wink.

I turned to my other side and saw Alice and Jasper whispering back and forth with their heads together. Every so often, Alice would let out a loud giggle, causing the lady to begin shushing us all over again.

Edward returned a few minutes later with the popcorn and nachos. "Here you go Bella, one tray of nachos, the strangest movie food ever sold. Did you know that you have been the only person all day to order nachos, I asked the girl. She said it typically takes them three weeks to go through a whole vat of liquid cheese..." He kept rambling on about how gross my nachos were, so I dipped one in the cheese and crammed it into his beautiful, open mouth.

"Taste the deliciousness that is liquid cheese Edward..." I laughed, as I turned back to face the movie. I heard him mumble behind me "Disgusting..."

Rose smacked Emmett's big hand as he reached over her shoulder trying to grab some popcorn from the freshly filled bucket. "Ouch." Emmett whined, but Rose just glared. "Maybe you shouldn't have thrown all your popcorn at people." Rosalie hissed.

"Can I please have some popcorn Rosalie?" Emmett asked. His good manners won her over, she reluctantly held the bucket over her head so he could reach some.

I felt a gently tap on my shoulder, and when I turned, Edward's face was right there, his green eyes dancing again. I was caught slightly off guard by how close he was and how good he smelled. His breathtaking smile broke me out of my trance and I said "What?"

"I still have the horrible taste of molten cheese in my mouth. Can I please have a sip of you drink?" He pleaded with not only his voice, but with his eyes...those darn, sexy green eyes of his.

"You don't have any communicable diseases do you? When is the last time you sucked face with some skanky barfly?" I asked accusingly.

He rolled his eyes, "My lips are clean I promise...want to check for your self?" He asked wickedly as he puckered up.

"Ewww, no thanks. Here you go," I handed him the soda. "Now if you don't mind, I want to see the end of this movie."

I looked up at the giant screen and tried to focus on the end of the movie, but my mind was only interested in one thing, Edward. He was sitting directly behind me and kept whispering to Emmett. I strained my ears to try and hear what they were talking about, but with no luck.

Then at one point, he started tapping his foot into the back of my chair. When he realized it, he leaned up again and whispered "Sorry" into my ear. Feeling his breath on my neck made me shiver. I began to imagine him sitting next to me and burying my face into his chest during the scary parts. He would put his arm around me protectively and it would be ...perfect. Boycott, money, shoes, boycott, money, shoes. I repeated in my head.

I heard Rosalie let out a sigh beside me, she wasn't the least but interested in the movie now either, we had something far more interesting sitting one row behind us, and they had our complete attention. Having no idea what was going on in the movie any more, I leaned over to Alice who still had Jasper whispering in her ear.

"I'm going to pee, I have no idea what's going on in the movie any way." Alice snickered at my comment.

"Paying attention to something other than the movie are you?" She teased.

"Go back to whispering with Jasper...you know you want to kiss him...too bad you can't..." I shot back before I stood up. She stuck out her tongue as I walked away.

I ran to the bathroom and glanced in the mirror as I washed my hands and sighed. Had I known we would be seeing Edward, I definitely would have worn something different.

Unfortunately, I was just in a pair of jeans and a t shirt, nothing spectacular. I ran my fingers through my hair quickly to try and make minimal improvements to it. I threw on a fresh coat of lip gloss as Rose stormed into the bathroom.

She paused at my primping and smiled. "Prettying ourself up are we?" She asked as she opened her purse on the counter and began fixing her hair as well.

"What are you doing in here Rose?" I asked trying to change the subject.

"Same thing as you, hiding and beautifying." She leaned back against the sink and sighed. I put an understanding hand on her shoulder and mumbled "I know, trust me Rose, I know. A little scary isn't it?" We put the finishing touches on our faces and headed back to the movie.

When we opened the doors to theater 12 we stopped dead in our tracks. Edward and Emmett were leaning up against the wall in the dimly lit hallway, smiling at us. I took a deep breath to try and keep from blushing but failed terribly. Edward chuckled and waved us over to where they were standing.

"Hey" I said casually.

"Hey. So I take it you are not enjoying the movie. Too scary for you?" A teasing grin spread across his face.

I looked over at Rose and laughed "Something like that, yeah."

"So what are you ladies doing after the movie?" Emmett asked trying to sound casual, but failing miserably. I laughed, Edward just rolled his eyes.

"We were going to go get something to eat." Rose answered quickly "What about you?"

A huge grin broke out on Emmett's face "What a coincidence, we were going to get something to eat too. Would you ladies like to join us?"

I had a feeling we could have said we were getting pedicures and Emmett would have insisted that was what they were going to do too. I could see in his face just how much he wanted to spend time with Rosalie.

"That would be fine with me, but Rose, we better check with Alice and see..." I said hesitantly.

As I said that, the movie must have ended and a mob of people started crowding the hallway we were currently standing in, trying to pass around us to get to the exit. I felt Edward grab my hand to keep track of me in the crowd. I also felt his body press against mine as we navigated through the narrow space. Breathe Bella, breathe. I said in my head.

I lost Rosalie and Emmett in the crowd, but Edward saw them standing over in a corner and waved. I looked back over my shoulder, trying to find Alice and Jasper, who should be exiting the theater any minute, but couldn't find them. Edward continued to lead me over to Rose and Emmett, my hand tightly clutched in his.

"Did you two see Alice yet?" I asked. Instead of answering me, Rose was looking down at my hand that was still entwined with Edward's and smiling. Suddenly self conscious, I slid my hand out of Edward's grasp and glared back at Rose.

"Don't look for them anytime soon. Jasper has this thing for staying until the very last

credit rolls, something about acknowledging the hard work of everyone involved in the film making process...I don't get it, all I know is he's the last guy out every time." Emmett laughed.

While we stood there waiting, Emmett nonchalantly slipped his arm around Rosalie's shoulders which caused a small grin to cross her face. When she saw me looking at her cozied up to Emmett, she scowled at me, and shrugged off his arm.

The door to theater 12 opened one final time, and out came Jasper with a very chipper Alice perched on his back getting a piggy back ride. I looked at Rose and she looked at me and we burst out laughing. "Is that against any of the rules?" I asked between laughs.

"Unfortunately I don't think so..." Rose chuckled.

"Damn. Thought we had her for a second.."

"What are you two talking about?" Edward asked as he and Emmett exchanged a confused look between them.

"We'll tell you about it at dinner, right Rosalie?" Rose nodded her head in agreement.

"You don't want to check with Alice anymore?" Edward asked pointing over in her direction.

"No, she doesn't get to decide this one." I grabbed Edward's hand this time and led him over to Alice and Jasper who were laughing at a poster of a coming attraction.

"Hey there lovebirds, are you guys ready to go?" I asked giving Alice a smirk. She immediately hopped off Jasper's back and put her hands on her hips.

"Where are we going?" She asked with a suspicious tone to her voice.

"We are going to get some food and guess what, so are the guys! What a coincidence." I said with over exaggerated surprise. Alice shook her head side to side.

"I know you two desperately want to go get food..."

"There is nothing 'desperate' about the need for sustenance. Why don't you just cling back onto Jasper and we'll head to the car. I think a good table is hard to get for six people" Rosalie sneered. She raised her eyebrow daring Alice to say no to her request, but even Alice knew to back off when Rosalie was this adamant about something.

"Fine. Where are we meeting?" Alice asked. I looked at Rosalie in confusion we hadn't got that far yet.

The first restaurant that I could think of, popped out of my mouth. "Mi Casa."

Alice looked confused "We're going back to your house? Are you cooking?" I shook my head slowly.

"No Alice, that Mexican place on third, with the 'Margaritas by the Yard' remember?" She actually may not remember, she did get pretty drunk last time, so did Rose...all part of my plan.

"OOHH I love that place yeah, let's go there!" She held out her arms to Jasper who slung her over his back and headed for the doors.

I felt Edward lean closer and say "Would you like me to carry you to the car too?"

I bent my finger for him to come closer "You wish!" I teased as I let go of his hand and ran for the door.

Thanks for all the reviews guys, you are awesome. I'm glad you are enjoying the story, hope you liked this chapter:) Review please!!

Chapter: 10

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

I dedicate this chapter to Wifey and girls – because her husband's ring tone inspired me;) and to the food snob for her help with choosing the ring tones. If you do NOT know any of the songs...go to iTunes and listen to them...it makes the whole thing funnier!!! I put a new poll up if you are interested...

RINGTONE

BPOV

"Can we get a pitcher of Margaritas on the rocks, with 4 salted glasses, and two yards of margaritas for my friends please?" I asked, as the waitress came over for our drink order.

"Wait!" Alice squealed "I am not having one of those yard thingies...I remember what happened last time Bella, thank you very much. Nice try...Rose, you don't want one either." She looked up at the waitress. "Just bring 6 glasses please." Darn you Alice...so what if last time you made out with the waiter? And Rose made out with that guy at the table next to us...

Edward was sitting to my left at the huge circular table, scouring the menu. Before the server walked away, he ordered an appetizer "Also, can we get some chicken nachos too please?" He asked politely. The waitress nodded her head, as she jotted it in her notebook. He leaned over to me, smiled and said "I thought you should try some real nachos for a change, without the molten cheese from a can." Before I could make a snappy comeback, we were interrupted.

"How do you want me to do the check?" the waitress asked as she looked at all of us.

"One check please." Edward answered. Of course, we had something to say about that.

"No, no, no. We need to split it, just take the whole thing and at the end split it in half." Rosalie insisted. The waitress nodded and walked away.

"Just let us pick up the check, after all we are crashing your diner. It's the least we can do." Emmett tried to argue, but Rose shook her head no.

"Thanks for the offer guys, but if you paid then this could be considered a 'date' and we can't have that now can we ladies?" Alice said as she glared at us.

Edward turned to me, "So at the gym when you said you weren't dating until 2008 you were serious?" He asked in amazement. I looked at him and blushed as I nodded my head yes. "Did all three of you agree to that?" He asked.

Emmett quickly looked at Rosalie who was nodding her head, along with Alice. "Care to share the details?" Jasper said to Alice.

"Well, we had been going on dates with total losers, especially Bella, but that's a totally different story. Anyway, we decided no dates until 2008, made a few ground rules, and put some money on it." Alice said as she munched on some chips and salsa.

"So what are these 'rules'?" Emmett asked Rosalie suspiciously. I could tell he wasn't excited at the prospect of rules.

"Well, no dating obviously, no tongue kissing" Emmett smacked his hand down on the table and gave Edward a 'you've got to be kidding me' look. Rosalie giggled and continued. "No sex, of any kind, if you wouldn't want to see your parents do it, it counts as sex. Then we each pitched \$200 into the pot to be spent on a gorgeous pair of shoes by the winner."

Shoes or Sex, shoes or sex...which did I value more? Maybe I need to be more specific Shoes or Sex with Edward, shoes or sex with Edward...of course that is assuming Edward actually wants to have sex with me... the argument raged in my head. I made the mistake of glancing over at Edward, whose smoldering eyes were still looking at me, making my heart flutter out of control.

"\$600 for one pair of shoes? Are you serious?" Emmett boomed "That's crazy."

"No that's not, that's a fabulous pair of shoes to be worn on her first date of the new year." Rosalie said with deep desire. "I'd do just about anything for a great pair of shoes..." She mumbled as she put her margarita glass to her lips. I let out a big laugh at her comment, while Emmett's mouth hung open slightly.

"She's totally serious too you know." I whispered to Edward. His green eyes at times were too much for my heart. I nervously grabbed my margarita that the waitress had thankfully dropped off at the table and took a big sip.

I felt Edward's arm go around my back and rest on my chair. He came closer and put his lips right up to my ear, barely grazing my earlobe "And what would you do Bella, for a great pair of shoes?" I think my heart may have actually stopped in that moment.

I was one margarita away from saying screw the shoes, but instead, I chose sarcasm to hide my true feelings "Wouldn't you like to know." I whispered as I looked up at him through my eyelashes. Another one of those sexy, crooked smiles came across his face which made me smile back.

Through the rest of dinner, Edward would occasionally brush his hand against my arm, or back, or leg as he adjusted his chair. Each time he touched me, I my heart would pound in my chest and my skin would feel on fire. At one point, I had to excuse myself to the restroom to catch my breath. Just being that close to him was driving me crazy.

Dinner was so much fun. Emmett was hilarious, and Jasper and Edward had a never ending supply of funny stories about him. Alice and Rose sucked down the margaritas and decided to share a few embarrassing tales about me.

"So Alice, tell me about some of the losers Bella has dated in the past that led to the Boycott." Edward asked a pretty tipsy Alice.

"Alice..." I gave her a fierce warning look, which she must have missed, while she was licking the salt from the rim of her margarita glass, causing Jasper to nearly faint.

"Oh Edward, you have no idea. Rosalie help me, there were so many losers...top five had to be...Oh I know, remember that guy who was the greeter at Walmart..."

"Wait a minute! I had no idea that's what he did for a living until AFTER our date...when I went to Walmart the next day and he handed me my cart. I changed my phone number that afternoon..." I admitted sheepishly. The boys were in tears.

"Don't forget the slew of insurance salesmen and the accountants...dull, dull dull, especially the one accountant that made you split the bill for the entire date with him down to the penny...including tax." Rose howled.

"I almost forgot about the mortician!!!! Bella do you remember that one? He took her out and asked if she wanted to go back to his place and it was a Funeral Home! Bella had nightmares for a week..." Of course Alice would mention Dead Fred... Emmett actually left the table he was laughing so hard, while Edward was leaning back in his chair with tears streaming down his face.

"My personal favorite was that poet guy Bella, remember him. The earthy one who was so 'natural' he wouldn't wear deodorant, eat meat or bathe every day to 'save the environment'. He gave us that lecture about how the wasting of the earth's finite resources is everyone's business. Tell Edward what kind of car Stinky Pete picked you up for the date in..." Rosalie teased.

"A hummer" I said quietly. "And for the record, his poetry sucked! Most of it was about a goldfish..."

Alice opened her mouth to start into more stories of my pitiful dating experiences when I decided to shut her up for good. "Alice do you want me to ask if Hector is working tonight?" Alice spat her margarita out of her mouth at the mention of his name. Rose immediately took the hint that I was done being the butt of the jokes, and quickly changed the subject. Alice however, scanned the restaurant to make sure she didn't see Hector anywhere.

We had hardly touched our food, which wasn't surprising considering how much were laughing and all that junk we ate at the movies. Our server brought over a bunch of boxes and presto, we had lunch for the following day. It was getting late, we were nearly the last people left in the restaurant, so we had to call it an evening.

"We should get a move on ladies." I said quietly as I paid our half of the bill over the boys protests.

"Wait..." I heard Edward say as he rummaged in his pocket for something. He pulled out his cell phone and placed it in my hand. "May I please have your phone number?"

I grabbed his cell phone and tossed him mine in return. I quickly programed my home and cell numbers and then, while he was arguing with Alice about how it wasn't against the rules at all to exchange phone numbers with a 'friend' in case of emergencies or a flat tire, I quickly set the perfect ring tone to go with my number, one that made me laugh and I hoped he would too.

I snapped the phone shut and handed it back to him "Here you go." He dropped my phone back into my purse and I looked at him suspiciously. "No pizza places right?"

"Depends if I'm interested in you or not. I only give my real number to girls I'm interested

in. I guess you'll just have to wait and see..." He smirked. I looked across the table and saw Emmett and Rosalie taking a picture together on her phone, no doubt to go with his phone number. Alice and Jasper had their heads together again, I couldn't help but think about what a cute couple they made.

"Ladies we are out of here!" I stood up and went to grab all the leftovers, but Edward beat me to it, carrying them instead. He held the door to the restaurant open for me as we stepped out into the crisp evening air, which made me shiver slightly.

I piled the leftovers in the trunk of the car before walking to the driver's side door. "Thanks for tagging along on our dinner. It was a lot of fun." I found myself smiling as I looked up at his incredibly perfect face. He slowly slipped his arms around my waist and pulled me closer to him. My stomach filled with butterflies like I was a teenager again.

"I had fun too. Will you do me a favor and call me when you get home so I know you made it in safely?" I opened my mouth to protest, but then he smiled and whispered "Please?"

All rational thought went out the window and I was left staring at him glassy eyed. Like an idiot, all I could do was nod my head yes, my eyes never leaving his gaze. I didn't even notice Alice and Rose were at the car until I heard "Let's roll Bella!" from Alice, as she slammed the back door to the car.

"Bye." I mumbled to Edward, as I left the warmth of his arms and climbed into the driver's seat. Before I closed the door, he stuck his head in and said "Drive safely please." And then he shut the door and headed to his waiting car.

I looked over at Rosalie before I even put my key in the ignition and said. "Oh. My. God!"

Rosalie clapped her hands together "See Bella, isn't it fun to hang out with a guy that isn't as dull as dishwater?"

We got home in record time. Before the door was all the way open, Alice ordered "Couch-ten minutes!" and then took off for her room. I went to my room, and quickly changed into my pajamas and was the first one at the couch. As I waited for the girls, I remembered that I had promised to call Edward.

I ran over to the counter and picked up my cell phone. Scrolling through the contacts, I found the entry for 'EDWARD MASON'. He listed his cell phone, home phone, work phone and somehow threw in the number for Mama Rosa's under 'other' which made me laugh.

Not knowing if he was home yet, I decided to just call his cell phone. It rang three times, and then I heard laughter followed by a "Hello?"

"Do you like my ring tone?" I asked, assuming that was the source of his laughter.

He chuckled "Yeah, it's perfect, thanks! I really like Pink you know..."

"I thought it was appropriate with your bet and all..." I teased. Alice had walked into the family room now and was staring at me on the phone, grinning from ear to ear.

"I take it you made it home in one piece?"

"Yes, we did."

"Good. So what are you doing right now?"

"Alice has called a meeting on the couch so I assume we will be gossiping about these three hot guys we had dinner with tonight if that 's OK?" Alice yelled from her corner of the couch "Hi Edward!"

"Tell Alice hello. You girls have fun, gossip away."

"Ok, thanks Edward. Sweet dreams."

"I'm sure they will be, tonight. Goodnight Bella. I'll talk to you soon."

I didn't want to look up at either of them because I knew that I was grinning from ear to ear. "Edward said hi Alice."

"And..." I heard Rosalie say waiting for more of the details from our brief conversation.

"And, nothing. He asked me to call him so he knew we made it home in one piece. That's it." I answered her question quickly, as I set my phone back on the counter.

"So what did you make your ring tone?" Alice asked with a sly smile.

"'U + UR hand' by Pink" The room was filled with giggles. I turned to Rosalie who had been messing extensively with Emmett's phone. "Rose what did you make yours on Emmett's phone? I saw you smiling..."

"'I Touch Myself' by the Divinyls" I almost fell off the couch laughing when she said it. Emmett would surely have a heart attack.

"Did you tell him?" I gasped out between laughs.

"Nope. Alice, did you put one in Jaspers?"

"'You Drive me Crazy' by Britney Spears." Alice said still giggling. " I can't wait to see what they put in our phones... No peeking, wait until they call, deal?" Rosalie and I nodded out heads in agreement between fits of laughter.

"Ok girls, we need to have a conference. I want to take a scientific poll. Cover your eyes please." Alice began her little speech. Rose and I were slightly confused, but covered our eyes none the less. Alice, I assumed, covered her eyes as well.

"Who is considering bailing out of the bet right now, raise your hand and keep it up until I say drop it." I went back to my debate from earlier... shoes or dating Edward, shoes or kissing Edward, and then finally, shoes or the remotest chance of sex with Edward...there really wasn't a question, my hand went up immediately. I had actually been planning on telling them I was forfeiting the bet tonight.

Curious to see what they were thinking, I peeked between my fingers only to see Alice and Rose both had their hands high in the air and they too were peeking to see the results of Alice's poll. I immediately dropped my hand, "Well now what do we do?" I asked.

Alice got a devilish smile across her face "I was afraid of this... that means there is only one thing to do, we up the ante, ladies!"

"What?" Rose shrieked. I could tell she was counting on this whole bet going away by tomorrow or at least being able to bail.

"Define up the ante Alice..." Experience had taught me Alice's mind worked in strange ways...sinister ways.

"To make sure we stick to our bet we need to put in more money, double the bet."

"Another \$200? Are you serious?" I asked in amazement.

"Totally serious. Look, these guys are great...don't get me wrong, I like Jasper a lot. A lot more than I want to admit, but I think we should all take it slow to make sure. Upping the bet will do that."

"If you make us up the ante, I want something in return." Rose spoke up. "A renegotiation of one of the rules, if you will."

"You can't have sex Rose." Alice said bluntly.

"I know that idiot, but if I am putting \$400 on the line, I want to make sure he is worth it...I want one kiss. A real kiss, tongue and all that is allowed. I'm not losing my money for some guy who kisses like a wet fish. And a few pecks on the lips within the current rules won't tell me squat!" The best part of her argument, was that she was totally serious. If Emmett couldn't curl her toes with a kiss, he was out.

Alice pondered the proposal for a long time and then a wicked grin came over her face. "Fine Rosalie, I accept your renegotiation. My condition is, a 'kiss and tell' clause. After each of us gets our 'kiss' we have to share all the gory details, do we have a deal?"

Alice was the first to put her hand out, followed by Rosalie and finally me.

"I'm glad we got that settled ladies. I'm going on line to look for a fabulous dress to go with the shoes I'm soooo going to win." Alice said with confidence.

Right as she turned for the computer, her cell phone started ringing on the table. When she heard the song that came on as the ring tone, her face turned bright red and she flew over to answer it.

"Hello?" she said quietly and then I heard her sigh "Hi Jazz..." as she closed her bedroom door.

Rose and I broke into hysterics. "Did you hear what he made his ring tone?? Was that what I think it was?" Rosalie asked in between laughs.

"Boyz II Men... I thought she was going to die on the spot. I bet she's kicking herself for upping the bet now." I barely squeaked out before I shoved a pillow over my face to hide my laughter.

EPOV

I quickly programmed my numbers into Bella's cell phone after winning the argument with Alice. I wanted to make her smile when I called, so I tried to find the perfect song to set with my number. I decided to use the one song that would forever make me think of Bella and programmed it in. I dropped the phone back into her purse as she handed me mine back.

She had the most adorable look of suspicion on her face “No pizza places right?” She asked. I held back the urge to laugh out loud. I decided to give her a taste of her own medicine.

“Depends if I'm interested in you or not. I only give my real number to girls I'm interested in. I guess you'll just have to wait and see...” I smirked when I saw she was getting irritated. God, she's cute when she's annoyed...

Bella announced “Ladies we are out of here!” and went to grab all of the leftovers, but I beat her to them and carried the huge pile of boxes out to her car for her. It was much cooler outside now, I saw Bella shiver as she closed the trunk. Emmett and Rosalie were still huddled together by the restaurant, as were Jasper and Alice.

I walked with her to the driver's side door, when she turned around and smiled up at me with her amazing brown eyes. “Thanks for tagging along on our dinner. It was a lot of fun.” Her whole face lit up when she smiled which took my breath away.

I knew I only had a few seconds until everyone else came back. Instinctively, my arms slowly snaked around her waist and I pulled her close to me. She felt so soft and warm again, I never wanted to let her go. It just felt right having her in my arms, a perfect fit.

“I had fun too. Will you do me a favor and call me when you get home so I know you made it in safely?” She tried to protest, just as I expected, but I had to know she was safe or I'd be worried all night. I smiled and gently asked “Please?”

Without a word, she nodded her head and I smiled, knowing I would get to talk to her one more time tonight. We stood there looking into each other's eyes, losing all track of time, until I heard Alice say “Let's roll Bella!”

“Bye.” Bella's sweet voice said as I felt her pull away from me. I resisted the urge to tighten my grip and never let her leave my arms. Instead, I stuck my head in the car before she closed the door. “Drive safely please.” My face was inches away from hers and it took all my strength to not kiss her right then and there. I knew she had her ridiculous Boycott, rules and \$200 on the line. As I walked over to my car where Emmett and Jasper were waiting, I decided right then that I would have to find a way to get around some of those rules...

“Dude we are freezing! Are you done cozying up to Bella?” Emmett growled as I unlocked the doors to the car.

“Your just mad because you found out tonight you can't dazzle Rosalie with your legendary 'kissing skills' like you were planning.” I shot back.

Jasper patted Emmett on the back. “The lips will have to wait...You may actually have to rely on your personality to get the girl this time rather than your, kissing prowess!”

“I can be just as charming as you Jasper, so shut it! You and Alice looked pretty cozy over at your end of the table. One more margarita, and she probably would have crawled into your lap Jazz... OUCH!”

“Watch it Emmett!” Jasper growled. I glanced over at Emmett and we both looked surprised by Jasper's reaction, which of course set Emmett off into hysterics.

“Jasper LOVES Alice, Jasper LOVES Alice” Again, Emmett got whacked.

"There is an easy way to see how much you like her...Jasper, what did you set as your ring tone on Alice's phone?" I asked glancing back at him in the rear view mirror. He looked very embarrassed and didn't speak. Emmett picked up on it and whipped around in his seat.

"Jasper! What's the song?" Emmett demanded, but he kept his mouth shut, unwilling to share.

"You know we will find out..." I laughed. "And it will be ten times worse."

"I'll wait then, a stay of execution!" Jasper joked. It must be good for him to not give it up... I thought. Emmett was thinking the same thing, by the raised eyebrow on his face.

I pulled in front of their apartment "Last chance to confess Jasper.."

"None of your business Edward." And he slammed the door behind him. Emmett turned to me "If you find out from Bella, you HAVE to tell me, and if I find out, I'll give you a call. What do you think it could be?"

"I'm a little afraid to know now. See you tomorrow!" Emmett gave the roof of my car a tap as I drove away, back to my apartment. On the way home, I nervously glanced at my cell phone to make sure I hadn't missed Bella's call.

I had put my keys and phone on the table and walked over to flip on the TV when I heard my phone vibrate on the table. The tune of Pink's 'U+UR Hand' played loudly, making me burst out laughing. It had to be her, no one else is that clever...

Sure enough, the display read 'Bella Swan'. I was still chuckling when I answered. "Hello?"

Her sweet voice filled my ear "Do you like my ring tone?" I could imagine her smile as she spoke.

"Yeah, it's perfect, thanks! I really like Pink you know..."

"I thought it was appropriate with your bet and all..." she teased. Not to mention yours...

"I take it you made it home in one piece?"

"Yes, we did."

"Good. So what are you doing right now?" Maybe I could talk to her a little bit before I went to bed.

"Alice has called a meeting on the couch so I assume we will be gossiping about these three hot guys we had dinner with tonight if that's OK?" Well, Emmett will be happy to know they are talking about us, I'll have to remember to tell him and Jasper tomorrow.

Of course, this also meant any chance of talking to Bella was out, especially when I heard another voice on the phone "Hi Edward!" Alice. I knew I had to let her go back to her friends, even if I didn't want her to.

"Tell Alice hello. You girls have fun, gossip away."

"Ok, thanks Edward. Sweet dreams." She made a little sigh as she said sweet dreams that made me smile, I had a feeling she would be thinking about me tonight.

"I'm sure they will be, tonight. Goodnight Bella. I'll talk to you soon." When I hung up the phone, I knew she would be on my mind until I spoke to her again.

With no reason to stay up now, I quickly changed my clothes and crawled into my bed. I put my phone on my nightstand next to a glass of water. Just in case she calls or needs something... I thought to myself. I drifted off to sleep, with dreams of the beautiful Bella Swan in my head.

The entire night, I had dreamt of her. When I finally woke up, the sound of her laughter was still ringing in my ears. I glanced over at my clock, it was 9:30. Not too early I convinced myself. God Emmett will give me hell for calling her first thing this morning if he finds out. I thought, but I just didn't care. I had to hear her voice. I picked up the phone off the nightstand and rolled back onto my bed. Under contacts, I found her cell and pressed talk. I couldn't help but smile as I waited to hear the voice I had dreamt about all night.

BPOV

My peaceful nights sleep was disturbed as usual, by a shrieking Alice "Bella!" she screamed as she flung herself onto my bed, clutching my cell phone that was playing Hot in Herre by Nelly.

"Thanks Alice. Is that to remind me of the ass I made of myself with Edward the other night?" I asked as I stretched.

"No you idiot! It's Edward on the phone! He made that his ring tone" She chuckled the phone at me. "Answer it!!!" She was bouncing up and down on the bed with excitement.

I took the phone and checked the caller ID myself "EDWARD MASON" in big bold letters....I'm not dreaming.

"Hello?" I said as my heart pounded in my chest. What a way to wake up in the morning!

"Good Morning Bella! Did I wake you up?" His silky voice asked.

"No, technically Alice woke me up with her screaming, nice ring tone by the way."

"It just recently became my favorite song." He stressed the word recently and my cheeks turned red.

"Recently huh?" Alice, noticing my embarrassment, threw herself at me, trying to get close enough to hear what Edward was saying.

"Edward hang on a second, I need to take care of Alice." I put the phone down on the bed "Alice Brandon, did I bother you last night when Jazz called, no! Leave, or I'm going on ebay and find an old Boyz II Men shirt and I will wear it every time you are anywhere near him! Get out!!" Alice stomped out of the room.

"Bye Edward, watch it, Bella is NOT a morning person" She shouted on her way out. I took a deep breath and picked the phone back up.

"Sorry about that, and for the record, I am a morning person, when I am woke up the right way that is." All I heard was laughter on the other end of the phone. "Glad I could amuse you this morning Edward." I said slightly annoyed.

"I'm sorry Bella, that was too funny." he pulled himself together "So why are you going to buy used clothes on ebay?" He said with great curiosity.

"Oh, nothing, Jasper called last night and when Alice heard the ring tone he used, she almost burst into flames on the spot!" I giggled just remembering her face.

"You have to tell me what he used. Emmett and I asked him last night and he refused to tell us. Hold on, let me get Emmett in on this, give me a second to set up the 3 way call ok?" I heard him click over and then he came back. I heard the phone ringing at Emmett's apartment.

"God damn it Edward...Do you know what time it is and more importantly, do you have any idea what Rosalie and I were just doing in my dream?" Emmett groaned into the phone.

"Good morning Emmett" I said sweetly into the phone.

"Who is this, and why are you calling from Edward's phone?"

"It's Bella you dork! And I am so telling Rose what you just said."

"Oh Hi Bella, you gave me a heart attack. Where's Edward?" he asked suspiciously.

"Right here, 3 way call Emmett. Bella has some info you might like to hear, about a certain someone's ring tone."

"No way! Bella, did Jasper call Alice?? What is the song, we have to know, he wouldn't spill."

I didn't know where Alice was, so I decided to whisper "Well, he called last night and his ring tone was Boyz II Men...I'll Make Love to You." I had to move the phone far away from my ear because of the volume at which they were laughing.

"He did not!" I heard Edward wail.

"He is such a sap!" Emmett boomed.

Rosalie stuck her head in my room just then, to find out why Alice was in the family room swearing, when I put the boys on speaker phone and whispered in her ear what just happened. When they finally started quieting down, she pulled out her cell phone and started dialing Emmett's cell.

"So Emmett, have you talked to Rosalie yet?" All of the sudden the song started playing in the background I don't want anybody else. When I think about you I touch myself...

"Emmett, do you need a moment alone?" Edward asked, laughing again.

"No way..." I heard Emmett say like the wind had been knocked out of him. "Damn she is one hot...Hello?"

Behind me I heard Rose wishing Emmett a good morning.

"Who is he talking to?" Edward asked

"Rose. That was her ring tone!"

"Um, guys, hey...I gotta go, I got a call on my cell I need to take. I'll catch you later!" And with that Emmett hung up.

"Can you tell her to call him about every hour, that should send him right over the edge. It might just help you win those shoes."

I was distracted from Edward when I heard part of the conversation Rosalie was having with Emmett. "EEEEWWW. Rose get out of here if you're going to do that! And at this hour of the morning..."

"What was she doing?" Edward asked with great interest.

"I think she took Emmett's ring tone too serious last night." I laughed.

"He called her last night?"

"Yep. Right after Jasper called Alice."

"And what is his ring tone? Is it as bad as Jasper's?" he asked cautiously.

"Talk Dirty to Me"

We laughed for a few minutes before Edward calmed himself and could speak clearly. "Thank you Bella."

"For what?"

"For making me laugh my ass off before 10am. I don't think that has ever happened before. So what are your plans for today?"

"Not much, Alice will probably drag us to the mall and then tonight we are having a movie night, watch a bunch of girl movies and eat ice cream. A real, female bonding day. How about you, do you guys have to work?"

"Yes, unfortunately." He sounded genuinely disappointed.

"Well, just make sure you stay close to Vicki and let her swat the hell out of the bar flies tonight OK?" I teased.

"Don't worry, I'll keep her by my side all night." He chuckled.

"Good."

"I should probably get going." I could hear him climbing out of bed. Wow, he really was in bed this whole time..

"Will you do me a favor?" I asked shyly.

"Anything for you Bella." His voice was low and mesmerizing.

"Keep your phone on you tonight, just in case... I want to say Hi. OK?" I almost whispered.

"I promise. And Bella?"

“Yes?”

“I’ll miss you too.”

I picked up my pillow, pressed my face tightly to it, and screamed. I am so going to lose this bet...

There you go! Please review and check out the poll ;)

Chapter: 11

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

New poll up now!

Cocktails

BPOV

Our afternoon trip to the mall was an adventure to say the least. Alice led us through store after store in search of the 'perfect outfit' for the next time we saw the guys again. We stood in countless dressing rooms, trying on more outfits than I cared to remember in our never ending quest.

The stress of finding clothes was often relieved by fits of laughter caused by a ringing phone, or in our cases, a singing phone. Furious laughter broke out across the ladies dressing room at Nordstrom's when I'll Make Love to You started playing for all to hear until Alice scrambled to her phone. Of course, that was nothing compared to the whistles that the girls in the dressing room made when Talk Dirty to Me blared out of Rosalie's dressing room.

I managed to find quite a few things I liked, and didn't have to argue with Alice nearly as much as I normally would have. We came home to our apartment with an armful of packages, ready for movie night to begin. I went to my room, put away all my new clothes, and changed into sweats for the evening's fun.

Rose and I made spaghetti, salad, and garlic bread for dinner, while Alice ran out to rent the movies for the evening. I was busy draining the pasta, when I heard the door crash into the wall. Alice was grinning from ear to ear, clutching a movie box in her hand.

"What did you get smiley?" Rosalie teased.

Alice ran into the kitchen and thrust the box at our faces. Immediately, I started laughing.

"Cocktail? You got Cocktail? The bartender movie...I wonder what or who could have inspired that choice?" I laughed.

Over dinner and a bottle of wine, we spent the hour discussing the boys and our dream shoes if we each were to win the bet. Both Alice and Rosalie seemed much more confident than I was, that they would be the last woman standing. I tried to fake confidence, however I knew in my heart, I was taking it day, by day...trying to focus on the prize, which I often had to remind myself were the shoes, not Edward.

When the last dish was put into the dishwasher and the last sip of wine had been drunk, Alice squealed and ran over to set up the movie. Rosalie opened another bottle of wine and poured each of us a healthy glass before we plopped ourselves on the couch for the evening's festivities.

The movie began and we found ourselves giggling along with the somewhat bizarre plot.

Rosalie and Alice began giving their critique of the actors.

"Emmett is much hotter than Tom Cruise." Rosalie gloated "I mean come on, that guy is skin and bones. Does he even have any muscles at all?"

"And who's that old guy with Tom Cruise? Does anyone think he's sexy?" Alice scoffed at the poor actor having to play Tom Cruise's sidekick. I had to admit he did leave a bit to be desired...

While the plot was, at best, lame, when the bar scenes came on we all got very quiet, each of us lost in our own personal fantasies about the guys dancing around behind the bar at the Downunder, looking unbelievably hot, while we admired them from our seats. We had cracked open our third bottle of wine as the next bar scene came on, with bottles and glasses flying through the air. Alice started laughing.

"I wonder if the boys can do that?"

I reached into my pocket and pulled out my cell phone giggling "Let's find out." I quickly dialed Edward, knowing he promised to keep his phone with him at work. Alice and Rosalie paused the movie and waited for him to pick up.

"Hello?"

"Hi Edward."

"Hi beautiful." He responded.

"Are you talking to me or some girl at the bar?" I giggled

"Of course I'm talking to you Bella! Don't be absurd. Hang on a minute, I can't hear anything, this new DJ likes to play his music at a deafening level." I heard him put the phone down and yell something to Emmett who was yelling back. Then it got very quiet and I heard a door close.

"Ok, I'm back. So do you miss me already?" He teased in a sultry voice. I blushed pink and Alice and Rose started laughing, breaking me out of my little trance.

"Yes, I do but that's not why I called. So listen, the girls and I were watching this movie...you may have heard of it...Cocktail?"

He started howling with laughter "The hippie hippie shake? Yes, I know the movie. So what do you want to know? I think I can guess, but I want you hear you say it..."

"We want to know if you guys can do all those cool tricks they did in the movie?"

"Yes."

"You can? Holy crap!" I'm sure he could hear the awe in my voice, but I didn't care. My mind was running wild, with visions of Edward dancing around behind the bar...

His low chuckle made my heart race. "Would you like us to show you?"

"Girls, Edward said they can do it, and he wants to know if we would like them to show us..." I held the phone out so Edward could get the full effect as they let out the most

girlie screams ever.

"Does that answer your question?" I laughed.

"Ok, but you know we don't perform for free. It will cost you..." He said mysteriously.

"Wait, let me put you on speaker for this," I clicked the button and Alice and Rosalie started saying Hello to Edward and laughing hysterically.

"Ladies are you drunk by any chance?" Edward asked suspicious of all the insane laughter.

"Yes, no ...well probably." I stammered. He said something under his breath that I swear sounded like 'Perfect' but I couldn't be sure.

"Ok, so listen, Emmett, Jasper and I are quite talented at bar tricks and we would be willing to do a little performance for you, but it I mentioned to Bella we don't work for free, so it will cost you. I have to talk to them and I'll get back to you with our price."

"Fair enough." Alice giggled as she tried to juggle some plastic cups like in the movie. I laughed and took Edward off speaker.

"Hello again." I sighed into the phone.

"Hello. Are you girls having a good evening?"

"Yes we are. So has Vicki been busy this evening in her swatting duties?" I teased.

"I have no idea, I decided to just ignore them all, but I think she did go after a girl who was leaning over the bar at Emmett a bit too much for her liking."

"Good, Rosalie will be happy. Sorry we kept you on the phone so long, I better let you go..." Even though I really wanted to talk to him for another hour... or ten.

"Yeah, I better go. Emmett is already going to give me hell because I had my phone on me in case you called." His laughter sounded beautiful, actually every sound from his mouth seemed to be beautiful to me these days.

"Will you call me when you get home?" I asked

"Bella, it will be really late, I have to close tonight and you'll be asleep."

"Please, I don't care. I just want... to know you made it home in one piece." I used his own words from the other night back on him, and he laughed.

"Fair enough, I'll give you a call to say goodnight, how's that?" The sweetness of his words made my head spin.

"Perfect. Bye Edward."

"Bye Beautiful."

I hung up the phone and found Rosalie and Alice smiling down at me.

"What?"

"You do know that whenever you are talking to him, you get the biggest smile on your face right?" Alice teased. I felt my cheeks go red as she leaned over and gave me a big hug. "I'm happy for you Bella."

"Thanks."

After a few more hours of painting nails and movies, it was time for bed.

A combination of too much wine and the late hour, made it impossible to keep my eyes open any longer. Both Alice and Rosalie had gotten calls from the guys so they were on cloud nine by the time we went to bed. I gave the girls a hug and stumbled into my bedroom. I changed into pajamas, grabbed my cell phone and crawled under the covers. I heard the clanks of the wine bottles being thrown in the trashcan and then Alice and Rosalie's bedroom doors close. Smiling, I drifted off to sleep, waiting for Edward to visit me in my dreams.

I was in the middle of a great dream, Edward was driving me somewhere and we were laughing and holding hands. He turned on the radio and I heard 'It's getting Hot in Herre so take off all your clothes...' I immediately woke myself up and reached for my phone.

"Edward?" I whispered in my raspy voice as I glanced at the clock. 4 a.m. it read.

"I told you that you'd be asleep." He laughed.

"I don't care, I just wanted to hear your sexy voice. So shoot me." I sighed. Did I just sat that out loud, great...I heard the springs squeak on the other end of the phone as he crawled into bed, laughing.

"Go to sleep Bella, I'll see you sooner than you think." He whispered into the phone.

"Goodnight Edward."

"Goodnight Bella."

The next morning I wandered out of bed sometime around lunch. My head was pounding and I had no desire to eat. Alice and Rosalie must have recently woke up as well, because they were both having a cup of coffee.

"Good morning ladies, do we all feel like shit this morning?" I mumbled as I joined them at the table, snagging a piece of toast off Alice's plate.

"Total and complete shit." Rose mumbled, pushing her bowl of cereal away. "By the way Bella, you were sleep talking again, well, more like sleep yelling this time."

"Sorry, what was it, my shopping list, the receipe for chocolate chip cookies, or another conversation with Renee." I bit into the toast, hoping it would make me feel better.

"Um, no...it was mostly..." Alice shot Rosalie a smirk across the table.

"Mostly what?" I was confused now. Usually my ramblings made no sense.

"Edwards name." They both burst into laughter. My face turned bright red and just when I thought I couldn't feel and more nauseous...

"What exactly did I say?" Racking my brain trying to remember my dream from last night.

"His name, a lot...and loud. If I didn't know any better I might have assumed...he was maybe...in there with you..." Rose squeaked out.

"I'm going to my room to die now...I'll be drowning myself in the shower, washing the embarrassment and humiliation away. It might take a few days...I'll see you then." I got up from the table, leaving them and their laughter, as I slammed the door to my bedroom. Safely inside the bathroom, I started the shower, turning the water as hot as I could get it. While I waited for it to get warm enough to climb in, I went back to grab my new bottle of conditioner that was sitting on my dresser. That's when I heard my cell phone beep.

I ran over to my bed and dug around to find it, all twisted up in the sheets from last night. There was a new text message:

Exercise is a great way to get over a hangover. - E

I quickly replied:

I will have to try that, thanks. - B

Suddenly, instead of being nauseous, my stomach was filled with butterflies. I was going to get to see Edward today. It seemed like a lot longer than one day since I had seen him, but I missed him more than I could have believed possible.

I grabbed the conditioner, jumped in the shower and quickly scrubbed my hair and body into a lather. I didn't know exactly when he was going to then gym, but I figured it had to be soon, so I hurried through my shower and got dressed into the cutest workout clothes I owned.

When I walked out of my bedroom, Rose was sitting on the couch, and to my surprise, also dressed for the gym. I raised an eyebrow at her suspiciously, Rose hardly ever went to the gym, she was blessed with amazing genetics. Her pleading look told me to just go with whatever she said and not draw attention to her sudden interest in working out.

"You two going to the gym?" Alice asked when she came out of her room a minute later.

"Yeah, there's a new kick boxing class I told Rose about and she wants to go check it out. Besides, I looked on line and working out is a great way to work the toxins out of the system. Do you want to come with us Alice?" I asked casually. Rose sent me a panicked look, but I knew we had about as much chance of Alice coming with us as we had of pigs flying

"No thanks, you to go sweat away your hangovers. I will shop my toxins away. It's almost Christmas and I have a ton left to buy." Alice was flipping through the ads in the newspapers looking for gift ideas. Rose looked at me and winked.

"Ok, then we'll see you later Alice." I tossed my phone in my gym bag, grabbed my keys and we headed out the door.

I glanced at Rosalie as she drove, with a big smile on her face. "So I take it you got a text message too?"

She nodded her head "When I was in the shower. I was sitting on the couch trying to figure out how I was going to convince Alice I wanted to go to the gym when you came out, all dressed."

"So we aren't breaking any rules are we?" I asked hesitantly.

"No way. We are going to the gym to workout, that is definitely not a date. And we will tell Alice we saw them there, if they even show up, no lies." I thought about it and had to agree, we were in no violation of any rule I could find so when we came home Alice couldn't complain.

We parked the car and went straight to the locker room, trying to be casual as we unsuccessfully scanned the gym for Edward and Emmett.

"Damn, they aren't here yet. Now I have to actually workout! I'm going to do that step aerobics class that just started, what are you going to do?" Rose asked as she grabbed her towel and water bottle.

"I'll go run a few miles on the treadmill. I have a lot of pent up... energy to get out of my system." I mumbled. Rose laughed and said she'd see me in 30 minutes when her class was over. I grabbed my stuff and went back to the treadmills I had used earlier in the week. I popped in my ear buds and cranked the music and started running.

About ten minutes into my run, I heard Emmett's booming laughter fill the gym and my already pounding heart started flying even faster in my chest. Don't look Bella, don't look, play it cool...I tried to tell myself, but I made the mistake of taking a sip of my water and glanced in the mirror to see a pair of green eyes looking at me from across the gym. His smile grew bigger when I gave him a little wave as I continued running. He held up one finger to tell me he'd be right back and then disappeared into the locker room.

Hope you liked it. Please review!

Chapter: 12

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

This one is for wait siriusly411 who made me laugh tonight...I dedicate SQUATS to you ;)

Squats

BPOV

I quickly checked myself out in the mirror. My cheeks were a little pink from running and I wasn't totally covered in sweat, which was a good thing. I turned the speed of the treadmill down a notch to make it easier to talk if he came over. My hands snatched the water bottle and I nervously took another sip, trying to calm myself before he came back. I had almost accomplished my task, when a booming voice said to my right "Bella, fancy meeting you here!"

"Hi Emmett. Yes, what a coincidence..." I said rolling my eyes at him. Emmett stood between my treadmill and the vacant one to my right. Edward hopped up on the empty one and stood there silently smirking, watching me run which caused my arms to break out in goosebumps. My face immediately got hot and I needed to distract myself.

Emmett looked around the gym. "So did you, um, come here alone?" He asked trying to sound casual.

"Why, no I didn't Emmett. It just so happens Rosalie joined me today. I was quite shocked actually, since she really despises getting sweaty...well this way." I teased. Emmett took a second to process what I said and then smiled wickedly.

"Well, where is your friend? I'd like to say hello."

"She's over in the classroom. They are doing some 'strip aerobics class' she was dying to take." I barely got the words out when Emmett flipped around and started sprinting over to the classroom window.

"There's no strip aerobics class here." Edward laughed.

"I know that, and you know that, but Emmett, he sure didn't." I glanced over my shoulder and saw him press his face against the glass and then look over at us with a confused look on his face, before shrugging and continuing to watch for a few minutes, clearly enjoying the view.

"So are you going to stand there and stare at me all day or are you going to run?" I asked Edward, praying he'd choose to run because his staring was starting to drive me crazy.

"Actually, I was enjoying the view from here, but if you insist, I suppose I could run today." He looked cluelessly at the buttons on the treadmill, making it obvious, he had never operated it before.

"Push the green one to start it...right there. Now run." I pointed to the top of the console. The machine hummed and Edward started jogging, much slower than I was.

"So you like to run?" He said trying to make small talk which was extremely difficult when you've been running for 15 minutes already.

"Yes, I like to work on my endurance and stamina. It comes in very handy you know." I gave him a flirty wink. Shame on you Bella, remember the boycott, and shoes Bella, shoes...

"I can definitely see where your...stamina training could come in handy." The seductive tone of his voice made me quiver inside. "However, weight training can also come in handy for when your task requires some, power, and often upper body strength." I am not having this conversation... not with this guy, in this gym...and oh wow, now he's getting sweaty...shoes, money, bragging rights, shoes, money, bragging rights.

There wasn't much I could say to that, so I just continued running, stealing a quick glance at Edward now and then when he wasn't paying attention. I looked briefly to the weights, and saw Emmett with two enormous dumbbells lifted over his head. Rosalie's class was due to finish up any minute and Edward seemed to be holding his own on the treadmill, but I could hear him starting to huff and puff.

I flipped off my machine and took a long drink of water before I climbed down. As soon as my treadmill stopped, I had heard Edward shut his off too. When I turned to look at him, he was doubled over, with his hands on his knees, trying to catch his breath.

"How was your run?" I asked as I patted him on the back.

"Fantastic, great, never better. And yours?" He said as he continued to gasp for air.

"Not bad. I stopped early because I didn't want that vein in your head to explode. Looks like you need to work on your stamina if you hope to keep up with me Edward." I teased as I headed over to refill my water bottle.

I chuckled as I saw Rosalie emerge from her class, and make a bee line for Emmett out of the corner of my eye. She was fluffing her hair, licking her lips, and sticking her chest out a little more than usual as she approached. Look out Emmett, she's a woman with a mission...I was laughing to myself when I felt two arms wrap around my waist.

I spun around to see Edward's perfect smile looking down at me.

"Now I've got you. Let's see your stamina get you away from my brute strength." He locked his wrists behind my back, pulled me close with a cocky smile on his face.

"You're assuming I want to leave." I said softly as I pressed my body tighter to his. Edward's eyes lit up with excitement as I gave him a coy smile. I felt his body relax as his hands moved to my hips, his eyes fixed on my lips. That's when I pushed him away.

"Nice brute strength you've got there Edward." I smirked. Edward gave me a playful smile and started walking straight for me. I took a few steps back and found myself pinned to the wall. I held my breath as he leaned in and whispered in my ear "Cheater..."

"A girl's gotta do, what a girl's gotta do. It was that, or my other choice was to knee you in the groin and scratch your eyes out like I learned in self defense class. I decided to take it easy on you this time." I laughed ducking under his arm which was trapping me against

the wall.

"Come on, I need to see if Rosalie is behaving herself. If not, my odds of winning the bet go up exponentially." I said happily. Edward laughed and followed me over to the bench where Rose sat, admiring a very sweaty Emmett, from a safe distance across the room.

"Hey Emmett." I said with a wave in his direction, as I sat down next to Rose. Edward went over and joined him while Rose and I sat, and took in the magnificent view before us. "Hey Rose..." I mumbled. "Hey Bella..."

"How long do you think we can just sit here and blatantly stare at them before they realize we're just plain ogling them?" I asked, somewhat distracted by Edward's now twisting torso.

"Not sure, but I do know, if he starts doing those squat things again, I need to leave the room." Rose admitted, fanning herself for dramatic effect. I could only nod my head in agreement. When the guys started doing pull ups, Rose and I had reached our limits of self control.

Rose reached over and grabbed my hand "Bella..." I laughed "I'm right with you Rose, just think Manolo Blahnick, Jimmy Choo... we can do this." We stood up and tried to casually wave goodbye to make a fast exit, but as soon as Emmett saw us get up, he waved us over.

"Hey guys, we are going to call it a day and hit the showers." I said quickly. Emmett smiled and took a step toward Rose, whispering something in her ear that made her blush. She bit her lip and shook her head no. I glanced at Edward who shrugged his shoulders, looking just as confused as I did.

"Thanks for suggesting the gym. I feel much better, I think I ran all the toxins out of my system." I said to Edward.

He ran his hand through his hair and laughed. "Good, I'm glad you feel better. And see we both accomplished something, you increased your stamina and I worked on my strength." My eyes aimlessly wandered over his arms and chest, taking in his glistening muscles exposed by his tank top.

"I...um.. see...them." I muttered somewhat incoherently. Edward reached out and took my hands in his.

"You can't tell anything about muscles by looking at them Bella, you really have to feel them to appreciate them." And before I knew what was happening, he took my hands and ran them across his rock hard abs. "What do you think?" He asked innocently even though his actions were anything but..

"Wow..." I gasped.

That was the reaction he must have been hoping for, because the biggest grin came over his face. As I looked down, my hands were inexplicably clinging to the sides of his tank top for dear life. I gasped and released his shirt. "We need to go Rose, now." I grabbed her arm and whipped her around, heading for the locker rooms as fast as possible.

I sat down on the bench and stifled the urge to squeal like a schoolgirl. Instead, I opted for the very mature ".God!" Rose kept saying "Manolo, Manolo, Manolo, Manolo" over and over again as she rocked back and forth, gripping the seat of the bench with white

knuckles.

“Do I even want to know what Emmett whispered to you before? You actually blushed do you know that? I don't think I've ever seen you blush before Rosalie.”

“When you said we were hitting the showers he ...he ...he asked me if I needed any help!” She said breathlessly. I started laughing hysterically because I knew it took every ounce of Rosalie's self control not to throw herself at Emmett right there in the middle of the gym.

I heard her mumble “Stupid boycott, what the hell was I thinking?” As she grabbed her toiletries and headed to the showers, I wasn't far behind.

The time in the shower allowed me to clear my head and focus on the task at hand, winning the bet. I just had to make it 3 more weeks... 21 simple days...I could do this. While I was conditioning my hair I decided if I just kept at least a foot between Edward and I at all times, that would help tremendously. My head would remain clearer if I wasn't inches from his face, and his lips...especially his lips.

Rosalie looked refreshed as she exited the shower, towel wrapped tightly around her head, hiding her blond locks. We chatted about who we still needed to shop for Christmas gifts for in our families, and decided to try and do a quick trip to the mall sometime this week. Alice would be thrilled.

Our hair dried and bodies moisturized, we went back to our lockers to put on some clean clothes. I threw on my jeans and was pulling my sweater over my head when I heard the now familiar song that made my heart race. Rosalie's eyes were huge as she waited for me to answer it.

“Edward?”

“Where are you?”

“In the locker room. Why?”

“Oh, good. I thought I missed you. I'll see you in a minute.” and then he hung up.

“What was that about?” Rosalie asked suspiciously.

“I have no idea. I think they thought we left already or something. He said he'd see me in a minute.” I shrugged and finished dressing . With our bags packed and hair dry, we headed out of the locker room and found Edward and Emmett standing outside the door waiting for us.

They both had showered and got dressed, their hair still damp. They were leaning against the wall, with gym bags in a pile on the floor. Big smiles were on their faces as we approached.

“You two are the slowest humans on Earth!” Emmett laughed.

“Looking this good takes time Emmett, are you complaining?” Rosalie questioned.

“Nope. No complaints here. Come on, let's walk” He took Rose by the hand and led her toward the front door. Edward gave a small nod of thanks and turned his attention back to me.

"I'll meet you at the car Bella..." Rose said over her shoulder, smiling.

"So..." I started. "What's up?"

"Nothing, I just wanted to see you before you left." He reached out and gently took my hand in his and pulled me a little closer. We were barely my recommended twelve inches apart and my head was already starting to swoon.

"Oh." For some reason, when his fingers laced through mine, I instinctively tightened my grip on his warm hand. The smile on his face grew bigger.

"Did you know Alice gave Jasper a type written copy of your Rules for the Boycott?" I shook my head no.

"It doesn't surprise me, she taped a copy to my mirror this morning."

"Well she did, and I have been studying them and I have found a few...loopholes." There was a playful twinkle in his green eyes, like a kid who's about to go do something mischievous.

"Loopholes?" I'm sure I sounded more excited than I should have, but if he found loopholes that may mean we can spend some more time together and even more importantly, means he was looking for ways to spend time with me. Just knowing that made my knees feel weak.

"Yes, for example, you cannot go on a date with me, but there is nothing in the rules that say I can't just show up every single place you go and join you. Like today, this was totally legal. I didn't invite you here, I merely suggested a remedy to your ailment and our paths crossed."

"Amazing how that keeps happening...So basically you are going to become my stalker?" That made him laugh, a deep, glorious laugh.

"Yes, your own personal stalker. I've also made a few other discoveries about the rules, but I will tell you about those later..." He teased.

"Well, I have also been thinking about this boycott and I have a few ideas myself. Care to hear them?"

"Absolutely."

"I know we still technically have 3 weeks until New Years, but that is only if no one wins before that...if I could...knock out my competition, then it wouldn't be that long until I could go on a real date with...whoever may want to ask me."

"I like how you think Bella Swan. Maybe we could combine our efforts and see who we should try to crack first."

"Sounds like a plan. Who is your weakest link?" I asked but I didn't really need to, I knew...

"Emmett of course, and yours is Rose I assume?" He laughed, I nodded to confirm his guess.

"She is, but she is also most devious, so no one can know our little arrangement or God knows what they'll do to me in retaliation." My eyes grew wide with fear, remembering

back to this morning and my sleep talking, if they shared something like that with Edward... I would die. "Actually all I think we need to do is have them spend more time together and they'll cave on their own."

"OK, so are we a team?" Edward leaned closer to me, breaking my self imposed safety zone.

"Definitely." I said quietly as I gave his hand a squeeze to confirm our pact.

"Let's go check on Emmett and Rose, with any luck they are making out in the backseat of his car...right now." Edward laughed as he picked up his gym bag and mine and carried them outside, never letting go of my hand.

Rosalie and Emmett were standing together next to her car. When Emmett saw Edward, he jumped a mile and ran his fingers through his hair quickly. Rosalie pointed at the trunk and told Edward "It's open." So he could throw my stuff in there.

"We better get home before Alice sends the troops out looking for us." I said as I leaned back against Rosalie's trunk.

"I'll call you later if that's alright." Edward asked.

"Absolutely." I said slightly dazed by his crooked smile, and the fact that he kept moving closer. He put his mouth to my ear and whispered "Bye Bella. " As he moved away, his lips grazed my cheek.

If I hadn't been leaning all my weight on the car, I probably would have fallen over. I sat with my eyes closed for a minute to get myself under control, when I heard Edward chuckling.

"What's so funny?"

"I need my hand back Bella." I looked down and saw I was still clinging to his hand as tight as possible.

Immediately, I released my grip on him and turned bright red "Sorry Edward!"

He raised his newly freed hand, brushing it against my face "Don't be. I'll talk to you later."

"Bye." I mumbled as I leaned on the trunk of the car, watching him and Emmett walk to the Jeep and climb in laughing about something.

"Bella, come on, we need to get home." Rosalie said sharply, breaking me out of my trance.

In the car I asked "What's the hurry Rose?" as she peeled out of the parking lot.

"I need to get home...I have something to TELL you..." She said secretively as she stopped at a red light..

"Oh my God! Tell me you kissed Emmett??!" She looked at me and nodded her head, her eyes dancing with joy.

So there you have it...two chapters! Rosalie took advantage of her one kiss so the bet was not lost, it was totally legal. I have a new poll up go check it out. And for the record, Bella and Edward won the ring tone contest. My personal vote was for Jasper... :)
Review please!!

Chapter: 13

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

SUPER long chapter. I couldn't find a good place to cut it so here you go. No harping on me to update... you know I will eventually. The last part is EPOV for the last two chapters. Hope you like it!

Tears

BPOV

"ALICE! ALICE! ALICE!" We screamed as we threw open the door to the apartment and tore inside. Alice had been sitting on the couch going through her purchases, however our screams scared her so badly, she fell onto the floor.

"What the hell are you screaming about?" She spat at us as she climbed back to her feet. We simply clapped and squealed like lunatics.

"Rosalie kissed Emmett! She has to kiss and tell! Come on, hurry up and move that stuff off the couch." I said waving my hands in front of myself. "Sit, Sit, Sit." I commanded Rosalie to the couch. Alice instantly flung her shopping bags across the room and was now bouncing with anticipation. Alice and I sat on the floor like two school children, waiting to hear a story from their teacher.

"How was it?" Alice begged unable to stand it another second. Rosalie took a deep breath as a dreamy smile danced across her face.

"Amazing..." She sighed and blushed.

"Rosalie Hale are you BLUSHING?" Alice screamed. I of course, laughed because I had already seen her blush earlier at the gym, but Alice was floored.

"Oh stop it Alice...it's an involuntary reaction, I have no control over it."

"Details Rose, we need details..." I pleaded.

She quickly went into how we ran into Emmett and Edward at the gym and the highlights of their workout. Then she got to the good part.

"So we walked out of the gym and went over to his car. Did you know he has one of those big, suped up Jeeps? Anyway, he put his bag inside and we were walking back to my car when he starts talking about some of the work he wants to have done to his car...and you know how I react to shop talk..."

Alice and I exchanged knowing smirks...forget the oysters, chocolate and champagne where Rosalie was concerned the most potent aphrodisiac is cars. Nothing else has that effect on her, making her instantly amorous. I laughed to myself. Poor Emmett probably didn't know what hit him.

"So once he buttered you up with the car talk, then what?" Alice wondered.

RPOV

"Let me throw my stuff in the car." Emmett said as he led me over to his Jeep. I stopped in my tracks when I saw the Limited edition 2007 Jeep Rubicon with the off-roading package. I ran my hand over one the the enormous 35" over sized wheels as he opened the door.

"This is your car?" I asked in amazement.

"Yep." He chuckled when he saw my face. "Do you like it?"

"Yeah. Did you add the side rails yourself?" I asked bending down to examine them. It looked like someone with little experience had installed them to my trained eye.

"How did you know that?" Emmett asked. Confused.

I had to laugh "It didn't look professionally done. See, right here? This front plate should be flush with the door, and you put it over the riser instead of under. Rookie mistake." I muttered as I crouched down next to the door and pointed out his error.

After a few seconds, when he didn't say anything I was worried I offended him, so I turned to see him with a huge smile on his face. He held out his hand to help me back to a standing position. "How do you know so much about cars?" He asked in amazement, moving closer to me. He thinks it's cool I know about cars.

"Just a hobby. So have you thought about installing some Spyder Tube fenders on this thing?" I walked around to the front of the car, thinking.

"Actually, I'd been considering it for a while, but never got around to it. I also wanted to put some more horsepower under the hood." He said as he ran his hand over the hood of the Jeep. God he 's sexy when he talks cars...shoes, shoes, shoes Rosalie...stop with the fantasies.

I held up my bag and led him over to my car so I could drop off my stuff. I wonder where Bella and Edward are? Hopefully they will take their time. Emmett was now evaluating my BMW. "This is a sweet car. Have you done any work on this?"

"Tons, mostly under the hood... I like to drive fast. It scares the crap out of Bella most of the time, but I'm just a bit impatient." I mumbled standing against the drivers side door. Emmett was standing next to me, smiling.

"So, if I were to go shopping for those tube fenders, do you think you might be able to help me, you know, install them sometime?" He asked unsure of what my answer would be. My mind was a million miles away. I get one kiss...totally within the rules. Why not now, look at him, with that wet hair, and sweatshirt.

I stepped closer to him, closer and on my third step, startled him because he took a huge step backwards, pinning himself to the car next to mine. I gently pressed my body against his and grabbed a handful of his sweatshirt in each of my hands.

"So listen, I did some renegotiating of the rules and basically I get one real kiss, no with

boundaries, between now and New Years when this ridiculous bet ends. Don't make me regret using it. Understand?" I purred seductively as I inched closer and closer to his lips.

He put his hands on my hips and pulled me into him even closer and held me tight, so tight I couldn't move and inch. His lips turned up into a sexy grin and before I could stop myself, I kissed him. My arms went around his neck and hands dug into his hair, holding on for dear life. Our mouths moved together in perfect harmony, taking my breath away. His lips were so warm and gentle even though the kiss had more passion in it than I had ever imagined possible in a single kiss.

I felt my knees give a little and my head spin when I finally pulled back, ending the kiss

"Wow..." I mumbled.

"Wow doesn't even come close." Emmett said as stunned as I was by what just happened.

BPOV

Rose had just finished giving us the play by play as we sat silently on the floor at her feet. When she finished, she closed her eyes and replayed it again in her head.

"And did he meet your standards?" I asked even though the huge smile on her face gave the answer away.

"Oh, did he ever! I mean the things he did with his mouth...if I made a list of the ten best kisses of my life to date, he completely blew them out of the water. Every inch of my skin tingled by the time we came up for air. I can't even explain it was...it was..." Rose trailed off trying to find the words. Alice had become very quiet next to me, but then she finally spoke.

"It was... the kiss of a lifetime." Alice mumbled as she aimlessly rubbed her fingers across her own lips.

"Alice Brandon! Did you kiss Jasper?" I shrieked. Alice glanced around uncomfortably and eventually nodded her head up and down slowly.

"Where did you see him?" Rosalie asked in shock.

"I bumped into him at the mall... I was in the Gap and I saw him waving at me through the store window. We spent the next hour shopping and he insisted on following me home to help carry all the packages I had bought." She waved at all the packages that were scattered on the floor around us.

"When he brought up the last bag, I was walking him to the door and I don't know what came over me, he had just been so wonderful and I felt so happy to be with him... I waved my finger at him and he bent down to see what I wanted. When his face got close enough, I just wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed him like I never kissed anyone before. He put his arms around my waist and picked me up off the floor and just gently held me in his arms and kissed me back. It was ...incredible."

My mouth was actually hanging open when Alice finished her story. I was so happy for both of them that they had found someone special and taken advantage of their one kiss. I glanced at them, and they were both staring at me expectantly, waiting for me to confess I think.

"Sorry to disappoint you girls, but I didn't use me free kiss yet." I tried to play it off as no big deal, but on the inside I was holding back a flood of tears that threatened to ruin their happy moment.

"Well, that's OK Bella, it 's no big deal. You are probably smarter to wait..." Rosalie put a loving hand on my shoulder to reassure me.

"Yeah, it is smarter." I muttered as I got up and headed for my bedroom. "I'm going to go lay down, my head is bothering me again."

As soon as I reached the safety of my room, the tears started flowing uncontrollably. I slid to the floor and let my insecurities get the better of me. Smarter to wait...yes, that way I don;t make an ass out of myself. Why in the world would someone like Edward ever want to be with me. He's perfect and could have any girl he wants, there's nothing special about me other than the fact that I'm exceptionally plain. It's a game to him, the chase is fun for guys, but when he catches me, he'll be disappointed, I know it.I continued to beat myself up until I heard a small tap on the door.

"Bella, Bella honey are you OK?" Alice gently pushed open the door and found me in a heap on the floor. I felt Rosalie's arms wrap around my small frame and hug me tight in her arms.

"Bella, it's alright...why are you so upset? Did we do something or say something?" She asked searching for a reason for my tears.

"I'm just being stupid. It's nothing." I managed to get out between sobs. "I really am so happy for both of you."

"Please talk to us Bella." Alice pleaded. She took my face and started wiping away my tears while Rose clutched my hands in hers.

"I'm just so scared...I like Edward so much, that quite frankly it scares me sometimes... I can't explain it. And he is so out of my league, guys let's be honest. There's nothing about me he could possibly find attractive other than the fact he can't have me right now. I think what he really likes is pursuing me, and I'm afraid if I kiss him, things will change, he'll come to his senses and it will be over... and it will all have been a dream." The tears once again we streaking my face, but now I caused a flood of tears from Rosalie and Alice too.

"Bella, please listen to me...He likes you. He is chasing you, but I have a feeling when he catches you, he's never going to let you go. Jasper even said he's never seen Edward act this way before, never. Rose, help me here..."

"She's right Bella, you can't see how you two are together, it's unreal. You are two parts of a whole, completing each other. He watches you all the time, he never takes his eyes off you. And he's always touching you, or holding your hand, he feels it too Bella." Rosalie's voice was gentle as she tried to explain the things she saw between us.

"I know you are scared. I think we all are, terrified. But Bella, if you want to find love, you have to be willing to put your heart out there...and trust Edward to take care of it. Your face just lights up when you are around him..." I thought of Edward today at the gym and smiled "...or if you're thinking about him." She teased.

I started wiping the tears off my cheeks as I calmed myself down. "Thank you both...I know I sound like a lunatic, I've only known him a few days, but I really am just so

terrified that something will happen and I won't ever see him again and I don't know what I would do if that ever..."

"Shhhh Bella, it fine. It will be alright, if it is meant to be...it will all work out. Just have some faith, please?" Rosalie whispered as she lovingly stroked my hair. I heard the doorbell ring and Alice hopped up to see who it was.

"Thanks Rose. I don't know what I'd do without you and Alice." I sighed as I pulled my face away from her tear soaked shirt.

"Bella...come here please." Alice sang from the kitchen. Rose held out her hand to help me off the floor. "Come on, let's go see what the little nut wants now. I have to change my shirt anyway."

Sitting on the kitchen table was the biggest bouquet of flowers I had ever seen in my life and next to it was tiny, little Alice bouncing up and down like she had springs on her feet.

"That must have been one hell of a kiss there Alice. What did Jasper do?" I asked in awe of the massive arrangement in front of me. Rosalie leaned across the table and pressed her nose into the petals.

"They aren't for me silly Bella, they're for...you!"

Always...

thinking of you.

'E'

I held the card in my trembling hand and read it over and over again until the meaning behind the words actually sank in. Edward was thinking about me as much as I was thinking about him. I felt my face start to smile as I allowed myself to finally believe his words. Alice and Rosalie sat patiently, until I looked up from the card, back to their awaiting faces.

"Let me see it!" Alice said as she whipped the card out of my hand and held it so she and Rose could read it together.

"We told you Bella, he's crazy about you too! And look at these flowers they are spectacular! Do you feel better now?" Alice asked as she took my face in her hands. I slowly nodded my head up and down and threw my arms around her neck. I laughed when I heard Rosalie start grumbling.

"Figures. I give Emmett one hell of a kiss and I get nothing. Come on, he drove Edward to the florist for God's sake! Would it have killed him to throw a rose or something my way?" She shook her head in mock anger as Alice laughed. "You better go call lover boy and thank him. He's probably camped out by his phone.."

I kissed both of them on the cheek, scooped up my enormous flower arrangement and headed for my room. With the door closed, the aroma of roses filled my bedroom. I laid down on my bed to call Edward, still smiling uncontrollably. The phone rang once and he anxiously answered.

"Bella?"

"Hi Edward. I got your flowers. Thank you, they are so beautiful." I said sincerely.

"Not as beautiful as you, but they will do. You are very welcome by the way." His silky voice gave me chills.

"So what made you buy me flowers?" I asked curiously.

"I wanted to do something nice for you, and it's a loophole I found."

"What's the loophole?"

"Well, there's nothing in your rules that prevents me from buying you gifts. If I do, the customary thing is to call that person who sent the gift and thank them. So I get to talk to you more, without raising any suspicion. I'll bet Alice was even the one who told you to call me right?"

"I knew there was a reason I liked you Edward Mason."

"You like me?" He asked enthusiastically, like he had no idea.

"Yes Edward, I like you..." You have no idea how much...

"How much?" He teased. Wow, a mind reader too!

"What are we twelve? I like you whole a lot. Is that good enough?"

"Yes actually it is. Just for the record, I like you too...way more than a lot!" Again, I found myself blushing.

"Hey, give Emmett a bit of advice. For future reference, if he's standing next to you at the florist, and you're getting me flowers, he should throw a fern or something Rosalie's way to keep himself out of trouble." I heard Edward chuckling over the phone.

"I will try and remind him of that, next time."

"They really are gorgeous..."

"Just like you."

I spent the next hour on the phone with Edward talking about anything and everything. I found out that he, Emmett and Jasper wanted to open their own bar. It sounded like they had a bunch of really great ideas and had been taking this last year to learn all the ins and outs of running a bar at the Downunder. He also let me know he was going to be really busy over the next few days trying to talk to different investors.

We talked about Christmas and our family traditions. Both of us were only children and used to being dragged to different relatives homes to celebrate with the whole family. I heard about his twin cousins setting the Christmas tree on fire one year with a can of hairspray and a lighter. My family wasn't nearly as exciting, my mother liked to invite friends and neighbors over to fill our house with the Christmas spirit. I told him how Renee had an unhealthy obsession with mistletoe during my teen years.

As the hour drew to a close, Alice stuck her head in to ask me a question and shrieked

"You are still on the phone with him Bella! How long have you been talking to him?" Her tiny form stood in my doorway, tapping her foot furiously.

"Sorry Edward, gotta go. Mom says I've been on the phone too long and I have homework to do. I don't want to get grounded." I snarled in Alice's direction. She gave a small humph and slammed the door as she left.

"Sorry I got you in trouble Bella." His laughter was the sweetest sound I could imagine.

"I'll live. I guess I'll talk to you tomorrow..." I was a bit sad at the thought and he picked up on it.

"How about if I wake you up in the morning? What time would you like your wake up call?" He asked cheerfully.

"I have to run errands all day, so how about 9:30 if that's not too early for you."

"That will be fine. I'll talk to you in the morning Bella."

"Bye Edward. Thanks again for the flowers."

"Just look at them and think of me. Bye Bella."

EPOV

"Emmett, why are you messing with your hair when we are just going to go workout?" I asked annoyed as I watched Emmett stand in front of the locker room mirror, fixing his curls again.

"What's the big hurry Eddie? It would have anything to do with a certain young lady in spandex running on a treadmill as we speak, would it?" Emmett grinned at my reflection in the mirror.

"Try not to be an ass, Emmett. All your primping has made you move in slow motion ever since Jasper suggested we do this, you look very pretty, now can we go?" I said impatiently as I started walking out the door. Emmett was hot on my heels, scanning the gym for Rosalie but couldn't find her.

"Come on, let's go ask Bella if she's here." He whined. God help me if she's not...he will be a complete baby.

I saw Bella fro across the gym, running at a rather brisk pace on her treadmill. Her ponytail was bouncing from side to side behind her as she ran. We approached her from the right and she was distracted taking a drink of water so I doubt she saw us until Emmett gave her his cheesy line.

"Bella, fancy meeting you here!" She rolled her eyes at him and smiled.

"Hi Emmett. Yes, what a coincidence..." She's so adorable when she is being sarcastic. I thought to myself smirking.

I noticed the treadmill next to her was empty and if I climbed up there I could see her face better so I jumped up and leaped back on one of the rails to watch her run. She and Emmett prattled on about bumping into each other but I wasn't really listening, I was

busy watching in awe as she ran and carried on a conversation. Her cheeks were a sexy shade of pink from the run and her skin had a light sheen of perspiration to it. I was completely distracted, when she suddenly gave Emmett a wicked smile which caught my attention.

"She's in the classroom. They are doing some 'strip aerobics class' she was dying to take." I heard Bella say to Emmett, who flew over to the classroom window shamelessly. I had to laugh at his antics.

"There's no strip aerobics class here." I laughed.

"I know that, and you know that, but Emmett, he sure didn't." She looked over my shoulder to see Emmett's confused expression and smiled, satisfied she had tricked him yet again.

"So are you going to stand there and stare at me all day or are you going to run?" I heard her ask uncomfortably. The truth was, I was enjoying myself immensely, she was so beautiful, everything about her was stunning.

"Actually, I was enjoying the view from here, but if you insist, I suppose I could run today." What the hell are you thinking Edward? I scolded myself. You haven't run in months, you will make a complete ass of yourself. Look at her, she's hardly breathing hard and she was running when we got here.

I began fumbling with the array of buttons on the console of the treadmill. Bella pointed her finger at a big button "Push the green one to start it...right there. Now run." She said smiling. I wonder if she knows I have no clue what I'm doing? God don't let me fly off the back of this thing...how fast is this going? Oh my god...I'll be dead in five minutes! I panicked as my legs started running underneath me. Be cool Edward, make small talk.

"So you like to run?" I tried to sound casual and not about to vomit.

"Yes, I like to work on my endurance and stamina. It comes in very handy you know." She said in a playful voice and then she winked at me. She did not just say that did she?

The sudden rush of adrenaline helped me catch my breath long enough to say "I can definitely see where your...stamina training could come in handy. However, weight training can also come in handy for when your task requires some, power, and often upper body strength." His cheeks turned pink, telling me I had managed to get to her just a bit. I smiled and continued my death jog.

My legs felt like they were on fire a few minutes later. I saw Bella glance over at the classroom in search of Rosalie I assume. Please God, let her be done soon...go look for Rose before I die. I thought in my head. I was not about to look like a wuss and get off the treadmill before she did, Emmett would never let me live it down.

My eyes were closed as I silently prayed to make it through another two minutes when I heard her shut off her machine next to me. I realized I had no idea how to turn the contraption off so I started hitting random buttons as fast as I could to get the stupid thing off. Luckily, I found my mark quickly, slowing the treadmill to a stop.

I hopped down and bent over, clutching my knees for support as I gasped for air. I felt a warm, soft hand rubbing my back. Looking up I saw her smile "How was your run?"

"Fantastic, great, never better. And yours?" I felt like I was going to die, like there wasn't enough air on Earth to breathe. I looked up again to see her smiling wickedly.

"Not bad. I stopped early because I didn't want that vein in your head to explode. Looks like you need to work on your stamina if you hope to keep up with me Edward." And she skipped off to the water fountain. So much for being cool. I laughed at myself. Fine, cool didn't work, time to try something different...

I took a few deep breaths and watched Rosalie skip off after Emmett. She looked like a predator stalking her prey as she maneuvered around the other people and machines to reach her mark. Bella was so distracted watching Rosalie too, that I was able to sneak up behind her and successfully wrap my arms around her before she could run away.

She spun around, obviously startled. I leaned over her and said "Now I've got you. Let's see your stamina get you away from my brute strength." I quickly locked my wrists behind her back and held her tightly to me. It felt so perfect to have her in my arms again, like this is exactly where she belonged. I was distracted by my own thoughts until she moved in my arms, closer to me.

"You're assuming I want to leave." She said with a coy smile on her face. She was pressing her body even closer to me and my entire being was screaming kiss her you idiot, she wants you to kiss her. So I tried to relax, slowly moving my hands to her hips and stared at her full, pouty lips. I inched closer until...

She shoved me away from her small frame, almost knocking me off my feet. "Nice brute strength you've got there Edward." She teased, in more ways than one. I decide to have some fun and see if I could make her blush again. I regained my balance and started walking straight toward her.

She sensed I was coming for her so she instinctively backed up until she found herself pinned to the wall behind her. I grinned, knowing I had her trapped. I leaned my face right next to hers and whispered "Cheater..." Into her ear.

"A girl's gotta do, what a girl's gotta do. It was that, or my other choice was to knee you in the groin and scratch your eyes out like I learned in self defense class. I decided to take it easy on you this time." She ducked under my arms and snuck to safety, away from the wall. "Come on, I need to see if Rosalie is behaving herself. If not, my odds of winning the bet go up exponentially." She smiled as she walked back to the gym. She waited to make sure I was following her.

Rosalie was sitting on a bench across the gym where she had a perfect view of Emmett working out. Bella strode over to her and sat down with her, I decided to go finish my workout with the weights, far, far way from the treadmill.

"Hey, I though for a moment I may have had to call the ambulance for you there tough guy." Emmett laughed.

"Thanks for your concern. I held my own." I lied. Emmett raised a suspicious eyebrow at me and shook his head. "Did you see you have an audience?" I asked with a smile.

"I see WE now have an audience so please don't embarrass me by looking like a wimp or anything." Emmett teased. I couldn't help but notice he had upped his normal weight amounts with his new groupie watching.

We managed to get a good workout in and I was able to steal a few glances at Bella while she and Rosalie were talking without her noticing. Emmett and I had just started doing pull ups when we saw them abruptly stand up and wave goodbye. Emmett waved and they reluctantly started walking our way, looking flushed and nervous.

"Hey guys, we are going to call it a day and hit the showers." Bella said quickly. Emmett leaned into Rose and whispered something that made her blush furiously and shake her head no. I didn't dare imagine what just left his lips, when I met Bella's gaze and shrugged.

"Thanks for suggesting the gym. I feel much better, I think I ran all the toxins out of my system." Bella said keeping her distance from me, but still staring deeply into my eyes.

I laughed and ran my hand through my hair nervously "Good, I'm glad you feel better. And see we both accomplished something, you increased your stamina and I worked on my strength." She tensed up at my comment but her eyes darted all over my body, from my arms, to my shoulders to my chest. Again, I felt that inexplicable need to be close to her, to touch her.

"I...um.. see...them." She mumbled in a daze. Before I knew what came over me I took her small hands in mine.

"You can't tell anything about muscles by looking at them Bella, you really have to feel them to appreciate them." I ran her hands over my abs and watched her eyes grow wide in amazement. I just couldn't tell if my body impressed her or if she was in complete shock because I just did that to her. "What do you think?"

She gasped "Wow..." A wide grin came across my face. Not at her words, but because she had suddenly latched her hands onto the sides of my tank top. Her brown eyes locked with mine and then she dropped her gaze to her hands, startled herself, and let go of my shirt and grabbed Rosalie, blushing again.

"We need to go Rose, now." She said as we watching them fly into the locker room. Emmett grinned at me and I grinned back "Damn, we're good." Emmett laughed. "All I did was ask Rosalie if she wanted help in the shower...you however, helped Bella grope you. Well done!"

"It was a joke...I hope she's not mad." I wondered as I glanced back toward the locker room. "Do you still want to work out or can we leave too?"

"Na, we can go. I don't have anything to look at anymore." He said with a wink. "Let's shower and see if we can catch them before they leave."

We grabbed our stuff and quickly jumped into the showers. As I got dressed, I saw Emmett once again in front of the mirror, messing with his wet hair. "Come on pretty boy, let's get a move on, or all your beautifying will be for nothing." I nagged as I tied my shoe, I quickly ran my hand through my hair and headed out the door.

We looked like idiots or perverts waiting outside the women's locker room. A number of ladies gave us dirty looks, a few even winked. Emmett was getting impatient.

"Just call Bella and see if we missed them." He said as he nudged my shoulder. "Why don't you call Rose, I'll look like an idiot."

"Just do it or I start yelling Bella's name. I'm hungry...I need food Edward...just call her

please.” The man is an overgrown three year old I thought as I dialed Bella's phone.

“Edward?” Bella asked as she answered the phone.

“Where are you?”

“In the locker room. Why?” Great she thinks I'm an idiot.

“Oh, good. I thought I missed you. I'll see you in a minute.” I quickly hung up the phone, still not sure why I called her to begin with.

“Happy Emmett? They will be out in a minute.” I asked as he balanced his gym bag on his forearm to pass the time.

“Very.”

A minute or two later Bella and Rose emerged from the locker room looking more beautiful than ever. Bella's hair was out of the ponytail and flowed gently over her shoulders. Rose was dressed to kill and Emmett was her target.

“You two are the slowest humans on Earth!” Emmett laughed.

“Looking this good takes time Emmett, are you complaining?” Rosalie asked annoyed.

“Nope. No complaints here. Come on, let's walk” Emmett held out his hand to Rose, she eagerly took it and headed to the front door with him.

“I'll meet you out by the car...” I heard Rose yell from over my shoulder.

She shyly walked over to me and leaned against the wall as well. “So.. What's up?” She asked with some confusion in her voice.

“Nothing, I just wanted to see you before you left.” I reached out and held her hand in mine.

“Oh.” She whispered and as our fingers laced together, she gave my hand a squeeze that made me smile.

“Did you know Alice gave Jasper a type written copy of your Rules for the Boycott?” She shook her head no, but added. “It doesn't surprise me, she taped a copy to my mirror this morning.”

“Well she did, and I have been studying them all day and I have found a few...loopholes.” I was really excited by my discoveries, something that I had also shared with Emmett and Jasper earlier today.

Excitedly she asked “Loopholes?”

“Yes, for example, you cannot go on a date with me, but there is nothing in the rules that say I can't just show up every single place you go and join you. Like today, this was totally legal. I didn't invite you here, I merely suggested a remedy to your ailment and our paths crossed.” I beamed with pride and my genius.

“Amazing how that keeps happening...So basically you are going to become my stalker?” Her laughter became contagious, making me laugh too.

"Yes, consider me your own personal stalker. I've also made a few other discoveries about the rules, but I will tell you about those later..." I teased.

"Well, I have also been thinking about this boycott and I have a few ideas myself. Care to hear them?" The tone in her voice peaked my curiosity.

"Absolutely." I said intrigued to hear her ideas on the subject.

"I know we still technically have 3 weeks until New Years, but that is only if no one wins before that...if I could...knock out my competition, then it wouldn't be that long until I could go on a real date with...whoever may want to ask me." She really had quite a cunning mind, yet another reason to be attracted to her.

"I like how you think Bella Swan. Maybe we could combine our efforts and see who we should try to crack first."

"Sounds like a plan. Who is your weakest link?" She asked with a smirk.

"Emmett of course, and yours is Rose I assume?" We laughed both knowing the answers already.

"She is, but she is also most devious, so no one can know our little arrangement or God knows what they'll do to me in retaliation." A bit of panic washed across her face, but then she took a second to consider something and recovered. "Actually, all I think we need to do is have them spend more time together and they'll cave on their own."

I leaned closer to her, so close I could smell her shampoo "OK, so are we a team?" I asked quietly.

"Definitely." She replied, giving my hand another squeeze to seal our deal. She was extraordinarily beautiful at that moment. I wanted to kiss her so badly, but I knew I couldn't. Her voice broke me out of my thoughts.

"Let's go check on Emmett and Rose, with any luck they are making out in the backseat of his car...right now." I laughed at the hopefulness in her voice. I grabbed our bags and led her out to the cars.

Emmett and Rose were wedged between two cars and I could tell by the look on Emmett's face I had missed something. He jumped away from her and nervously ran his fingers through his hair. Rose pointed at the trunk and casually said "It's open." I tossed Bella's bag in the trunk and closed it tightly. She leaned against the back of the car and mumbled something about needing to go home before Alice sent out the troops.

"I'll call you later if that's alright." I asked as her big brown eyes looked up at mine. I found myself smiling at her answer.

"Absolutely."

I leaned over her and put my lips right up to her ear and whispered "Bye Bella." As I moved away, I ran my lips ever so gently across her cheek I heard her gasp. When I looked back at her face, she had closed her eyes. Emmett had said goodbye to Rose and was heading to his car. I was ready to follow him, but Bella was still clinging to my hand. I could have given a little tug to get her attention, but I liked knowing she wasn't

ready to let me go. I heard Emmett sigh and I had to chuckle.

"What's so funny?" She asked as her eyes finally flew open.

"I need my hand back Bella." She looked down and saw our fingers still tightly entwined and immediately let go, blushing.

"Sorry Edward!"

I raised my hand and gently ran it along her reddened cheek. "Don't be. I'll talk to you later." I smiled and took one more look into her bottomless brown eyes and walked over to Emmett's waiting Jeep.

"She so wants you" Emmett laughed as we climbed into the Jeep. I finally got a good look at me friend and couldn't believe what I saw.

"Hey Emmett, you have a little lip gloss right here, and here, pretty much everywhere. It is a very stunning color on you." I laughed at his sparkling lips. He grabbed the mirror and examined his face, wiping the gloss away with his sleeve. I saw Rosalie's car fly out of the parking lot like a bat out of hell.

"Follow them." I motioned to Emmett as he started the car. "So would you like to explain your glossy lips?"

"I don't know what to tell you, one minute I was talking cars with her and then next she had me pressed against the other car. She said something about how she renegotiated the rules and has one real kiss to last her until new years that was totally legal so I shouldn't make her regret using it. And then she was all over me, but in a really good way you know what I mean. She literally took my breath away with one kiss...some girls can't even do that when we..."

"Stop! Too much information there Emmett. Please I don't need those visuals in my head thank you. So Rosalie changed the rules a bit...interesting." I mumbled as I realized this meant I too had one kiss with Bella, one kiss with those lips to last until New Years. I started smiling at the prospect.

"So why am I following them exactly?" Emmett asked when he came out of his daydream about Rosalie.

"I don't know I just wanted to know where they live and I'm thinking about doing something nice for Bella."

"You totally like her man! She has you wrapped around her little finger. Hey, Rosalie told me Bella loves flowers. Let's find out where she lives and you can send her flowers. It will be very romantic of you, chicks dig that kind of crap." As much as hated to admit it, he was right. Bella would like the flowers, and then she'd call to say thank yo and I could talk to her again.

We followed them to their apartment. Emmett wrote down the address and we headed to the nearest florist to order some flowers. A sweet older woman was behind the counter when we walked in. She heard the door chime and looked up from her magazine. "Hello boys, I'm Mary. May help you?"

"My friend here is trying to impress a young lady he wants to date. Can you help him pick

out a bouquet of flowers that might help him get the girl?" Emmett asked in his most charming voice. The woman glowed with excitement and took my hand.

"For a young lady... I see. Can you tell me something about her? That will help me pick the perfect arrangement." She smiled as she took her glasses off her face to look me in the eyes.

"Well she is beautiful, and smart. Witty and charming and clever, very clever. She makes me laugh whenever I am around her and keeps me on my toes every minute of the day. And when she is in my arms, I never want to let her go." I stopped for a minute, totally stunned by my own admission. Emmett was smiling next to me, nodding his head as I rattled off things about Bella.

"She sounds like a very special young lady. I know just what to make for her." She led me over to a table where she had a picture of a spectacular arrangement full of roses. She smiled as I nodded my head in agreement. "That's perfect." I muttered.

"Do you want to take it yourself or have us deliver it?" She asked as she walked behind the table to start on it right away.

"If you delivered it, when would she get it?" I asked, hardly hiding my urgency. I really wanted her to get it as soon as possible, to let her know I was thinking of her because I didn't know when I would see her again.

"Marty!" She yelled toward the back room. An older gentleman walked out, smiling, with a sandwich in his hand. "Yes, Mary my dear?"

"This young man is getting a beautiful flower arrangement for his young lady. I think he would like her to get it right away. How soon can you deliver it?" She asked sweetly smiling at him and casting me a small wink.

"As soon as I finish the delicious dinner you made me dear." He smiled waving his sandwich at us with a twinkle in his eye before returning to the back of the store.

"Thank you very much. She means a lot to me." I said, as Mary finished up the arrangement.

"I can tell dear, I can tell." She said as she patted my hand.

Mary finished the most spectacular bouquet in record time and Marty was waiting for the address. Emmett went over and gave him all the information while I tried to fill out the small card that would accompany the flowers. I sat there for a long time, struggling with what to write. I didn't even know how to put my feeling for her, into words.

"It gets easier when you finally admit it to yourself." Mary said quietly as she put the finishing touches on the flowers with a knowing smile. "Until then, why don't you just let her know you are thinking about her, she would really like to know that."

I filled out the little card and handed it to a smiling Mary. She tucked it safely into the arrangement, closed the clear paper around the flowers to protect it, and handed the bundle to Marty who headed out the door immediately.

"Mary, thank you so much for everything." I reached down and lifted her hand to my lips giving it a small kiss. She grinned and said "You are the charmer aren't you.. that young lady doesn't stand a chance." She winked.

"I hope not." I chuckled and paid for the flowers, adding a hefty tip for Marty for the quick delivery. Mary started shaking her head to refuse.

"Have him take you out to dinner on me, for all your help, please." I insisted.

"Thank you dear. Good luck with your endeavor." Emmett started walking to the door after thanking Mary once more.

As I was just about to walk after Emmett, she stopped me and took my arm, whispering "There is nothing more wonderful than falling in love."

OK- super long chapter! Hopefully you enjoyed it.

As for my poll, even though it looks like every one is upset be the casting of Edward, if you add up all the votes for 'Totally', 'he'll do" and 'mow the Brows' they beat out the no votes so for the most part, people think it will be OK. Breathe Bella Breathe...

Review if you liked it please...I typed my fingers to the bone:)

Chapter: 14

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Pepperoni

BPOV

Somewhere around 2am it hit, the vomiting and fever that caused my body to shake violently for the remainder of the night. I was crawling back into bed for the fifth time after running to the bathroom that morning, when my phone rang. It was Edward.

I talked to him briefly and he was very sweet and concerned when I told him I was sick. He even wanted to come over and take care of me, but considering I actually looked as horrible as I felt, I decided against it. Instead, I told him to call me later for an update. Alice and Rose came in and checked in on me before they left for work. I had a box of tissues, a glass of Sprite and some toast on my nightstand while I laid on my bed, praying for my illness to pass quickly.

I spent the next two days, sick as a dog in bed. I thought I would never recover and at one point was convinced I had contracted Ebola or some other rare and horrible virus. Everyday at lunchtime, Edward got the deli down the street to deliver two different kinds of soup to my place. He also called me three times a day just to check on me. If I was asleep, Alice would give him the update and then wake me up so I could say a quick hello. Hearing his voice made me smile, so Alice wasn't about to argue.

Wednesday morning, I woke up feeling better than I had felt in days. I had slept through the night without incident, and even felt hungry when I finally got myself out of bed. I shuffled into the kitchen to be greeted by Rose and Alice.

"She lives!" Alice squealed.

"How do you feel today Bella?" Rosalie asked, smiling as I reached for the box of cereal.

"I am starving! I feel like I haven't eaten in days." I laughed. "So what have I missed while I was incapacitated? I don't suppose either of you has lost our little bet yet?" I asked hoping both would confess and I could call Edward...but they both grinned proudly as they shook their heads 'no'. "Damn..." I mumbled with a mouth full of cereal.

"Sorry to disappoint you Bella! The bet is still on, and those shoes are calling my name!" Alice teased.

"What day is it anyway?" I asked having lost all sense of time.

"Wednesday, 2 weeks 5 days...but who's counting." Rosalie sighed. She was beginning to crack I could see it on her face.

"Bella, Rosalie and I have to go to Seattle today for work and actually we have to spend the night, possibly two. We just got the message this morning." Alice said sadly. "Sorry

we have to leave you alone, but I'm glad you are at least feeling better.”

“That's fine, I 'll just hang out around here today and maybe go shopping tomorrow for your Christmas presents, that way you might be surprised this year!” Alice's love of shopping made it impossible to shop without her and even more impossible to surprise her.

They gathered their suitcases by the door as I finished my breakfast. I was rinsing my bowl out and putting it in the dishwasher when Alice sat down at the counter and sighed.

“I really don't want to go on this trip right now.”

“Jasper withdrawal?” I teased. She smirked and nodded her head in agreement.

“It's been two days already and now two more...this sucks.” She pouted putting her head down on the counter. I stroked her spiky hair.

“Maybe we'll just bump into them when you get back. When are they planning on doing their little performance for us anyway?” I had been so sick, most of my conversations with Edward involved me grunting and answering his questions.

“Apparently they wanted some time to 'practice' before dazzling us with their skills. They also wanted to do it on a weeknight when the bar wouldn't be so crowded, so Jasper said sometime early next week.” I laughed, still not believing we talked them into doing that.

“Cool. When you two get back we'll have to go shopping for something to wear.”

Alice's head flew up off the counter and she slammed her tiny hand to my forehead, a look of panic on her face. “What are you doing Alice?” I asked.

“I was just checking to see if you were burning up with fever! You, Bella Swan, actually want to go shopping for an outfit? Since when do you care what you wear?’ She asked raising an accusing eyebrow at me.

My cheeks turned red right away. Realizing I had been caught, I decided to just confess. “Since Edward, Alice. Happy?” I moaned.

“Tremendously! Rose, Bella wants to go shopping for a new outfit when we get back!” Alice squealed to Rosalie, who had just walked into the room with her jacket on.

“Is she delirious?” Rose asked, looking at me with worry. “Maybe we should stay.”

“No, I think she's in love...” Alice sang. I grabbed a piece of toast from the counter and flung it at her head.

“I hate you both.” I said as I hugged Alice, who was still laughing, and Rosalie before they walked out the door.

“We love you too...behave while we are gone...” They said with a wave, as the door closed.

I sat down on the couch and turned on the TV, but there was nothing that held my attention. Bored, I walked back into my room to find a book when a small silver object on my nightstand caught my eye, my cell phone. I glanced at the clock, it was 9:15. Edward had been calling me every morning at 9:30 so I decided to call him first today.

"Bella? Are you alright?" I heard Edward say anxiously into the phone.

"Never better! How are you today?" I asked sweetly.

"Much better now. You really had me worried you know." He sighed in relief.

BEEP

"Hey Edward hang on, I have another call, it's Alice." I clicked over to Alice "What do you need Alice?" I asked quickly.

"Hello to you too, Bella." Alice said in a hurt voice. "Where's the fire?"

"Sorry, I'm on the other line with...Edward." Crap, here it comes.

A very loud squeal filled my left ear. "Rose you owe me five dollars! I told you she was going to call him as soon as we left. HA! Behave young lady...reread those rules...wouldn't want you to lose..." I didn't even listen to the rest of her harassment, I clicked back over to Edward mumbling 'Bitch'.

"Who's a bitch? ME?" Edward asked somewhat taken aback.

"Not you, Alice."

"Why is Alice a bitch? Aren't she and Rose on a business trip?"

"Yes they just left, but they made a small wager and Alice won. That's what the call was for."

"What did they bet on?"

"They bet on me...if I would call you as soon as they walked out the door. Alice won, because I did..." I blushed and wondered why I just admitted that to him, but I figured Jasper would have told him later.

"Well I'm also glad you called. Did I tell you I've missed you?" Who sounds this sexy at 9:20 in the morning?

"No, or you might have, but I was too busy burning up with fever to remember. I miss you too." I said shyly. It still made me surprised how much I could miss someone I'd only known for a short time.

"So what are your plans for the day?" He asked trying to lead me to tell him someplace we could run into one another.

"Actually, I was going to hang out here for one more day...stay in my PJ's and read a book."

"You know what would go great with that? Some hot chocolate. There is this coffee shop down on Henderson that has the best hot chocolate. It's Emmett's favorite. It might be a good way to start your day."

"I'm still in my pajamas Edward, and I really need to shower." I said sadly, there was no way I could run out looking a mess.

"Not a problem. I happen to know that Emmett won't be able to find his keys for at

least...fifteen or twenty minutes. He keeps losing them you know.” He said playfully as I heard keys jingle in the background.

“Well, then that does sound like a great way to start my day! I have to hang up now, that hot chocolate is calling my name.” I was on my feet and rummaging through my dresser looking for something to wear.

“Bye Bella.”

“Bye Edward.”

I threw the phone onto my bed and made a small scream of excitement. What the hell is wrong with me? I turned on the shower and stripped out of my clothes, jumping in before the water had heated up all the way. As the cool water turned hot on my skin, Alice's words kept ringing in my ears 'I think she's in love...' the more I thought about them, the more my heart pounded. Am I falling in love with Edward? Is that even possible? The answers were yes and yes, but there was no way I was going to admit that to myself right now. Shoes, boycott, bragging rights...

I went back to the job at hand. I scrubbed the shampoo into my hair and rinsed it out in record time. With a towel tightly wrapped around my wet hair, I flew into my room and grabbed some underwear, jeans, an bra and a long sleeved t shirt. When I was dressed, I glanced over at my clock, I still had five more minutes before I need to walk out the door.

At the speed of light, I dried my hair and tried to quickly put on some makeup so I didn't look so deathly pale. I tried to fix my hair, but it wasn't cooperating so I threw it up in a ponytail and grabbed my Seahawks hat Alice had bought me at the football game and threw it on my head. I think I read somewhere guys think girls in hats are sexy...I tried to convince myself. I laughed, knowing Alice would flip if she saw how I was dressed right now, way too casual for her liking, but I was comfortable, it was me.

I scooped up my keys and jumped in the car. I made it to the coffee shop in record time. When I walked in, I went directly to the line, not scanning the room for Edward. I ordered a large hot chocolate and made my way over to a couch nearby. There was a newspaper on the coffee table in front of me, so I started flipping through it, checking the ads for gift ideas, when I felt two people sit down on either side of me.

“Hello sicko! Nice hat.” I heard Emmett say to my left, but my head instinctively turned to my right and was met by a pair of green eyes that I had been craving for the last two days.

“Hello beautiful.” Edward said as he sat down, very close to me. I felt my cheeks turn pink when I looked at his perfect face and realized his warm hand was on my thigh.

“Hi Edward.” I said breathlessly. God how I missed him.

“Hi Emmett. I wore the hat just for you.” I teased. I felt Edward's arm wrap around my shoulders and pull me closer to him. My heart raced out of control.

“Funny running into you here.” Emmett said glancing over at Edward who made a point of taking a big sip of his coffee at that moment so he didn't have to look at Emmett.

“I was in the mood for some hot chocolate and I heard this place had the best.” I told him innocently. Edward gave my shoulder a little squeeze that filled my stomach with butterflies and made me want to melt my body into him even more.

"Crap, I forgot my phone in the car. I'm going to go grab it, I'll be right back. Don't eat my muffin." Emmett said abruptly.

"What's wrong with him?" I asked looking back at Edward who was still staring at me.

"Hmmm? I have no idea, I honestly wasn't paying any attention. I was...distracted." The silky tone of his voice was hard enough to resist, but then, he started stroking the back of my neck gently, which sent my head spinning.

"Edward..." I whispered as I closed my eyes and felt his fingers run down my neck and along my shoulders ever so slowly.

"Sorry. I'll behave. I just missed you, that's all." He chuckled quietly.

"I really missed you too. But if you keep doing that..." I didn't dare finish the sentence. Instead, I rested my head on his shoulder and breathed deeply, perfectly content.

Emmett POV

I ran out of the coffee shop and pulled my phone from my pocket, quickly dialing.

"Hello?" I heard her sexy voice say.

"Hey babe. It's me."

"Hi Emmett. Do you miss me already?" she purred into the phone. God this girl drives me crazy...she'd totally be worth losing \$200 over, but she really wants those damn shoes...deep breath Emmett, calm yourself. Focus.

"No, I mean... yes I miss you, but that's not why I'm calling. Edward and I went to grab some coffee before our meeting and guess who we ran into? Bella." Rosalie squealed into the phone.

"Did she kiss him or anything?" she asked eagerly.

"No..."

"Well if she didn't lose the bet or use her free kiss, why are you calling me?" She said somewhat annoyed.

"Because you should see the two of them, he can't stop touching her...like now, he's got his arm around her on the couch and he's running his fingers down the back of her neck! She is totally staring at him too!" I peered into the window of the shop praying Edward wouldn't see me, but I could tell he was totally distracted having Bella in his arms.

"Ohhh Alice, Emmett's on the phone, he says Edward and Bella are having trouble keeping their hands to themselves...we might be able to give them a little push and get them out of the contest then it's just you and me girl!" I heard her squeal to Alice. A few 'yes', 'ums' and a 'no way' later she started talking to me again.

"Emmett? Listen, Alice and I are going to work on this, we have an idea. You just keep an eye on them and if they violate any of the rules you call us OK?" I could hear the excitement in her voice.

"Will do. Soooooo what are you wearing?" I asked playfully, trying to catch her off guard. Apparently, it worked.

"I'm in the car with Alice , Emmett..." she hissed into the phone.

"So what?"

"I'm wearing a shirt and pants you idiot." She barely whispered.

"I mean under your clothes...what are you wearing?" I heard her gasp at the question and started laughing.

"Damn it Emmett, I need to go. Shut up Alice, I am not blushing! Bye Emmett, I'll call you ...later."

"Bye babe." I hid the phone in my pocket and with a big grin on my face, I went back into the coffee shop to check on the lovebirds. The sooner we get them to lose, the sooner I get to see Rosalie in that red number she was talking about... I thought as I opened the door.

BPOV

I was nestled comfortably next to Edward in the coffee shop and really wished I could stay with him all day, but I knew he and Emmett had a meeting about some properties for their bar. Edward glanced at his watch and then towards the door.

"Where the hell is Emmett?"

I sat up and looked out the window behind us to see Emmett closing his cell phone. "It looks like he made a call, here he comes." I pointed toward the door and in walked Emmett, grinning like the cat that swallowed the canary.

"If you two are done hanging all over each other, we need to get going Edward." Emmett smirked, drawing a glare from Edward in return. Edward leaned closer and said, "I'll call you later." And then kissed my cheek. It was an innocent kiss, but it made every cell in my body scream his name. I felt my cheeks blaze as I mumbled something incoherently that sounded like 'uh-hum'. Edward chuckled at the effect he had on me.

I watched them leave the coffee shop and jump onto their waiting car. It wasn't until they drove away that I felt the cramp in my hand where I had been clutching the leather cushion of the couch since Edward's lips had touched my cheek. I took a deep breath to clear my head, and walked out my car.

The rest of my afternoon was spent at home, cleaning the apartment. I put on my best bumming around the house pajamas and dug into the mountains of laundry I needed to do, and the dishes that started piling up while I was sick. Alice and Rose weren't know for their housekeeping skills.

The girls had called me in the afternoon to let me know they had arrived safely in Seattle and gave me the name and number of the hotel where they were staying in case of an emergency. After I talked to the girls, Renee called to talk me ear off for a while. She did her usual fast talking which made it so difficult to fold/sort laundry while on the phone with her. I let her know I would be coming up the Saturday before Christmas and Rose was coming with me. Alice was flying home to visit her parents back East, but Rosalie's family

was on a cruise to the Caribbean which she had passed on this year. Renee blabbered about getting the guest room ready for her.

Of course she had to ask about the boycott and see if we had finished our lesbian phase...I told her no we were still experimenting and I think she actually believed me. She could be so gullible sometimes. Then there were the lists of all the guest who would be parading through our home over the holidays. Most of the names I didn't recognize, so I just mumbled uh-hm over and over like I cared. Actually, I was searching for a match to the sock in my hand.

At 5:00, I laid down on the couch to watch some mindless TV and relax as my busy day finally caught up with me, when a knock on the door startled me. I sprung up from my seat and hurried over to answer it.

"Who is it?" I asked when I didn't recognize the guy behind the door.

"Pizza!" He called out.

"I didn't order any pizza ..." I said as I opened the door to see a delivery guy from Mama Rosa's staring me in the face.

"Whoever called, told me to tell you it was paid for so take it." He thrust the box of pizza at me and waved his hands as I searched the pocket of my pajama's for a tip. "That's been taken care of too. Enjoy your pizza."

Still confused, I took the pizza box into my kitchen and set it on the counter. I peeked inside to see what kind it was and started laughing hysterically. It was a pepperoni and sausage pizza, which I hated, but the pepperonis were arranged into a big 'E' on the extra large pizza. I was still laughing when I picked up the phone.

"Hello beautiful." Even though this was how he answered the phone just about every time I called, my heart would still swoon at the sound of his voice.

"Why do I have a extra large pizza with a big pepperoni 'E' on it?" I asked accusingly.

"I have no idea. Why do I have a pizza with the works in my hand from Mama Rosa's when we both know I hate pizzas with everything?" He laughed

"Alice!" I hissed into the phone.

"What? Why do you think it 's Alice?"

"Oh, I don't know, you get my favorite pizza and I assume this is your favorite pizza and of course the big 'E' makes me call you and she ...she's trying to knock US out of the bet. That little sneak! I bet Rose is in on this one too..."

Edward just laughed. "OK, fine, she's trying to be sneaky. What am I going to do with this pizza in the meantime?"

"Bring you, the pizza and Jasper and Emmett over and we'll have a little party, on Alice and Rosalie!"

"I'll call the guys and we'll be there in ten minutes." When he said that my heart beat a little faster. I tried to play it cool.

"See you then." I hit end and then quickly dialed Alice's cell which went straight to voice mail.

"Alice Brandon you little sneak! You and Rose are both dead for this little pizza stunt. Just so you know, I invited Edward, Emmett and Jasper over to eat the pizzas so there will be no date or romance... HA! And while they are here, I am going to let the boys snoop through your bedrooms, so hopefully you've hidden any juicy items safely away. Tell Rose I know she was in on this too." And I snapped my phone shut.

I started to panic when I looked at myself in the mirror, in my flannel pants and t shirt, but too bad. I wasn't getting dolled up in 4 minutes flat for anybody. I did run to the bathroom and put on more deodorant, brushed my teeth and combed my hair out of courtesy to my guests but that was my limit.

Trying to calm my nerves, I decided to do the one thing that was able to totally distract me, I played a video game. Childish as it was, I could wail on aliens all day long. Rosalie was actually the secret xbox fanatic, but I learned quickly how to keep up with her. As I was about to finish the level, I heard a ruckus at the door.

"Come in!" I yelled from the family room. I glanced over to see Edward carrying a pizza box and Emmett with a box of beer. "Hi guys, just give me a second...I must kill... this last zombie..." I said as I focused on the screen intently. "God I love the shotgun..." I mumbled to myself. Emmett came running over to the TV.

"No way! You play Halo? Jasper... she plays!" Emmett threw himself to the floor next to me and started bouncing like Alice.

"Finish for me." I flipped him the controller and headed over to Edward who was putting the beer in the refrigerator.

"Bella is this...you're playing at a legendary skill level? Holy shit!" Emmett called into the other room.

"If it's too hard for you Emmett you can stop and change it to easy" I yelled back, actually making Edward snort.

"He takes his Halo very seriously Bella, you just may have started a war..." Edward warned, not knowing just how capable of defending myself, I was. I gave him a wink and a hug.

"What was that for?" He asked laughing.

"No reason." I mumbled. "Come on you guys, lets eat this pizza."

I put out some plates for them and they made themselves at home. Jasper and Emmett grabbed a pile of pizza and ran back to the couch to play the video games while Edward and I sat at the counter catching up.

"Bella, how many controllers do you have?" Jasper called.

"Four, and yes I will play head to head if you want, but I warn you, I am really good. Or we can do teams." I said winking at Edward.

"OK teams, but you get Edward, he sucks." Jasper laughed.

"I'll take him, and maybe I'll even teach him a thing or two." I held my hand out to Edward who had a dazzling smile on his face and led him to the couch where Emmett and Jasper were waiting. Since the couch was full with the three of them, I decided to sit on the floor, between Edwards legs. I turned around and smiled at him as we set the game up.

"Don't embarrass me Edward..." I teased.

The game started and I had never heard so much swearing in all my life. Emmett and Jasper would launch into these cursing tirades when they died. Unfortunately for them, I failed to mention my superior skills with the sniper rifle, rendering them completely helpless...out of nowhere, I'd fire a shot from my hiding space, wiping them out. Edward eventually put down his controller and started massaging my shoulders because I was doing fine all by myself.

"Who taught you to play like that?" Emmett asked when it was all over, totally stunned.

I shrugged my shoulders "Rosalie." Ten different emotions danced across Emmett's face, wonder, shock, amazement, and finally he settled on lust. Apparently, another reason for him to want her...

I set down my controller "Here you guys play, I am going to warm up some soup." I got up off the floor and headed into the kitchen. I took the leftover chicken noodle soup out of the refrigerator, and bent down to find a pot to warm it up in. When I stood back up, Edward was in the kitchen, leaning against the counter, watching me.

"Yes?" I asked as I dumped the soup into the pot.

"Nothing, just watching you make soup. Is that OK?" He pushed himself off the counter and inched his way closer to me.

"Um, sure, watch away." I mumbled as I grabbed the wooden spoon and started nervously stirring the soup. I could feel him moving closer and closer, until I felt his body make contact with my back. He leaned his head to the left and gently pressed his lips to my neck.

"What... are you doing?" I sputtered, trying to control my now heavy breathing. He laughed and his warm breath flowed over my skin.

"I am not violating any rules by doing this, don't worry...another loophole." Thank God for loopholes I thought, my hands starting to shake as I stirred.

"Here, let me help you with that." He took his right hand and reached around my body, putting his hand on mine and helping me stir the soup on the stove. His left arms snaked around my waist.

"Edward..." I quietly moaned.

"Yes Bella?"

But before I could answer, he started kissing my shoulder and across the back of my neck to my other shoulder. "That is so...not fair..." I mumbled as I leaned my body back into his as my knees went weak.

His mouth moved up to my ear and I could hear his breathing had picked up too as he whispered. "Did I tell you how sexy you looked in your pajamas? Do you know the only

thing that would make it sexier? If you were wearing one of my t-shirts..." He gave a little tug on the side of my shirt and I couldn't take it anymore. Even though I was blushing three shades of red, I spun around and faced him to see the biggest grin on his face.

"You, need to take three steps back mister.." I said poking him in the chest. He held his hands up in surrender and took three of the smallest steps ever away from me, all the while, smirking at me. "That kind of thing isn't going to help us win the bet. As a matter of fact, that kind of thing will make me lose it, right here and now, while Emmett and Jasper watch!" I hissed at him, of course that only made him smile more.

"Really?" His eyes twinkled with excitement.

"Yeah, really. Now come on, haven't you noticed Emmett is on the phone giving someone, I'll guess Rosalie the play by play. I feel like I'm in some horrible porno.." I turned to Emmett who tried to hide the phone under his leg. "Emmett, if you want to watch something, go to channel 823 and the code to unlock the porn is ROSE!" I yelled.

I heard him say "Gotta go." And click the phone shut quickly.

I took the soup and poured it into a bowl. "You, stay here." I pointed at the side of the counter in the kitchen. Edward obediently stood at the counter. I took my soup and walked around to the stools on the other side and sat down. Hopefully the piece of granite between us would be enough distance to allow me to have a coherent thought. When Edward leaned his chest across the counter, green eyes blazing, I knew I was in trouble. I am soooo screwed...

"OK, we have to come up with a plan Edward...they are obviously conspiring against us. Here's my suggestion, do you guys work on Saturday?" He barely shook his head no, his eyes still burning into mine. "So, when Rose and Alice get back, I need Emmett to invite Rosalie and me to the car show with him. I have to go so it won't be a date and I can spy on them. She should be putty in his hands...Then you need to get Jasper to invite Alice shopping and you go with them. Just make up something about needing a new outfit...she loves to dress people. That should push her to the edge..." Edward's forehead crinkled in concern.

"Well when do I get to see you?" He pouted.

"You don't, but I'll have my phone so you can just call me. Focus on the end result, the sooner we get them out of the bet, the sooner we win." He took the spoon out of my bowl and took a sip of soup, then slowly licked his lips to get the last drop off the side of his mouth. "Yeah...we really need to hurry up and win this bet." I mumbled as I turned on my heel and went back over to the couch.

Emmett and Jasper had realized I was just kidding about the porn channel and had gone back to playing games. I sat safely on one end of the couch and pointed at the opposite end when Edward came over to sit. He rolled his eyes and sighed, but sat on his corner and twirled a piece of hair on top of his head as he stared at me with a flirtatious expression on his face.

Even with all the yelling Emmett and Jasper were doing, I was getting really sleepy. When I could barely keep my eyes open, I crawled across the couch, laid my head in Edward's lap and continued watching the two idiots play. He gently stroked my hair and arm as I laid there with him, making me relax totally. In a matter of minutes, I was sound asleep.

I heard quiet voices and felt myself jerk awake. "What's going on?" I asked utterly disoriented, rubbing my eyes in an attempt to get them to function. Edward's arms were around me, as I felt him lift me off the couch.

"We are going home sleepy head. You need your rest." He said sweetly, as I nuzzled my head to his chest.

"Emmett, Jasper, wait. Before you leave, go snoop around in the girls rooms, you never know what you might find. Emmett, top drawer, Jasper top shelf in the closet, blue box." I managed to get out before Edward had me inside my bedroom, laying me down in my bed.

I scurried under the blankets and put my head on my pillow so I could see Edward's face. He was perched on the edge of my bed and was looking at the flowers he had sent me, which were sitting on my dresser.

"Good thing you were already in your pajamas or I would have had to change you." He teased. I swatted him with a pillow.

"You wish.."

"I most certainly do!" He laughed, making the bed shake gently.

"I wish you could stay... I don't like it when you leave." I whispered.

"I don't like leaving you either. It gets harder every time." The sincerity of his admission, made me smile.

"Thanks for coming over tonight and keeping me company." I said as I stifled a yawn. He brushed the hair off my face and kissed my cheek.

"You truly are the most beautiful creature I've ever seen, Bella. Sleep well." I closed my eyes and heard the squeak of my bed springs as he stood up to leave.

"Goodnight Edward." I whispered.

"Goodnight Bella." He said as he shut the door.

A bit of filler working to the big performance...hope you liked it! Alice is running away in the poll. Review please ;)

Chapter: 15

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

I'm sure some of you are looking at the title of this chapter and thinking what the hell is she thinking? Since I take so much pleasure in torturing the vile Mike Newton, I decided to pay tribute to his stupidity by naming the chapter after him. Yes, it is a safe bet he makes an appearance in this chapter and he will of course be made a fool of by...ME! Enjoy.

Mike

BPOV

B: This blows!

E: This blows more!!

B: Just call me already...my fingers hurt from typing.

"What were we thinking?" I asked, as the phone finally rang in my hand.

"This was your plan there chief, not mine. As I recall, I protested because I didn't get to see you at all today..." Edward grumbled at me.

"Where are you now?" I asked as I climbed into the car.

"I am lying on a bench outside some underwear store." Edward sighed.

"They are in there alone? Are you nuts? Alice could be doing some sexy fashion show for him or dragging him into the dressing room. Get in there and keep an eye on them Edward!" I nearly shouted at him.

"Please don't make me go in there...a single guy should not enter that pink and frilly place alone. The sales girls are downright scary. Now if you were with me, that would be totally different."

"Well, I'm not. Get your butt in there. The whole reason I am here and you are there is to get them to break so get in there and make a few suggestive remarks to fire up Jasper. Someone has to cave..." And I'll be damned if it's me. I thought to myself.

I heard a big groan as Edward stood up from his bench. "Fine. I'll go in, but you are staying on the phone with me. Going in...oh lord, here comes the sales girl to help me..." I could hear the little tramp's flirty voice on the other end of the phone

"Can I help you sir?"

"Um, no... I am just looking for my friends. There they are, thank you."

"If you need anything...my name is Jessica, I'd be happy to help you." She stressed the

'anything' a bit more that I liked.

"EDWARD!" I shouted into the phone "Go find Alice and stop flirting."

"I wasn't the one flirting and unbuttoning my blouse at a customer." He grumbled.

"She did what?!" I screeched. He started laughing hysterically.

"That's what you get for sending me into this store alone. OK, I see them, Alice is shopping for um, things..." he trailed off.

"That's really specific Edward. What things? And where is Jasper?"

"Jasper has a pile of lace panties in his hand right now and looks like he wants to die... I think Alice is looking at... what are they, head bands...oh nope, thongs. OK she's moving over to the really tiny pajama section. Uh oh, here comes that barracuda again..."

"Sir, have you found anything you like? I would be happy to try on that garter belt there for you, so you can see what it looks like on..." I heard her evil little voice purr to him.

"Edward, why do you have a garter belt in your hand?" I teased.

"What? No I don't...I'm sorry miss, I don't need any help but thanks." Edward sputtered.

"My name is Jessica...what's yours?" I heard her giggling in the background.

"Get out of there Edward. You are obviously too cute for your own good. If that girl follows you, let me know, I'll call Alice for backup." I laughed and heard him sigh in relief.

"Freedom..." He mumbled as I heard the bags he was carrying, crunching over the phone. "I am now safely back on my bench, but the salesgirl is staring out the window at me. I think she just blew me a kiss...EW. So how's the car show?"

"Hell on Earth. I how many cars does one need to see? I think we've walked ten miles, and of course you have to sit in every stinking car, making it take twice as long. Who cares what car they may make in three years??" I grumbled.

"How are Emmett and Rosalie? Anything there?" He asked, hopeful.

"No, but did you see what she is wearing? She is causing the biggest commotion. I mean really? Who wears a mini skirt to the car show with thigh high leather boots and a deep v-neck blouse? Every time she leans over to check out an engine, I can actually hear men gasp out loud! Would you like to know what color underwear she's wearing?" I laughed.

"Green lace."

"How the hell did you know that?!"

"Emmett told me."

"Did he call you or something?"

"No...I knew this morning."

"I'm totally confused."

"Remember the other night when we were over and you sent him into Rosalie's room? He went into her top drawer.."

"Right, her 'special occasion underwear' drawer, so?"

"Well, I guess he kinda...picked out exactly what he wanted her to wear to the car show. He started with the underwear and then looked in her closet for the rest. He also left her a very raunchy note, which I will not repeat any part of, to go along with the outfit."

"Well, that explains a lot! I just figured he'd take a pair and she'd freak out about it."

"He did that too..." Edward laughed. "They're hanging from the rear view mirror of his Jeep!"

"The two of them together, frightens me sometimes!" I giggled.

"So what are you doing?"

"I'm hiding out in the back of some convertible now. I swear if one more guy here asks me if I'd like to 'check under his hood'...OR calls me 'Little Lady' I may just take hostages."

"At least you aren't carrying around five shopping bags."

"At least you don't reek like new car smell...I'm getting dizzy."

"Oh, Alice has made her purchases and Jasper has a goofy grin on his face, that's good, right? Ugh, Pottery Barn. I don't need to go in there do I? I see a bench near a TV, I could go sit over there... There's nothing sexual about Pottery Barn right?"

"Not to Alice! Get in there...all those coordinated items can whip her into a frenzy! I'm gonna go...Rosalie just found the \$250,000 concept car and is rubbing her body against it. Emmett is clutching his chest...gotta go!"

"Bye Bella"

"Bye Edward"

I flopped down onto the couch after spending the entire day with Rosalie and Emmett at the car show. They blabbered on and on about the different models, new V6 engines, horsepower and other crap that meant nothing to me. All I knew, was my plan to have them get caught in the back of one of the cars in a compromising position failed miserably! The closest I got, was when Emmett would whisper something in her ear and press her against an expensive car. I shuddered at the thought of what he might have actually said to make her blush so often.

Emmett and Rose were locked in an epic video game battle when the door flew open. Edward stood in the doorway, glowing, like a man returning home from battle, his arms draped in an obscene number of shopping bags.

"Edward!" I squealed as I launched myself onto his arms. I heard the bags drop to the ground and felt his arms wrap tightly around my waist, lifting me onto my toes. I gave him a big kiss on the cheek as I squeezed his neck with all my might. "You survived!"

"I'll go shopping with Alice more often, if that's the welcome home I get!" Edward laughed as he kissed the top of my head and put my feet back firmly on the ground. "You do smell like a new car!"

"If you two are done, some of us would actually like to get through the door now." Jasper teased as he came in the apartment with another armful of bags.

"Bella, wait until you see what I got you!!!!!" Alice squealed.

"It better not be that pile of panties Jasper had in his hand earlier..." I said, carefully watching her reaction. She turned and raised an accusing eyebrow at me.

"Spying on us were you?" she said as she walked closer to me, waving her index finger in my face. "Shame on you Bella." She turned on Edward "And you- her accomplice...sorry to disappoint, but I was a perfect little angel wasn't I, Jazz?" Alice asked proudly. Jasper nodded his head in agreement as he continued delivering the bags to Alice's room.

"Better luck next time." I mumbled to Edward as he motioned me over to the recliner with him. He sat down and held out his arms for me to join him.

"Another loophole." He beamed. I happily crawled into his lap and snuggled my head against his chest, playing with the buttons on his shirt. Alice came out of her room, opened her mouth to protest, and then scowled at Edward, before stomping off to her room.

"I told you so." Edward laughed triumphantly. I closed my eyes and enjoyed being so close to him, feeling his breath on my neck and listening to his gentle heart beat. I'm not sure how long we sat there until I heard him let out a big sigh.

"You have to go don't you?" I pouted.

"Unfortunately we do...how will the drunks get fed otherwise?" he said sarcastically.

"Can you stay five more minutes please?" I asked, unleashing my pleading brown eyes on him. He glanced at his watch and smiled.

"Fine, we can stay... ten minutes. Then I will have to drive...oh... 60 miles and hour to get us to work on time. That should be fine. Ten minutes, got it guys?" Emmett gave him a thumbs up from his spot on the couch, with Rosalie. Jasper yelled "OK" from Alice's room where we could hear the bags rustling around as they put her purchases away. His green eyes looked back at me, smiling. "Happy?"

"Yes, very." I placed my head back onto his chest and relaxed for the last few minutes we had together before they had to go to work. I felt his warm hand caressing the length of my back over and over as I relaxed further into his body.

The ten minutes passed, and again, I felt him glance at his watch and sigh. Emmett didn't move from Rosalie's side and I gripped his shirt even tighter to try and hold him in place.

"Fine, five more minutes, but now I have to drive 80 miles and hour and we will still be five minutes late...hopefully no one will notice." He mumbled as his fingers laced with mine. He pulled my hand to his mouth and began kissing a trail, from my wrist to my shoulder.

"Gotta love the loopholes..." I mumbled.

"Is that legal?" I heard Emmett ask from the couch.

"Yes, you idiot. So why don't you take a page from Edward's book and figure out a few ways around these stupid rules?" I heard Rosalie snarl at Emmett. Edward and I started laughing when she pushed him off the couch after he tried to duplicate Edward's kissing technique. She muttered. "Something original Emmett."

Way too soon, the five minutes were over. "Come on guys. Jasper...we need to roll." Edward yelled. Jasper came out of Alice's room, holding a wide array of different hanger shapes and styles across his arms, looking like a six foot tall, hanger tree. Alice quickly snatched them off his arms and gave him a small kiss before he put his jacket on.

"Have fun at work." I said as Edward searched his pocket for his keys.

"Unless you are there with me, there's nothing fun about work." He said as he gave me a quick peck on the lips. I was slightly stunned because he had never kissed me on the lips before. My face must have shown my shock because he smiled and whispered "Breathe Bella. I'll call you later." Before he headed to the door.

"Bye Edward."

"Bye beautiful."

"Rosalie, where the hell is she?" I asked while I hopped through my bedroom trying to cram myself into the new black skinny jeans I had let Rosalie and Alice talk me into during our shopping trip. I had on a sleeveless metallic silver top to go along with it and a pair of comfy heels.

It had been the longest four days of our lives, waiting for the night of the guys big show. Edward said Wednesdays were typically less crowded, so they would be able to do their show without throwing the whole club into chaos. Rosalie was in my room, clamping yet another bangle bracelet around her wrist and cursing Alice as well.

"She had a meeting, but she knows they are coming to pick us up soon. If she's not ready, then we have to drive ourselves." Rosalie said pouting. I knew she really wanted to cuddle up with Emmett in the car. She was opening her cell phone to call Alice again, when we heard the door fly open and the rapid clicking of Alice's heels across the hardwood floor as she made a b-line for her room.

"I know I 'm late I 'm going to jump in the shower...I will be ready! Warm up the blow dryer!" She screamed. "Stupid, blabbering clients!"

In an amazing show of speed and skill, Alice Brandon was read to go in eighteen minutes, her own, personal world record. She beamed proudly as she sprayed her last puff of perfume onto her neck. "And with three minutes to spare." She bragged proudly glancing at the clock.

"OK ladies, are we prepared for this? I have a feeling they have quite the production planned from what Jasper has said." Alice grinned. "Tonight could be the night someone falls by the wayside."

"Not me." I said emphatically.

"Me neither." Rosalie added with conviction.

"I'm just saying, they are pretty irresistible under regular circumstances. Add music, lights, alcohol, and them shaking their asses, it might just be too much to bear." She said winking at Rosalie who had glazed over in her own personal daydream.

"Do we know what their demands are for this little performance?" Rosalie asked, snapping out of her trance.

"No. Apparently Edward will tell us when they pick us up. If we agree, then there is a show. If not, no bar tricks." Alice said suspiciously. "Has he said anything to you Bella about what they expect as payment?"

"I never even asked." I laughed.

"He's a tricky one that Edward...that's why he's waiting until the last minute to tell us, so we are more likely to go along with it, whatever it is." Alice said, her brow furrowed.

"Actually Alice, I think he's trying to make sure you go along with it. I doubt Bella and I will put up much of a fight no matter what they ask for." Rosalie said with a smirk in my direction. I started laughing, because it was way too true. Alice was the rule keeper, Rose and I were constantly looking for ways to bend the rules.

Before the discussion could go any farther, there was a rapid knock on the door. All three of us gave a silent scream as we squeezed hands. I put my hands to my cheeks and felt the warmth of my blush rushing to my face. Please God let me make it through tonight. I silently prayed as I took a deep breath. Alice danced over to the door to reveal the guys, all looking incredibly sexy in their black leather jackets, with grins plastered on their faces.

Emmett let out a low whistle as he entered the apartment. "Ladies, you look incredibly hot this evening." His eyes spent an extra long time looking Rosalie up and down. I wonder if he picked her underwear for this evening as well. I laughed to myself.

"Thanks Emmett. There are these cute bartenders at the club. We're kinda trying to get their attention." I said laughing as Edward came over and wrapped his arms around me. I could smell the leather from his jacket as he pulled me closer.

"You look, stunning." His velvet voice said in my ear. "And you have my undivided attention."

"I know. That's what's driving me so crazy right now." I mumbled into his coat, not expecting him to hear it. When I felt his fingers lift my chin up to his face and looked into his eyes, I knew he had heard every word by the devilish smile on his face.

"Edward, we need to talk business." Alice barked, saving me from attacking him in the middle of the living room. That was close...we need to get out of here...I need air. Cold, cold, air...Edward's hand slipped into mine as we walked over to the kitchen where the other four were talking.

"Ok Alice. Here are our demands." Edward began looking at his partners in crime who were both nodding their heads in support. "Breakfast, tomorrow."

"Breakfast? You want us to make you breakfast tomorrow?" Alice asked. I think I saw relief wash over her. She assumed Edward would demand something much worse. I glanced back at Edward and could tell by his eyes, that it wasn't as benign a demand as she thought.

"No, we want to be able to feed each of you breakfast, tomorrow...alone." I felt him give my hand a small squeeze. There is no way she is going to go for this. Great no show... I began to get bummed.

"Alone constitutes a date Edward, no can do."

"How is eating breakfast a date? No one goes on breakfast dates. Dates are afternoon or evening activities, this is a breakfast meeting. Just a meeting. We have some things to discuss with you, privately." He should really go into sales because I am totally buying his line of bull shit. I looked over at Rosalie who was biting her lip, waiting for Alice's decision. Alice however, was locked in a massive stare down with Edward, who just smiled sweetly at her, like a choir boy, the picture of innocence. Jasper gave her shoulder a small squeeze and I saw her resolve fade a bit.

"And what do we have to discuss at this meeting?" She sneered. Jasper bent over and whispered a quick explanation which seemed to appease her, but her guard was still up.

"A breakfast 'meeting'. Breakfast ends at 10:30 am...we need to be home by then. Got it? All other rules are to be enforced. If we are even one minute late, we are out of the bet. Ladies, do you agree?" Before she even finished her sentence Rosalie and I were nodding our heads in agreement.

"Excellent." Edward said as he extended his hand to Alice to make the arrangement binding. Emmett and Jasper exchanged a look that told me they were impressed by Edward's negotiating skills. When Edward turned back to face me, he looked absolutely thrilled

"Then let's go ladies, we have a show to perform. We'll go warm up the cars, meet us downstairs." Jasper said as he jingled the keys in his hand and nodded to the door. Edward and Emmett followed right behind.

When they were safely out of earshot I turned to Alice "Well you were very accommodating..." I still was shocked she agreed to the whole thing.

"Come one Bella, I thought Edward would have come up with something better than that! He didn't think that through very well. I mean they are working tonight, not until close, but well past midnight. They are going to be so tired in the morning, they probably won't even roll out of bed until 9:00 at the earliest, That's why I said we had to be home by 10:30...they'll only have time to feed us and bring us home. HA! The score is Alice 1, Edward 0 for today." She said proudly. Rose looked at me with an annoyed look on her face, like it was my fault Edward's plan sucked rocks.

What was he thinking? They will be exhausted after work. I finally get to be alone with Edward and he's going to be a zombie. Great! I still couldn't shake the feeling I was missing something. Edward is smarter than that, I'd just have to wait.

When we got to the club, the guys brought us with them through the employee entrance around the back. As soon as we walked in the door, Vicki came rushing our way.

"Ladies! Long time no see. How are you? Are these guys behaving themselves?" she said eying Emmett in particular.

"Hi Vicki. We've missed you too, and yes, the boys are behaving." Alice said with a wink. She pulled a large gift from behind her back and held it out to her.

"Merry Christmas from Bella, Rose and of course, me." Alice said, pointing at herself and smiling. Vicki's eyes grew huge as she looked at the package. She popped off the bow first and stuck it in the middle of Jasper's chest. Like a little kid, she ripped off the shiny red paper, tossing it carelessly to the ground and squealed.

"Oh my God! These are the most bad ass boots I have ever see in my entire life! Steve is going to shit himself." She threw the box to the ground and held the boots in her hands, admiring them. Edward nodded his head in agreement.

We searched everywhere in Portland for the coolest motorcycle boots we could find that just 'screamed' Vicki. These were black leather with the Jack Daniels logo on the front of them. Around the ankle was a studded harness and a number 7 buckle. We laughed as Vicki kicked off her current boots, tossed them into the trashcan and jumped into her new boots

"How did we do on the size? Alice is usually pretty good about that kind of thing." I asked.

"They fit like a glove." She kept looking down at her feet and smiling. "You ladies are unbelievable." She turned to the boys and in a very motherly voice said "If you bozos blow it with these girls I will personally hunt you down and kick you square in the ass... with these fabulous boots." All three of them rolled their eyes at her, but when she took a step toward them, they threw up their hands in surrender.

"We're glad you like them Vicki. You are the worlds greatest fly swatter you know. Thanks, for everything." Rosalie said as she looked lovingly over at Emmett. We exchanged hugs with her as the guys ran off to change for work.

"Come on, I have your table waiting for you." Vicki led us upstairs to the table we sat at on our first night at the Downunder. The little blue reserved sign sat on the table and we had the best view in the house of the bar. Vicki sat down in one of the chairs and propped her foot on the table so she could admire the boots again. She started rolling her pant legs up asking, "So have they told you anything about what they have planned?"

"No, do you know anything?" Alice asked clapping her hands together in excitement. "Have they been practicing? Are they any good? Has anyone got hurt from the flying bottles?"

"Yeah, we've had quite a few broken bottles and glasses around here lately as they try their new moves out. I think they really want to impress you." She laughed. "Of course, I get the feeling they could spin in a little circle and say ta-da and you girls would still be pretty impressed."

"They are a pretty impressive trio." I laughed with her as we watched Alice and Rosalie wave to Emmett and Jasper from the rail.

"I gotta go work I guess. I'll bring you some food. Go down there and dance for a while until it's time for the show." Vicki headed downstairs with a new strut in her step thanks to her boots. I saw her stop and show them to one of the other servers before disappearing through the kitchen door.

"Bella? Bella Swan?" I heard a male voice say from the next table. I turned to see a big, blond haired guy who looked vaguely familiar. He was sitting with another guy who I know I had never seem before. The blond stood up and came over to our table.

"Bella. Do you remember me? Mike, Mike Newton. We met at your mom's house over the

summer.” He held out his hand to me and I shook it while racking my brain to remember him. Then it dawned on me, Renee’s annual pool party which also became her annual ‘find Bella a boyfriend’ party. She was notorious for inviting only her friends with son’s my age, hoping to play matchmaker.

“Hi Mike, I remember you now, the pool party.” I smiled, he nodded his head in agreement. “What are you doing in Portland?” I could remember nothing about him other than he followed me around at the party and was extremely boring. Looks like nothing’s changed. I thought as he sat down in the open chair and waved his friend over to our table as well.

“Bella this is Eric. Eric, this is Bella Swan. Our moms are good friends.” Ugh, Newton had been one of the names Renee had rambled on about the other day on the phone. I think they were coming to the house while I was home... great!

“Actually, I just got a job down here working for Newman Insurance, I work as an actuary.” He continued rambling and pointing at Eric, but I wasn’t listening anymore, I tuned out. OH God, flashbacks to dates with boring guys. Why is he still talking? How much cologne does one man need to wear on his body? And that Eric guy is creepy, almost weasel-like. My head was starting to throb when I saw Rose, who looked like she was going to deck Mike if he didn’t shut up.

Alice threw back her chair and squealed “OOOHH I love this song. Sorry guys, we’re gonna go dance for a while. Nice meeting you!” And with that, she and Rose snuck away, leaving me with the two bookends. Eric’s eyes followed Alice as she made her way onto the dance floor. Mike of course, was still talking.

“Your mom was supposed to give you my number so we could meet up sometime.” He leaned closer to me and I saw him reaching for his cell phone. “Can I get your number?” He asked, holding up his phone. I quickly took it from his hand and entered the only number I could...Mama Rosa’s. Hey, he’s new in town, at least he gets the number for the best pizza joint in town out of this. I told myself as I quickly gave it back to him. I have to make a break for it.

“Here you go Mike. Hey, I really need to get down there to my friends. I’ll see you around.” I gave him a pat on the hand and smiled at Eric. “Nice to meet you! Take care.” And with that, I ran for my life all the way to the dance floor where I found Alice and Rose happily dancing.

“Thanks for leaving me back there...nice friends you two are.” I fumed as I joined them. “Abandoning me in my hour of need.”

“Oh come on Bella, before Edward, you would have found him perfectly acceptable dating material.” Alice teased throwing her head back and laughing.

That was before Edward. My eyes scanned the bar for his perfect face. He was talking to Jasper and laughing about something. His hand was on Jaspers shoulder and he was smacking his other hand on the bar. His smile was contagious. How did I ever get so lucky? I asked myself now smiling uncontrollably. He was all I wanted, all I needed.

“Come on, let’s dance over there where the view is better.” Rosalie grinned as we wiggled our way closer to the bar. Alice was trying to teach me a new move when I felt someone standing right behind me. I immediately glanced at the bar and saw Edward hard at work. It’s not him. Who the hell... Around my shoulder came Mike, and Eric was

lurking behind Alice, watching her move to the music.

"Can we join you ladies?" Mike asked in a smooth voice. Rosalie, apparently in need of some entertainment, said with a flirty laugh "Sure guys, join us!" Alice and I both shot her death rays, but she shrugged and kept dancing a safe distance from the two intruders.

Mike started dancing right in front of me, blocking my view of the bar and of Alice and Rosalie. His body thrashed around and somehow he managed to dance off the beat completely. I was mortified to be dancing anywhere near him and even more embarrassed for him. After a few minutes, I realized it was probably good I couldn't see Rose or Alice because I might burst out laughing at the absurdity of it all. I tried to look at the floor, allowing my hair to fall into my face as a protective cocoon from his offensive dancing, but I could still see his shoes, flailing around in front of me. I tried casually scanning the room, looking at the person next to me, the ceiling, over his shoulder...anywhere other than directly in his face. He on the other hand, stared mostly at my breasts, which was starting to creep me out.

I did some weird spin move and managed to get in front of Mike again. He's probably staring at my ass now, but at least I can't see him doing it. I thought as I danced. Alice was on my right and Rose was on my left, waving her arm wildly to get Emmett's attention. Once Emmett saw our predicament, he gave Edward a shove and pointed to us on the dance floor and together they doubled over in laughter. I could feel Mike vibrating around behind me, but couldn't bring myself to see what the hell he was doing back there. Annoyed, I flipped them the bird, which only made them laugh harder.

I felt Mike 'accidentally' bump into me and grab my waist "Sorry." He mumbled in my ear. I shuddered in disgust. I glanced over at Alice who chose to shoot Eric dirty looks to try and repel him, but he seemed to find it a turn on and moved closer to her, doing some horrible popping moves he saw in a music video I'm sure. Out of nowhere, Jasper appeared and scooped Alice up in his arms, and took her over to the safety of the bar. I, on the other hand, was left with mister touchy who continued leaning into me. When I felt his hand graze my rear, I snapped. Digging into my pocket, I pulled out my cell phone and dialed.

I couldn't make out words through the laughter and gasps I heard, when Edward picked up. I was only standing 20 feet away, glaring at him while Mike stroked my hair.

"Is...he...is he ...petting you now?" Edward gasped.

"Yes, he was petting my ass a minute ago, I'm glad he's moved farther North!" I growled. I watched Edward wipe the tears out of his eyes.

"I'm glad this is so amusing to you."

"Does he suffer from a neurological disorder that causes him to have erratic muscle spasms? And how does he manage to dance completely off the beat like that?" Even I had to laugh at that...it was pretty pathetic.

"Can you please come save me?? Please?" I begged, unfortunately I saw his mouth hang open as he looked over my shoulder, at Mike. "What is he doing?" I asked paralyzed with fear.

"He's pretending to smack your ass! HA! Don't turn around...whatever you do..."

"Edward Mason get your ass out here and save me!" I hissed into the phone.

"Come on Bella, he looks like he's really enjoying himself...oh look out, he's preparing a spin move..." As Edward said it Mike's body flew in front of me, a huge grin on his face. He turned around so I was facing his back and I think he intended the move to impress me, however when he did his version of a booty drop, he looked like he was crapping in the woods rather than dancing seductively. I looked over at Edward and Emmett who were hysterical now...Rose had abandoned me and was now standing at the bar with them. I was alone, dancing with a retard.

Mike finished dumping his load on the dance floor and turned back to face me. I still had the phone pressed to my ear, waiting for the laughter to stop. Then Mike came right up along side of me and started rubbing himself on my hip. That was it...

"Edward...Edward can you hear me?" I saw Edward look up at me and nodded his head as he laughed.

"He just rubbed his JUNK on my leg. What do you think about that?" The smile immediately left his face and I watched him slam the phone onto the bar top, while catapulting himself over top of it. I folded my phone shut and waited for my rescue. Mike, completely oblivious, continued gyrating on my hip.

Edward stalked over to where we were dancing and I just glared at him. "It's all fun and games until some creepy guy rubs his penis on my leg huh Edward?" He didn't say a word to me, he simply bent over, wrapped his arms around my knees and hoisted me over his shoulder. I felt the blood rushing to my head and screamed in surprise as my hair covered my face. I couldn't hear what he said to Mike, but when he turned to go back towards the bar, I could see Mike, standing on the dance floor, completely stunned. I waved a quick goodbye and punched Edward in the hip.

He walked me past the bar and down the hallway we came though when we arrived. "Where are you taking me? Put me down!" I demanded as I started to kick my legs. All he did was laugh and tighten his grip on me. Finally, when we were in a small room with a couch, a TV and a coffee machine my feet hit the ground.

"Thank you for the caveman style rescue." I sneered. Edward stood incredibly close to me, trying to hold back a smile. Glad one of us is amused.

"Are going to say anything like 'Sorry I left you out there with a creepy guy Bella' or 'I'm an idiot Bella, please forgive me' how about 'Bella are you alright?' Any of that ringing a bell?" The madder I got the more he started to smile.

Finally, he moved toward me and put his hand on either side of my face. "Bella, are you alright?" I tried to stay mad at him, but the longer he looked at me with those damn green eyes, the harder it was. And with him so close, it was almost impossible.

"Yes, Edward, I'm fine. Just completely grossed out that's all." I said with a smile. "Do you have any hand sanitizer handy?"

"What am I going to do with you? Every time you dance you have a run in with an uninvited dancer." he smiled.

"Well, it's only happened twice, once it was horrifying, the other time it was...pretty great." I sighed as his thumbs gently caressed my cheeks. I took a moment to enjoy the memory of my first dance with Edward.

"Do me a favor. Don't move." He whispered as he looked down at me. My entire body froze, all I could do was stare into his mesmerizing eyes and wait. When he was no more than an inch from my face, I closed my eyes. As I did, I felt the explosive warmth of his lips on mine. Every part of me was tingling as the adrenaline pulsed through my body. He pulled my face tightly against his for a second, and then as quickly as the innocent kiss began, it ended.

"Impressive..." I mumbled. My eyes were still closed, our foreheads touching.

"Thank you." Edward laughed. "Are you still mad?"

"If I said yes, would you kiss me again?" I asked coyly.

"I can kiss you like this whenever I want Bella, loophole..."

"Then kiss me again, please." And before I even had time to finish the sentence, his lips were on mine and my head was swimming. "I could get used to this..." I mumbled against his li

"Me too."

"Hey guys what are you..." Emmett got no farther into his sentence before he froze and turned on his heel "Never mind...as you were...ROSALIE!!!!" I heard him scream as he ran down the hall. I took Edward by the hand.

"Come on, before Emmett tells her we were dancing naked in the rain." I laughed, as I wiped the hint of lipstick off of his lips with my thumb.

We walked back out to the bar, and Edward pointed to an empty stool "Sit here, so I can keep an eye on you." he winked. I sat quietly, watching Edward make drink after drink. He slid a Cosmo over to me when he had a minute with extra cherries. I thanked him and he went back to work.

Alice and Rose flew to my side when they found me "So did you do it? Do you have anything to confess??" They asked excitedly. I shook my head no, shrugging.

"Wait a minute, Emmett said you kissed Edward. He saw you..." Rosalie said, confused.

"I did kiss him, but just on the lips, I kept my tongue to myself...that's within the rules." I smiled, remembering how wonderful it felt to have his lips on mine. Alice and Rosalie just continued to look at me with a puzzled look on their faces.

"Why are you still waiting to use your one kiss?" Alice asked.

"A back room of the club is not the way I imagined our first real kiss...I'm saving it." I said plainly. Of course the real reason was a bit more complicated than that, but my answer should be enough to appease them for now.

"You are stronger than I gave you credit for Bella. You may just win this thing." Rose complimented me. "Come on, let's go dance." She suggested, giving my arm a small tug.

"You two, go, I'm done dancing for now...you never know who may still be lurking on that dance floor." I said with a laugh, remembering the spastic dancing of Mike Newton. Alice and Rose smiled and headed off into the crowd. As they left, a new group of girls gathered around next to me. Total barflies I thought to myself.

They cackled on about how cute the bartenders were, each picking their favorite. I was glad Rose was safely off dancing when the one girl started mentioning all the things she wanted to do to Emmett. Rose would have ripped her limb from limb. I watched as they tried to flirt with Emmett who just politely smiled and moved to the other end of the bar. Jasper wasn't paying them any attention either, he was off to the side and had a glass in his hand he kept twirling, probably practicing for later.

Edward however, kept looking down at me, and smiling like I was the only person in the entire place. Every time our eyes met, my cheeks turned red, but I didn't look away, I couldn't. He started walking over in my direction, and the poor girls next to me thought they had finally got his attention. But then, he walked right past them, without a word, and stood in front of me, taking my hand in his.

"Hello beautiful." He said with a smile on his lips as he kissed the top of my hand. I heard the girls next to me mumble 'Bitch' and storm off.

"Hi there. How's your evening going?" I asked.

"Not too bad. There is this really pretty girl at the bar who keeps staring at me. It is a little distracting at times, but I kinda like it." He said playfully.

"I hear you gave her a little kiss tonight." I played along "How was it?"

"I believe she said impressive, I thought it was more along the lines of... exquisite." It was pretty darn exquisite I thought to myself, my pulse racing at the memory. Before I could catch my now ragged breath to say anything, Jasper came over and interrupted us.

"20 minutes until show time Edward. Bella, you may want to go hunt down Rosalie and Alice." He looked down at our still interlocked hands, smiled and patted Edward on the back. "Or maybe not just yet..." Then he headed to the other end of the bar.

"I better go get the girls..." I mumbled, still captivated by his face, unable to look away.

"I hope you like the show" he said with a crooked grin on his face. He leaned over the bar to my ear and whispered in a seductive voice "We have something very special planned for you ladies at the end of our little show..."

Shoes, money, eternal bragging rights, shoes, money, eternal bragging rights...

Next chapter is the big show. It will start with the DJ announcing them, and should run through the breakfast meetings. To everyone who wants them to just use her free kiss and get it over with...sorry! You have to wait. It is coming, just not yet, for sure not the next chapter, but soon after that. And you will find out what Jasper did or found in Alice's room, but not until the end of the story. You will also find out what Jasper said to Alice that got her to agree to the breakfast meetings ;)

Alice won last poll hands down...Jacob distant second. New poll is up now!

Review and tell me how I did!

Chapter: 16

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

A bonus: EPOV of Mike's dance to the end, because you asked for it...consider it an early present! I will update again with the bar scene...I promise :)

Exquisite

EPOV

Three dirty martinis and a scotch on the rocks, three dirty martinis and a scotch on the rocks. I kept repeating the order in my head trying to get these drinks out quickly. I was just throwing the olives into the martinis when Emmett's laughter caught my attention. I place the drinks on Vicki's tray as he came over and gave me a shove pointing out on the dance floor.

I saw Rosalie waving her arm and pointing at Bella who was probably 20 feet away from the bar dancing with some big blond guy. Who the hell is that guy I thought for a millisecond, until I actually looked and saw the pained look on Bella's face as he thrashed around behind her body. I could barely breathe from all my laughing. Emmett was doubled over next to me, his body shaking violently with laughter.

"Look at that guy. What a freak!" Emmett laughed, pointing. Bella got an extremely pissed off look on her face when she saw us laughing and flipped us off, which did nothing but make us laugh harder. Jasper was at the other end of the bar and came to see what we were howling about.

"What in the world..." He mumbled as I held a shaking arm out and pointed to the girls. The big blond guy must have had a little weasel friend who was hitting on Alice, because she would take a step away and he would take two steps closer. It was some kind of bizarre dancing chess match.

"Why are you two laughing. We should do something to help them!" Jasper said, his anger rising as the weasel's arm touched Alice's shoulder.

"Bella's a big girl, she can take care of herself. Look at her face, even when she's repulsed, she's beautiful." I laughed, watching my poor Bella cringe every time her body came into contact with his. He pretended to bump into her and put his hands on her hips. Her eyes got huge, so big I thought they might just pop out of her head.

"She looks like a deer in the headlights." Emmett got out, as he gasped for air. "Five bucks says she decks him."

"I'll take that bet. She won't hit him, she'll tell him off before she'll hit him." I laughed.

"I cannot believe you two are willing to sit by and watch your girlfriends be pawed at by some random guy on the dance floor." Jasper snarled. "I will not put up with it!" And he stormed off. I saw him cut through the crowd and wrapped his arms around Alice's waist,

swinging her to safety. He plopped her into a stool and was checking her over for visible markings from her encounter. Satisfied she was unharmed, he hugged her tightly like he just rescued her from a lion attack.

The next thing I knew, my cell phone was vibrating in my pocket. The guy who had been dancing with Alice continued his grotesque version of a popping routine, making the laughter return ten fold as I answered the phone. Then the unimaginable happened, the blond guy started petting Bella's head. What the hell is he thinking? Does he actually think stroking her like a cat is appealing? Oh I hope she doesn't hit him or I'm out five bucks.

"Is ...is...he ...petting you?" I got out as I gasped for air.

"Yes, he was petting my ass a minute ago, I'm glad he's moved farther North!" She growled into the phone. Tears started streaming down my face. "I'm glad this is so amusing to you!" she hissed into the phone. The guy continued his tribute to muscular disorders everywhere with flailing arms and legs.

"Does he suffer from a neurological disorder that causes his to have erratic muscle spasms? And how does he manage to dance completely off the beat like that?" It was amazing, I couldn't dance off beat if I concentrated, and to him, it just came naturally. Bella cracked a smile for the first time since the dork started his 'dance of a million muscle spasms' around her.

"Can you please come save me?? Please?" She begged. I was about to say yes when he took a step back, put one hand out in front of him and moved his other hand in a smacking motion behind her ass. My mouth fell open in shock at his blatant stupidity. Bella's panicked voice brought me out of my stupor.

"What is he doing?"

My laughter returned. "He's pretending to smack your ass! HA! Don't turn around...whatever you do..."

"Edward Mason get your ass out here and save me!" Bella snapped into the phone. I looked back at the blond guy and he had the goofiest grin on his face, like in some weird way, this was the best night of his unfortunate life.

"Come on Bella, he looks like he's really enjoying himself...oh look out, he's preparing a spin move..." In some erratic movement, he spun on his heel like a bad Michael Jackson impersonation and was facing her. He slowly turned his back to her and I could see a big grin on his face. He clumsily dropped his rear to the ground and I heard Bella gasp in horror over the phone. He hovered mid-air like when you don't want to sit on a toilet seat, over the ground and then stood back up.

Emmett started choking he was laughing so hard, and I found myself leaning on the bar, slapping the top of it furiously. Rosalie was unable to take it anymore, and made her way to the bar. "What a complete numskull." She muttered as she pulled up a bar stool and watched the finale of his lame mating dance.

I saw him face her and Emmett started chanting "Hit him, hit him, hit him." And while it would have cost me five bucks, it would have been hilarious to see. As I was catching my breath, I heard her voice in the phone as the guy gyrated on her hip.

"Edward...Edward can you hear me?" I nodded my head yes through the laughter. She

gave me a sarcastic smile and said "He just rubbed his JUNK on my leg. What do you think about that?"

He did what? My mind roared. I'll hit him myself. All my laughter immediately stopped and I was filled with...jealousy. Insane, blinding, jealousy.

Before I knew what hit me, I had slammed the phone on the bar top and used my arms to spring myself over the bar. Relief flooded Bella's beautiful face, but there was also anger, directed at me, that I had to face. She glared at me and said "It's all fun and games until some creepy guy rubs his penis on my leg huh Edward?"

I couldn't speak, all I wanted to do was get her out of there, away from him and his repulsive body. No one touches her but me. I roared in my mind. Before I realized it, I had bent down, wrapped my arms around her knees and hoisted her over my shoulder. I heard her let out a small yelp from behind me. The guy, realizing his dance partner was being removed from the area, stood still and dared to give me an annoyed look.

"Stay away from her, don't look at her, don't even think about her. If she appears to you in your dreams, wake up and punch yourself in the face for me. Come near her again, and I will cut your nuts off and put them in a jar on my mantle. Do we understand each other?" He was too stunned by my threat to say anything, he just stood there looking dumb.

I gave his friend an evil glare before I spun around and headed as far away from them as possible. I felt Bella moving around behind me and then felt a hard punch into my hip. Ouch! I guess I deserved that...I did leave her out there to fend for herself with that freak. I took a quick look over to the bar and saw Emmett and Jasper applauding my handling of the situation. I pointed to the back room to let them know that's where I was taking her and they gave me the thumbs up, they could cover the bar for a few minutes without me.

As I walked down the back hallway, Bella decided to revolt. She started kicking her feet in my face. "Where are you taking me? Put me down!" She demanded. She really is cute when she is mad. I tightened my grip so I didn't drop her and made my way to the break room. Once we were safely inside with the door closed, I set her back on her feet.

"Thank you for the caveman style rescue." She sneered at me. But I couldn't take my eyes off her face. Her hair was all tousled from being upside down for so long and it cascaded around her shoulders and into her face slightly. Her cheeks were flushed from the blood rushing to her head. She looked like she did the day at the gym after her run on the treadmill. She was irresistible then and now. Then the yelling started which made her face get even more red.

"Are you going to say anything like 'Sorry I left you out there with a creepy guy Bella' or 'I'm an idiot Bella, please forgive me' how about 'Bella are you alright?' Any of that ringing a bell?" She spat at me. I felt my smile grow with each angry word she said. She was so beautiful and her voice was music to my ears, even if she was yelling. She was so angry, she got slightly out of breath causing her chest to heave as she breathed. She waited for my response.

I took her heated face into my hands and held it gently like it was made of porcelain and highly breakable. I have got to kiss this girl or I may just explode. "Bella, are you alright?" I gazed into her endless brown eyes, allowing myself to get lost in them for a few seconds.

"Yes, Edward, I'm fine. Just completely grossed out that's all." She said with a smile. "Do

you have any hand sanitizer handy?" I loved her playfulness, I loved her sarcasm, I loved absolutely everything about her.

"What am I going to do with you? Every time you dance you have a run in with an uninvited dancer." I snickered.

"Well, it's only happened twice, once it was horrifying, the other time it was...pretty great." She sighed and her sweet breath filled my senses. I found myself caressing her face with my thumbs and decided I was going to kiss her. I couldn't wait for her to use her one kiss, it was killing me to wait one second longer, so I was taking matters into my own hands. I had read and reread the rules, and they clearly stated I could kiss her, we just had to keep our mouths shut.

"Do me a favor. Don't move." If she held perfectly still, I could pull off one quick chaste kiss and not have it go any farther. If she made one single move, I had the feeling I would pick her up and lay her across that couch that was a foot behind her and cause us both to be disqualified from our wagers. Not that the thought of losing was all that unattractive, I had thought about nothing else for the last week, but I knew it was important to Bella to win, so I behaved, to make things easier on her.

I leaned in and felt a burning fire as our lips made contact. She tasted as sweet as she smelled and her lips moved gently with mine. My heart was trying to leap out of my chest, I could feel my pulse thundering as we touched. Her body relaxed into mine and with every bit of self control I pulled my lips from hers.

"Impressive..." I heard Bella murmur breathlessly.

"Thank you." I laughed. "Are you still mad?"

"If I said yes, would you kiss me again?" She asked coyly. Is she serious? I would do nothing else but kiss her if she'd let me.

"I can kiss you like this whenever I want Bella, loophole..." Then she said the words that almost sent me over the edge.

"Then kiss me again, please." As soon as she said the word me, I started kissing her again. Behave Edward. Don't cross the line no matter how badly you want to right now...behave for Bella. "I could get used to this." she mumbled as her lips stayed in constant contact with mine. I couldn't believe how much I wanted her right now.

"Me too" I smiled.

My friend with the perfect timing crashed through the door uninvited "Hey guys what are you..." Emmett froze. "Never mind...as you were...ROSALIE!!!!"

Bella giggled and quickly grabbed my hand and faced me. "Come on, before Emmett tells her we were dancing naked in the rain." She raised her hand to my face and using her thumb, wiped any trace of her lipstick from my lips. Her fingers on my lips sent a wonderful sensation down my spine and I immediately walked her out of the room, not trusting myself to be alone with her anymore.

I found an open seat at the bar and pointed to the chair. "Sit here, so I can keep an eye on you." I said with a wink. I wasn't about to let her out of my sight for the rest of the evening. I couldn't. Emmett and Jasper pulled me to the opposite end of the bar and

started a barrage of questions.

"Was she a good kisser? She looks like she would be a good kisser with those lips.." Emmett asked. I gave him an annoyed look.

"Please stop looking at her lips Emmett, that is weird. Yes, I kissed her, but it wasn't her free kiss" I said as I made air quotes.

"Why the hell not? What is she waiting for?" Jasper asked.

"I don't know. I know she wants to kiss me, but it's like she's afraid or something. I couldn't take it anymore ... so I kissed her in a way allowable by the rules. I told you there were tons of loopholes if you just looked hard enough." I said proudly. Jasper grinned at my smarts, Emmett looked mad.

"You know you could share some of these discoveries with us Edward. We are your friends and stuck in the same boat. Give a guy a little help..." He pleaded.

"Speaking of giving, I believe you owe me five bucks Emmett." I gloated as he dug deep into his pocket, slamming the five dollar bill into my hand.

"Jackass." He mumbled as he walked away.

A pile of orders had started stacking up from all the distractions and being shorthanded when I was off back with Bella, so we took a few minutes to work our asses off and catch up. When I had a second, I slid her a Cosmo. She had mentioned it was her favorite drink, with extra cherries. Occasionally, I would glance down the bar and saw her watching my every move.

She was unbelievably alluring the way she followed me with her eyes and refused to look away when I caught her staring. I filled drink orders at top speeds, knowing if I caught up, I would have a minute or two to go talk to her. When the last beer was handed out and we were completely caught up, I headed straight for Bella. I took her tiny hand into mine.

"Hello Beautiful." I said just before my lips kissed her hand.

"Hi there. How's your evening going?" She asked sweetly.

"Not too bad. There is this really pretty girl at the bar who keeps staring at me. It is a little distracting at times, but I kinda like it." I teased.

"I hear you gave her a little kiss tonight." She played along "How was it?" How was it? Earth shattering, spellbinding, magical, amazing, stupendous...my mind searched for the right word to describe the feelings she stirred in me.

"I believe she said impressive. However, I thought it was more along the lines of... exquisite." I could tell by her reaction she liked my choice of words. I smiled broadly as she blushed yet again. I will never get tired of that. I thought. I felt someone come up behind me.

"20 minutes until show time Edward. Bella, you may want to go hunt down Rosalie and Alice." Jasper looked down at our still interlocked hands and smiled, patting me on the back. "Or maybe not just yet..." He headed to the other end of the bar to give us one

more minute together.

"I better go get the girls..." She mumbled, unable to look away from me.

"I hope you like the show" I said as I grinned and leaned over the bar so I could whisper something to her. "We have something very special planned for you ladies at the end of our little show..." If she only knew. I hope she likes the surprise, I know I will enjoy it. I laughed to myself as I made a mental note to find the salt.

Tired and off to bed. The Meadow and Compromise are battling it out for the number one position in the latest poll. Hope you were entertained by this tidbit!

Chapter: 17

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

This chapter I dedicate to hope4eternity I think it will make you smile for a while.

Huge thanks to thefoodsnob and her expert musical collaborations again. You HAVE to listen to the song So Hott by Kid Rock before you read this or better yet while you read the performance find it on You Tube ... Makes the 'show' that much better!

Salty

BPOV

The music stopped except for a low beat playing as the DJ started to speak. "Hey guys this is your DJ Maxwell and I wanted to welcome you all to the Downunder!" The crowd cheered wildly with excitement as the spotlight shone on him. "We have a very special treat for you. Our bartenders here have decided to dazzle us with their bar tricks tonight. I have been watching them practice, and this is going to be one, hot show!" Again, the crowd started screaming and people began moving toward the bar to get a better view.

The girls and I were up at our table, with the best seats in the house for the show. The guys weren't behind the bar, they had gone in the back to change. I could only imagine what we were about to see. I looked over at Rosalie and Alice who were nervously smiling in anticipation of what was to come next. The crowd milled around quietly until the spotlight shined on the side of the bar where Edward, Emmett, and Jasper had gathered, looking absolutely edible. Alice screamed, while Rose threw her fingers in her mouth and let out a huge whistle that made the boys look up at us and wave.

Emmett was standing there in a skin tight, black tank top, that showed off his muscles perfectly for Rosalie to enjoy. His arms were folded across his chest, making his chest and biceps look even more striking if possible. A huge smile was on his face as he waited for the show to begin. Rose stood at the rail, licking her lips at the sight of him.

Jasper was also dressed in a black designer t shirt, that hugged his body, showing off the definition in his chest, but leaving just a bit of mystery. He was casually flipping a silver drink shaker in his hand like I had seen him doing earlier in the evening. There was no sign of nerves in him either. Alice was clapping her hands happily, stopping only to blow Jasper a kiss from time to time.

Then there was Edward. He was standing off by himself. He had changed into a form fitting black long sleeve button down shirt that fit him perfectly. It was untucked at the bottom and he was rolling up the sleeves as Maxwell talked. The top three buttons were left undone, exposing part of his chiseled chest. He pushed the sleeves up over his elbows and ran his hand through his hair. He looked up to our seats and gave me a wink and a nod which made my heart flutter wildly. Shoes, money, eternal bragging rights. I reminded myself yet again.

"Thank God we are all the way up here." I said to Rosalie who was standing next to me, tapping her nails frantically on the rail. All her pent up energy had found it's form of release.

"Bella...do you see them...I can hardly breathe right now." Rosalie gasped. She sounded like she was about to hyperventilate.

"Easy Rose...take a deep breath and relax." I put my arm around her and patted her shoulder in support. Alice smiled knowingly from her spot on the rail and pointed down to the bar. "You don't understand Bella...I ... I think I'm in love with him." Rosalie said so quietly I couldn't be sure I heard her right with all the screaming, but the pink in her cheeks told me I had. Before I could say anything, the show was starting.

"Ladies and gentlemen I give you our bartenders Edward, Emmett, and Jasper! They wanted me to tell you that this performance, and song, goes out to Suzy and her friends." A few girls named Suzy in the crowd started screaming, thinking the show was for them, but we knew it was for us, and only us. The guys walked behind the bar. Emmett was on the far left, Edward was in the middle and Jasper was on the right.

Then Maxwell cranked the music and Kid Rock's song So Hott! blasted through the club.

As the music started, the guys began clapping their hands over their heads in beat with the drums of the intro, trying to get the crowd into it. The spotlights flashed in perfect rhythm. Soon, people were following right along, clapping their hands. Tons of girls were screaming as Emmett jumped onto the bar top and pumped his fist to the beat, like the lead singer at a concert. The electric guitars kicked in, causing the boys to start dancing.

I assumed they were good dancers, considering they work in a bar, but to see them moving like that was a completely different thing. Their hips slowly rocked from side to side and hit every beat in the song. It made my memory of dancing with Edward that day, all the more exciting to me. Their shoulders swayed and they smiled back and forth to one another, clearly enjoying themselves. Seeing them so at ease in front of that many people was such a turn on.

Emmett jumped off the bar and each of them grabbed a liquor bottle from behind the bar and in unison, they started flipping them around in their hands at amazing speeds. I watched Edward as he threw the bottle behind his lower back with the flick of his wrist and it would fly up over his shoulder and he would catch it in front of himself every time, grinning from ear to ear. He could also flip it high over his shoulder and catch it blindly behind his back at a breakneck pace.

Jasper was flipping two bottles around like a master juggler, one in each hand, they were flying back and forth, arcing from side to side. His hands moved so quickly, at times I couldn't see them. Emmett's trick was unbelievable as well. He would flip the bottle into the air and catch it by balancing it on the back of his hand which he held out flat in front of himself. He would give his wrist little flick, and it would fly in the air and again land perfect on his hand. One time, he even managed to balance it upside down by the narrow bottle top, rather than the wider base, the crowd went wild.

The song and the lights pulsed on, only adding to the heat of the performance. When I heard the opening line, 'You've got a body like a devil and you smell like sex...' I smiled and blushed profusely, knowing they meant it to be a message especially for us. I squeezed Rosalie's hand as we watched in complete and utter awe. Alice was jumping along with the beat, never taking her eyes off Jasper.

As they performed their tricks, they were in constant, graceful motion. Gliding and shaking, each movement complimented the music, while the tricks they were performing took not just their hands and arms, but entire bodies. Their legs, hips and thighs moved just as much as their upper bodies, much to our personal enjoyment. I was stunned by the speeds at which their hands were able to move as the bottles swirled between their finger and rotated through the air. Edward continued bouncing a bottle off his bicep and catching it in his hand before launching it back into the air. The concentration on his face had me biting my lip.

Jasper put down his liquor bottles and grabbed four of the silver mixing cups he had been messing with all night. He began juggling them high into the air, never dropping a single one of them. Emmett and Edward stood next to him and the two did some tandem moves where they would flip the bottles back and forth to one another, over their shoulders and under their legs. When Jasper caught all four cups he had been juggling in a tall stack, the place went crazy again. He moved over by Edward and Emmett who were lining up three glasses on the bar top.

A bottle flew from Jasper's hand, over Edwards head and Emmett caught it upside down by the neck and poured a long, sexy shot into a silver mixer cup. He flung the bottle back to Edward who did the same into his shaker before placing the bottle back under the bar. A new bottle was thrown back to Jasper and he added a shot to his cup as well. The exchange of flying ingredients back and forth between the three of them continued until each had a shaker full of liquid. Climbing up onto the bar top, they slowly shook the drinks up, singing and dancing along with the song.

It was impossible to hear the music and watch the show and not be dancing along with them. As they stood on the bar top, singing, they each stared up at us and gave us seductive smiles that drove us absolutely insane. I simply could not take my eyes off Edward, he was breathtaking. The girls were screaming at his feet and yet, I don't think he even glanced at them once. His green eyes were fixed on mine, exclusively.

As the song started to wind down, they reached below and grabbed a glass off of Vicki's tray which she was holding high into the air for them. They each filled the glass with the liquid from their shakers, took a small sip, and returned them safely onto Vicki's tray for delivery. When Edward's smiling face took a second and looked back up at me, giving a little nod of his head, I knew they made the drinks for us, as a little gift. Be strong Bella, it's almost over...hang in there...

They stood on the bar top as the song ended and took their bows from the screaming crowd. Rosalie whistled again, louder than any one in the club while Alice and I clapped wildly and waved our arms over the rail at them. Vicki appeared behind us and handed each of us our drinks. "Here ladies, a little present from the boys. They said, if you liked the show, drink them fast and come see them down at the bar."

I looked at Rose and Alice who were just as flushed as I was after that amazingly sexy show the guys just performed. We raised our glasses to the guys, and quickly downed them in one gulp. The boys applauded from below and waved for us to come down.

We sprinted down the stairs as fast as we could. It took us a few seconds to mill our way through the crowd that was still gathered around the bar, but when I saw Edward I ran and threw myself into his arms.

"Hello there, beautiful." He laughed in my ear. "Did you like our little show?"

"It was...impressive." I said again. He threw back his head and laughed.

"You say that a lot."

"That's because a lot of thing about you are very, very, impressive. And sexy, but I'll tell you about that stuff in... just over 12 days." I laughed, as his lips met mine. Before I knew what I was doing, my fingers gripped the back of his head and pressed him closer to me. When I realized what I was about to do, I released him and jumped away.

"OOPS...sorry about that!" I said sheepishly.

Edward had a proud smile on his face. "We must have done a good job to get that kind of reaction out of you."

"Yeah, you did really well." I said, biting my lip, as he held my hand tightly. The six of us were gathered together off to the side of the bar talking about the show. I noticed 3 of the other bartenders who normally work the early shift back tending bar.

Confused, I asked Edward "What are they doing here? It's not that busy tonight that they would need six of you..."

He smirked "They are here to take over for us, we called in a favor.." He saw the surprise in my face and laughed. "Did I forget to mention that?"

"So you guys have the rest of the night to just hang out?" I said excitedly, bouncing like Alice.

"Yep, there's just one more thing we need to do first and I need your help. Are you game?" I was so enthralled with him, I couldn't say no, even though the mischievous grin on his face should have been a warning, I agreed. His face lit up with excitement as he mumbled "Excellent!" What did I just get myself into?

I heard Maxwell clearing his throat on the microphone. "Did you guys enjoy the show??" He asked the crowd who responded with thunderous applause and whistles. "Awesome job gentlemen!" The boys took another bow for the applauding patrons and gave everyone a wave. "To thank you for a job well done, we wanted to give you a little gift. Did you find some volunteers?" Maxwell asked and I felt my hand being hoisted into the air by and ecstatic Edward. I glance over at Rosalie and Alice who were in the same position with their hands high in the air, looking just as confused as I was.

"OK then, ladies, could you please head over to the bar. Make some room for them people." As Maxwell asked, people cleared a path to the front of the bar for us.

I leaned over to Alice and Rose and said "What the hell is going on? Did they say anything to either of you?" They both shook their heads no and looked as terrified as I did. Behind the bar the guys stood absolutely beaming. Emmett was pulling out a bottle of tequila and shot glasses while Jasper gathered up a handful of lime wedges and a box of kosher salt. Edward wiped down the top of the bar, smiling and mouthed the word 'loophole' to me. My body immediately exploded with a mix of fear and excitement.

"Who's up first?" Maxwell asked. Jasper pointed at Alice and gently tapped the top of the bar, waving Alice up with his finger. She stood there paralyzed for a second. "Time to start the body shots!!" Maxwell screamed and the crowd went crazy. 'Pour Some Sugar on Me' thundered through the club as Alice slowly climbed onto the bar top and hesitantly laid down.

Her face turned five shades of red as she laid there. Jasper leaned down and whispered something in her ear. She shyly hiked up the bottom of her shirt and laid her palms flat on the bar. Part of me was laughing at the sight of tiny Alice, waiting to have Jasper do a body shot off of her, the other part was absolutely terrified, knowing my turn was coming up. I glanced over at Edward who was watching my reaction anxiously. When I smiled and shook my head from side to side, he gave me a little wink and started that wonderful tingly feeling running through every inch of my body.

Emmett handed Jasper the salt and he leaned over and licked a small section of Alice's stomach which quivered when his tongue made contact with her skin. Alice let out a small squeal that I could hear over all the screams of the surrounding crowd, all of who wanted to get a good view of the bar. Jasper continued and poured a small pile of salt onto the damp spot on her stomach. "Ready Alice?" Jasper asked before he put the lime wedge in her mouth. All she got out was "Jazz..." and then she was holding the lime between her teeth waiting for Jasper to do his worst.

Edward handed him a shot of tequila which he held in his hand. He smiled down and Alice and leaned back over her stomach. I could see him licking her skin gently where the pile of salt was located. When he got every last grain of salt in his mouth, he threw back the shot and moved up to her mouth. Alice's eyes were huge as he came closer to her and I noticed her hands were clenched into tiny fists as she did her best to stay in control under these extreme circumstances. My heart was racing just watching it, I couldn't even image what it was going to feel like when Edward did that to me. Jasper's lips met her as he bit into the lime and stayed there for a few seconds extra. Alice's hands flew up to his head and she twirled his hair in her fingers for a second before he pulled away from her, grinning triumphantly. Once again, the crowd screamed at the completion of the first body shot.

Ever the gentleman, Jasper put one arm under her knees and the other around her waist and lifted her off the bar top, setting her down safely behind the bar with him. Emmett looked at Rosalie with a devilish grin and patted the top of the bar. In pure Rosalie fashion, she shook her head no and pointed at him and patted the bar top. I didn't think it was possible for Emmett's grin to get any bigger, but it did as he happily hopped up onto the bar. Alice and I clapped wildly and whistled with the rest of the crowd as Emmett completely removed his shirt before laying down. Rosalie grabbed my hand and squeezed it so hard at the sight of him, I started laughing.

She walked behind the bar and Edward handed her the salt. She knelt on a stool and leaned over Emmett with a coy smirk on her face. He winked at her and laughed as she leaned down and starting at his bellybutton, she licked a trail all the way up to his neck. Emmett slapped the bar top as her tongue made it's way along his chest. Edward and Jasper were howling behind the bar. By the time she finished, Emmett's hands were clenching his hair as he tried to behave. She sprinkled the salt up the slick trail and placed the lime wedge between his teeth. She quickly whipped her hair up into a ponytail before lowering her lips back to his stomach where she licked the salt up from his body. Every so often, Emmett would tremble and she moved up his chest.

Finally reaching his neck, Edward handed her the shot. She downed it and hovered over him for a second before lowering herself on top of him to claim the lime that waited in his lips. Emmett reached around her and pulled the rest of her body onto the bar top with him. Wild screams and applause came from the crowd at Emmett's bold move. Victoriously, Rosalie sat up, the lime clenched in her teeth and a smile on her face. She held out her hand and helped Emmett off the bar as he bowed to the now frenzied crowd.

Shit, shit shit!

The whole body shot thing was hilarious when it was Alice and Emmett, but now that it was my turn, I was blushing as my heart roared to life in my chest. Alice and Rosalie screamed my name and Edward gave a flirtatious tap to the bar top while extending his hand out to me. I took a deep breath and grabbed his hand as I climbed up and sat on the bar for a second. "Behave..." I said pointing at Edward who crossed his heart like a good little boy, however the evil grin on his face told me otherwise. I closed my eyes and slowly lowered myself back onto the cold bar.

I turned my head and saw Alice and Rosalie flashing me a big thumbs up and I felt my face go red again. I covered my eyes for a second, trying to calm myself down, when I heard the crowd suddenly scream. I threw my hands off my eyes to see Edward, standing over me on the bar. What the hell is he doing? Oh my God he is going to do what I think he's going to do...shoes, money, bragging rights...shit, shit, shit. He lowered himself down onto all fours over my legs and looked like a lion, about to pounce. My arms were up over my head, my fingers clamped together as he started moving up my body. I had forgot to lift my shirt up, and before I could do it myself, I felt Edwards fingers grazing the burning skin of my stomach as he slowly, lifted my shirt.

I kept my eyes on him the entire time. Even though I was completely dressed, the way he looked at me, I felt completely naked. I watched him taking in every inch of my body as I lay helplessly beneath him. His green eyes twinkled before he lowered his head down to my stomach. I took a deep breath and waited for the moment when I would feel his tongue on my skin.

At first, I only felt his warm breath on the side of my abdomen, but then I felt his lips part as they touched my side and his warm tongue slid over my skin, causing goosebumps to appear instantly. He laughed at the reaction his touch had on me, and went back to the job at hand. He licked a small path up the sensitive skin on the side of my abdomen. But then, to my surprise, he continued crawling farther up my body and I felt his lips crash into my exposed shoulder as he licked another trail along my collarbone. When he saw my puzzled expression he grinned and said "I like a lot of salt."

"Sure you do Edward..." I mumbled. Shit, Shoes, Shit, money, Shit, bragging rights, SHIT!! screamed in my head as he took the salt out and began sprinkling it along my stomach and shoulder. The grains of salt that missed their mark, slid off and landed on the bar top, tickling me as they fell from my body.

"Ready?" He asked as he held a small lime wedge between his thumb and index finger, leering at me.

"Not in the slightest." I stuck my tongue out at him in protest but he just shook his head and scolded me. "Now Bella, better keep that tongue to yourself or you can kiss your shoes goodbye. Behave..." He placed the lime between my teeth and crawled back down to my abdomen. I watched Emmett hand him the shot of tequila and say something that sounded like "Go get her tiger." As he slapped him on the back, causing a bit of the tequila to spill from the shot glass and land in the middle of my stomach. I jumped when the cold liquid hit me, and glared at Emmett.

Setting the shot glass on the bar next to my shoulder, Edward ran his fingers through his hair and lowered his lips to my stomach, kissing my skin gently. He made his way to where the salt was piled and again I felt the moisture of his warm tongue make contact with my skin. He pressed his tongue harder onto my skin this time, lapping up the salt. I felt it move slowly back and forth, gathering up the tiny grains from my skin. The crowd let out

whistles of encouragement to Edward as the music blared on in my ears.

When he had gathered all the salt from my stomach, he turned his attention to the drops of tequila that also fell onto me. He sucked the cold liquid off my belly which tickled more than the licking had. My hands which were safely above my head, came slapping down with a loud whap, onto the bar top next to me. Edward was highly amused and continued his way up to my shoulder to get the last pile of salt on my body.

He bowed his head to the side and began at the edge of my shoulder and worked his way closer to my neck. I felt his teeth graze over my skin occasionally when his tongue wasn't setting my skin on fire. It felt like the whole process had taken about twenty minutes, when in actuality it was probably closer to one minute since the Def Leppard song was just now ending. "You taste really good Bella." He whispered in my ear and I nearly lost it. I bit into the lime so hard, some of the juice ran into my mouth and a small bit ran down my cheek.

Edward, kneeling over me, picked up the shot glass and raised it slightly to me and then threw his head back and poured it into his mouth. The crowd clapped and whistled as he leaned back over me ready to claim his lime from my mouth. Keep your tongue in your mouth Bella, don't lose it now, you're almost done. So what if you have a sexy man straddling you...Shoes! Do it for the fucking shoes Bella! I screamed in my head. I looked up and saw two piercing green eyes coming closer. I couldn't take it any more and closed my eyes, and waited for it to happen, praying I could muster the self control to make it through the next 45 seconds.

I felt his warm breath in my face as he came closer and then suddenly, I felt his tongue at my jaw as he licked the trail of lime juice that had run down the side of my face. I began repeatedly slapping the bar with my left hand as I tried to focus on something other than his tongue creeping closer to my mouth. I heard him murmur "Bella." Right before his mouth came down on top of mine to collect his lime. As soon as the lime left my teeth I pressed my lips together to make sure my tongue stayed put. Edward's lips however, didn't make that any easier as he repeatedly kissed me, over and over and over, his lips setting off a multitude of different emotions and desires in me.

I vaguely heard Maxwell congratulate the boys on a job well done and he thanked the lovely volunteers for helping give the boys their rewards. My head was still spinning from my kisses with Edward when I opened my eyes to see his smiling face inches from mine. "Did you like your surprise?" He asked as I watched him climb off the bar and hold a hand out to me, so I could sit up.

"Yes, a little too much." I laughed as I hopped off the bar and into his awaiting arms. "Were you trying to give me a heart attack?" I asked. He smiled and shook his head side to side. "I think I am going to run to the bathroom and throw some cold water on my face." That comment made his smile grow even more.

"Go calm yourself, but just so we're clear, I'm not letting you out of my sight for the rest of the night." He said as he gave my waist a tight squeeze.

"That's what I was afraid of!" I laughed as I moved away from him and headed quickly for the bathrooms.

I scurried to the bathrooms and as the door closed behind me I let out a loudest scream I could manage. The scream echoed off the bathroom walls for a few seconds, allowing me time to compose myself. I walked over to the sink and turned the cold water on high and watched it run into the basin as I gripped the sides of the sink for dear life. I heard the

door fly open and looked into the mirror to see Alice and Rosalie who looked like they were in no better shape than I was.

"What the...did you see...his mouth...and he said...and ARRRGGGHHH!" I screamed again before putting my head between my knees trying to catch my breath.

Alice came over to me and rubbed my back gently. "Bella, it's OK, you did a great job. You did it, you resisted his temptation and by the way, just so you know, they are standing right outside the door so you may want to watch what you say ... or scream." She said with a huge smile on her face as the color drained from mine.

"Damn it!" I yelled just because I thought it might make me feel better, which it did. Rosalie laughed, hugged me tightly and whispered "I'm right there with you Bella...I licked Emmett for God's sake, he was shirtless...and he tasted...I can't even... think about it." I hugged her tighter and somehow it was extremely comforting to know Rose was having the same inner struggle I was. I took a few deep breaths and went to the still running sink, splashed the cold water onto my face, wiped it with a towel and threw open the bathroom door to see a smiling Emmett, Jasper and Edward standing in the hallway.

"Let's dance!" I ordered as I took Edward's hand and headed to the dance floor.

We spent the rest of the night dancing and laughing with the guys. Emmett and Edward showed us some of their best break dancing moves which were hilarious. Jasper did the robot until we all had tears in our eyes. We went back to our table and spent some time talking and laughing as we shared funny stories about one another, seeing who could come up with the most embarrassing story. Alice of course won the game with that memory of hers.

At the stroke of midnight, Edward stood up and declared it time to go. Sad the night was over, we gathered our stuff and headed out to the cars. Jasper and Alice took Rose and Emmett with them leaving Edward and I alone in the car for the ride home.

"Did you have fun tonight?" He asked as we left the club.

"Of course. It was the best non date of my entire life." I laughed as I held his hand, playing with his fingers.

"So, I get to feed you breakfast in the morning." He reminded me, a big grin on his face.

"Yeah, I wanted to ask you, how did you get Alice to agree to that? What did Jasper tell her?" I had been meaning to ask him that all night, but it slipped my mind until now.

"Well, he just said the reason for the 'meeting' was to help us with our Christmas shopping, that we wanted to get you something nice but we needed help. I am supposed to get ideas about what Emmet and Jasper should get Alice and Rosalie." He smirked, proudly.

"So you used her love of shopping against her? Very smart Edward..." I praised him as I ran my hand slowly down his arm.

"I thought so." He laughed of a minute and then got serious. "Bella, do you trust me?"

I was startled by the question "Of course I do. I let you lick me tonight for goodness sake Edward." I laughed.

"OK, do me a favor. Take a shower tonight..." Not a problem, a nice cold shower was already on my to do list "And wear warm pajamas to bed. Can you do that for me?"

"They seem like reasonable requests...sure." I said cautiously trying to decipher the clues he had just given me.

He pulled in front of the apartment and before I jumped out of the car he leaned over and gave me a kiss. "I'll see you bright and early. Keep your phone handy, I'll call you in the morning."

"Goodnight Edward."

"Goodnight Bella."

As heard the Volvo speed away, I skipped up to the apartment door. When I walked through the door, Rosalie and Alice were sitting on the couch waiting for me. "Hey Bella." Alice said sweetly from the couch. I wandered over and sat down with them laying my head on Rosalie's shoulder.

"So when is Edward picking you up tomorrow?" Alice asked softly.

"I have no idea. He said he'd call me. I am exhausted, so I'm going to jump in the shower and then go to sleep. I'll see you in the morning." I gave Rosalie and Alice a kiss and sauntered off toward my room.

Rosalie called from the couch "Bella, do me a favor!" I turned to see her grinning face. "Don't use all the cold water please..." I was still laughing as I closed my bedroom door.

It was pitch black in my room when I heard Nelly singing my theme song. I sat up and grabbed the phone, only able to open one eye, the other still tightly closed.

"Who died?" I asked into the phone. That caused muffled laughter from Edward on the other end.

"Bella, it's me, no one is dead. Can you please come to the door?" I heard him say in a hushed voice.

"What door? Where are you? Is this a dream?" I mumbled through a yawn, nothing he was saying was making sense. Then I heard a banging noise in the phone and one coming from the kitchen.

"Come to the door Bella, I'm here to pick you up for breakfast." Edward said sweetly, trying not to laugh at me again. I glanced over at my clock which said 4:45 am.

"It is 4:45 in the morning Edward! Are you insane?" I asked as I sprung out of my bed and shuffled across the cold apartment floor toward the door. I stood on my toes, looked through the peep hole, and let out a shriek.

Standing outside my door was a wide awake Edward, Emmett and Jasper. All of them were smiling and quite perky, given the obscene hour of the morning. "What the hell are you guys doing here?" I shouted in a panic through the door.

I could hear them laughing behind the thin piece of wood separating us.

"We're here to take you to breakfast." Edward said, still laughing.

"Huh?"

"Bella, can you please let us in before your neighbors call the police?" Jasper begged.

"Yeah, I'm freezing my nu-" Emmett started in a loud voice but I whipped open the door before he could finish.

"Get in here." I hissed. I was still confused how Rosalie and Alice could be sleeping through this ruckus. Emmett and Jasper walked in and sat down on the couch like it was the middle of the day.

"What are you guys doing here at..." I glanced at the clock "4:47 in the morning! Have you lost your minds?"

"I'm here to take you to breakfast. I have to return you by 10:30 but Alice and I never agreed on a start time for the meeting, so I decided to come extra early. Are you ready to go?" He asked calmly, like it was 2:00 in the afternoon. "By the way, nice hair."

"Bite me Edward." I looked down to see that he was standing there in his pajamas too. He had on black flannel pants and a sweatshirt. "Nice pajamas." I laughed back at him.

In the family room, Emmett and Jasper had just picked up the Xbox controllers and were ready to start a game. "Emmett, Jasper before you start that, and trust me you will have plenty of time to play that while you wait for those two to get ready, do me a favor and go wake up my dear roommates? They will be so excited to see you are here." I flashed them an evil grin as they jumped to their feet.

I pointed at one door and reminded them "Alice" and Jasper headed that way. Emmett grinned. As he walked to the other door, he paused and looked over his shoulder at me before he opening it.

"Don't suppose she sleeps naked or anything good like that huh?" He asked with a twinkle in his eye.

"Sorry lover boy, not when she's sleeping alone." Edward laughed immediately, but Emmett had to think about it for a second and then did a small fist pump before going into her room.

Edward wrapped his arms around me and hugged me tightly. "Hmm. I wanted to do this all night."

I snuggled my face against his chest and said "Me too." I felt his lips gently brush the top of my head and then it happened, simultaneous screams.

"AAAAARRRRRGGGHHHH"

"WHATTHEHELLAREYOUDOINGINMYROOMJAZZ!"

Edward and I started laughing hysterically, not because of the screams, but because the first scream didn't come from Rosalie, it came from Emmett. I ran over to her room to find Emmett on his knees and Rosalie gripping his wrist, which she had apparently spun behind his back, in some sort of move I'd only seen before on COPS.

"God damn it! What are you, a fucking ninja Rose?" Emmett gasped from his knees. Rose immediately let go of his wrist.

"Emmett! Oh god, I thought you were a rapist or something. I just heard heavy breathing and smelled cologne. Hi..." she purred when he made his way to his feet. I rolled my eyes at Edward and we walked back to the living room where Alice was standing, hands on her hips, and her sleeping mask still across her forehead.

"Would you like to explain this early wake up call, Edward." She was furious, but Edward just smiled and explained that in their agreement, they had never established a start time for the breakfast meeting so he decided to get an early start. She looked wide eyed at Edward who just grinned back at her.

"Very sneaky Mr. Mason...taking advantage of your little loopholes are you." Alice wagged an accusing finger at him. Edward didn't say anything, he simply took my hand and pulled me in front of him, as a human shield.

"It's a gift I have." He said with a bow. I had been trying not to laugh, while Alice was mad, but I couldn't hold it in anymore. Alice pointed to the couch across the room "Sit." She commanded Jasper before going into her room to get ready.

"Actually, what she should have said is get comfortable Jasper, she takes a while to get ready." I tried to inform him before a small voice came from Alice's room "Shut up Bella! Or I'll tell Edward what I heard you say or should I say scream in your sleep the other night..." My face turned red, I had no idea what I actually had said, but I definitely didn't want Edward to hear any of it. My embarrassment was saved by Emmett who snuck out of Rosalie's room and went over to the couch to join Jasper.

"Give me a minute to brush my teeth, change and I'll be ready to go." I said as I turned to Edward but he shook his head at me.

"Don't worry about changing, just come in your pajamas." He said insistently. I looked at him slightly confused, but shrugged and ran into my bathroom to quickly freshen up. A jolt of adrenaline ran through my body at the thought of nearly 6 hours with Edward...alone. I scrubbed my teeth, ran a quick brush through my hair, put some deodorant on and dashed out of my bathroom to find Edward laying on my bed, smiling.

"Ready to go get some breakfast?" He said sweetly. Not really, I'd like you to stay right there...

"Sure, let's go."

We hopped into Edward's car and I asked "So, where are we going to breakfast, in our pajamas, at 5:00 in the morning?"

He flashed me a toothy smile and said "My place." That wasn't the response I was expecting, but the more I thought about it, the more I smiled. I leaned over and gave him a peck on the cheek.

"You are brilliant."

He laughed and said "Of course!" He picked up my hand and kissed it gently. "So, let's get this out of the way now, gift ideas for Alice and Rosalie..." I thought about it for a second and then two ideas popped into my head.

"For Rose, tickets to the hot rod car show. I think it's next month in Seattle. If Emmett thought she liked the new car show, get her around some tricked out hot rods..." I laughed. Then I racked my brain about Alice. "For Alice, tell Jasper to drive her down to San Francisco some weekend so she can go shopping. She'll be thrilled. Good enough, is our meeting adjourned?" I laughed.

"Works for me!" Edward laughed as we pulled in front of his place. He opened my door and led me up the front steps. Inside, his whole apartment smelled delicious, the smell of bacon, sausage, and maple syrup wafted through the air. I stood in the kitchen in shock.

"Edward what time did you get up to start all of this?" I asked in amazement.

He shrugged and smiled "I never really went to sleep. I had... a difficult time... getting to sleep last night, so I just stayed up and started a few things before we came to pick you up."

"You are unbelievable." I mumbled. I walked into the kitchen and grabbed up a spatula in an effort to help.

"No, no, no. You are my guest, humor me." He pulled the spatula out of my hand "Just tell me, how do you like your eggs?"

"Scrambled, with cheese if you have some." Just talking about breakfast was making me hungry

"That I can do. Now, follow me..." He took my hand and led me out of the kitchen and through the family room and down a hall, which I assumed led to his bedroom. I stopped walking as we approached the door and gave him a suspicious look. He just laughed and gave my hand a tug, pulling me into his room.

"If you don't mind, I would like to serve you breakfast in bed." He held out his arm toward the inviting king size bed that was in front of me. The navy blue comforter was neatly folded back, revealing the blue and white striped sheets beneath. A big pile of fluffy pillows leaned against the headboard and a remote control to the stereo was sitting on the nightstand.

"Alice is going to kill you..." I laughed as I kicked off my shoes and climbed into his bed. He tucked the comforter snugly around my waist and kissed my lips.

"I can handle Alice, don't worry." He teased confidently. He reached across me and laid the remote control in my lap. "I have a bunch of Cd's loaded in there, see if you can find something you like. My only rule is do not leave this bed. Understand?" He said as his green eyes sparkled in the dim lights. I nodded my head and he dashed out the door to get everything ready.

I clicked on the stereo and quickly flipped through the songs. I found he had a really eclectic tastes in music which was cool. I easily found something to listen to and as the music played through the room, I snuggled down deeper under the covers, pulling them up to my chin. As I laid there, still not believing he had managed to pull this off, I realized just how much the pillows and blankets all smelled like Edward. I buried my nose one of the pillows and breathed deeply, feeling completely at home, and relaxed.

A few minutes later, Edward came back through the door with a tray full of food. He had fruit, bacon and sausage, scrambled eggs for me and over easy eggs for him, pancakes and toast. The tray was finished off by two glassed of orange juice and silver wear.

"Hungry?" He asked as he walked over to the bed.

"Actually yes, considering it's, 5:15 in the morning, yes I am." I quickly sat up against the headboard so he could set the tray across my lap. He carefully slid into bed next to me, and smiled victoriously. "What are you smiling about?" I asked.

"Oh nothing, I've just been dying to get you into bed for weeks and I finally did it." He laughed at his own joke. I gave his shoulder a small, teasing shove.

"And neither of us lost our bets! Seriously though, this is amazing." I said quietly. The amount of effort he went through to make this happen was staggering. "Thank you." I said as I ran my hand down the side of his face.

"My pleasure." He whispered before he kissed me.

Breakfast was delicious beyond words, but what made it more wonderful was being so at ease with Edward. We finished breakfast in record time and the only time he left the bed for the remainder of the morning was to take the dishes into the kitchen. He quickly climbed back under the covers with me where we laughed and talked for hours. I had my arm draped across his chest and laid my head on his shoulder as he ran his hand up and down my back. We stayed like that, talking and then occasionally lost in a comfortable silence, for a long while.

"What classes are you going to be teaching next semester?" He asked as he played with a lock of my hair.

"One is called Major American Writers and the other is Literature of the early 1900's." I said excitedly. "I even get to pick two of the books for the assigned readings." I said excitedly.

"Choose wisely, you don't want the students mad at you from the get go!" Edward teased, but I had to laugh because I'd been worrying about the same thing for a week.

"So how is the location search going for the bar?" I asked as I ran my fingers across his chest.

"Not bad, there are a few places we like, one is on High Street and it would be perfect, but I have a feeling it will be well out of our price range, we have a meeting with someone from development company next week. If they want too much, we'll just keep looking." He said encouragingly.

"Did you guys come up with a name for it yet?" I asked casually.

"No, not yet. I'm open to suggestions so if you think of something, let me know." He laughed. I felt him lift his head to check the clock.

"Don't say it..." I mumbled as I nuzzled tightly against his chest.

"Sorry Bella, but we do have to get going in ten minutes. Your 'mother' gave you a curfew." He laughed as he buried his lips into my hair, kissing my head, my forehead, both cheeks, before settling down onto my lips.

"Stupid Alice" I mumbled as he kissed me. "Stupid bet."

In the silence of his room, wrapped in his arms, I thought about everything that had happened these last few weeks. How amazing Edward was, and how alive he made me

feel when I was with him. Everything about him made me smile, and I couldn't imagine my life without him anymore. His phone calls woke me up every morning and helped me sleep every night. I could barely remember what life had been like before him, and I didn't even want to try. All I knew, was that I wanted to be with him, always. I looked up at his face, taking in his perfect features, when his eyes met mine. I love you Edward... I thought to myself. I'm just too chicken to say it.

I realized I was grinning like a mad woman after my admission to myself, so looked away before he would notice. My heart sprung to life and I was filled with joy knowing I felt that way about him. Even though I wasn't ready to say it out loud, I knew with every fiber of my being, that I loved Edward.

His car pulled in front of my apartment, but he didn't turn off the engine. "Thank you again for everything Edward. It was perfect." He raised his hand and tenderly caressed my cheek.

"Anything for you Bella."

"I'll talk to you later. Bye Edward." I said as I gave him a kiss.

"Bye my love."

Merry Christmas, Happy Holidays, or have a great Tuesday or Wednesday depending what side of the planet you are on :)

Review please!

Chapter: 18

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

LOVE

EPOV

I dropped Bella off at her place just after midnight and was on my way home. I knew she wasn't happy I had cut our night somewhat short, but I really wanted to have as much time alone with her tomorrow as possible and getting her home early made that possible. I was hoping that once she realized why I did it, she would appreciate my gesture. While I was thinking back on the last few hours, my phone started ringing.

"Hello?"

"Edward, what's the plan for tomorrow morning?" Jasper asked.

"Well I'm going to pick up Bella before 5:00." Jasper repeated what time I was picking up Bella to Emmett, and he started complaining loudly.

"Emmett isn't thrilled to be getting up that early." Jasper laughed.

"I never said he had to get up that early, that's just what time I'm getting Bella. You guys can do what you want." Emmett grabbed the phone from Jasper.

"Oh, no you don't I'm not getting in trouble from Rosalie for having a shorter date than you, we'll be there. We'll meet you there at 4:40." Emmett said as he hung up the phone. He was right, he probably would be in trouble if I came to pick up Bella early and they showed up a few hours later.

When I got back to my apartment, I checked one more time to make sure I had everything I needed for breakfast tomorrow. I pulled out the toaster and sat it on the counter next to the bread. I opened the refrigerator and saw eggs, sausage, bacon, fruit and oranges. Since I wasn't sure what Bella would like for breakfast, I made sure I had a little of everything.

I glanced at my watch and saw it was 12:30am.

I wanted to get some sleep before I picked her up in the morning so I turned off the lights in the kitchen and family room and headed down the darkened hallway to my bedroom. I flipped on the light next to my bed and fell onto the soft mattress before me.

I looked at the clock again 12:37 am.

This is going to be a long few hours I thought to myself. I wonder what Bella is doing right now. Then I remembered I had asked her to take a shower before bed. A million thoughts raced through my mind, was she showering now, or was she already asleep, did she even shower like I suggested, what was she wearing, the shimmer of her wet skin

as she got out of the shower...and a slew of other thoughts, each more racy than the next. There was no way I was going to get to sleep in this condition I thought so I lifted myself out of bed and headed to the bathroom.

I reached into the shower and turned the water on high and for the sake of my sanity, set it as cold as I could physically stand. What the hell were we thinking making this bet? I questioned as I took my shirt off and threw it into a pile on the bathroom floor. Not much longer Edward, you can do it man. I reassured my reflection in the mirror. It's important to her, just wait. She's worth it, definitely worth it. My thoughts went back to the bar, the vision of her lying on the bar, blushing furiously and how unbelievably beautiful she looked. And the way her skin tasted, and her lips, they were so soft and warm. Get into the shower! I told myself as I stripped off the rest of my clothes and climbed into the frigid water. The water fell across my chest like streams of ice, wiping all thoughts of Bella from my mind, instead focusing on washing myself and getting out of there as fast as humanly possible before I suffered hypothermia.

After my shower, I was unfortunately, wide awake. It was well after 2am and no point in going to sleep now, so I began getting the apartment ready. I made the bed, fluffing the large pile of pillows against the headboard, then cleaned the bathroom and the rest of my room, wanting to make a good impression on Bella. I sat on the floor in front of my stereo and searched through my stacks of Cd's, looking for a few to put in the stereo that she may like. I picked a wide variety of music, hoping something would be to her liking.

I glanced at the clock 3:45am One more hour. A smile came onto my face and refused to leave as I sat in the dim room, thinking about Bella, and how wonderful it was going to be to have her alone for a few hours. Just her, and me. Even with all my excitement, I couldn't help but be a bit nervous. I just wanted everything to be perfect, I wanted to impress her, more that I ever wanted to impress someone before. And to be close to her, to just be a regular couple, for a few hours, without the friends and the bets, just Edward and Bella, for one morning. When my cheeks started hurting, I decided to distract myself in the kitchen.

The kitchen smelled like a diner by the time I walked out the door to go get Bella. I had started the sausage, bacon and pancakes, all the things that took a while to cook, so I didn't have to spend that much time away from Bella once she got here. As I pulled in front of their apartment, I saw Emmett and Jasper in their cars with huge cups of coffee in their hands.

"It is pretty damn cold at 4:30 in the morning!" Emmett snapped as he zipped his jacket shut. Jasper came out of his car and joined us. "Quit being a baby Emmett, maybe if you play your cards right, Rosalie will warm you up later." He said as he gave Emmett a smack on the back.

"Come on, lets go. We look like burglars or ax murderers standing out here at 4:30 in the morning." I laughed as we headed to her door.

In record time, we were out of Bella's apartment and back at mine. She took it very well when I asked her to come with me in just her pajamas. Most girls would have freaked out and wanted time to do their hair and makeup, but not Bella, she was different. She just smiled and was more excited to see what I had planned. From the big smile on her face when I told her we were going back to my place, I could tell I made the right choice for our breakfast meeting. She wanted to be with me as much as I wanted to be with her. And every minute I spent with her, I wanted her more.

When I opened the apartment door, she skipped through and froze in the kitchen as she looked at all the food I had cooking. I heard her take a deep breath, drinking in all the wonderful smells. "Edward what time did you get up to start all of this?" She asked in amazement.

I was distracted by her smile and shrugged. "I never really went to sleep. I had... a difficult time... getting to sleep last night, so I just stayed up and started a few things before we came to pick you up." Difficult time is putting it mildly. I was thinking about you all night... remembering the taste and smell of your soft skin... stop it Edward.

"You are unbelievable." She mumbled as she wandered into the kitchen and picked up a spatula to help.

"No, no, no. You are my guest, humor me." I insisted, taking the spatula out of her hand. "Just tell me, how do you like your eggs?"

"Scrambled, with cheese if you have some." She said shyly.

"That I can do. Now, follow me..." I took her hand and led her through the apartment and down the back hall that led to my room. She stopped walking just outside my door and gave me a suspicious look. I just laughed and gave her hand a tug, leading her into my room.

"If you don't mind, I would like to serve you breakfast in bed." I held out my arm to my bed as I watched her face go from surprise to absolute excitement. God she is beautiful.

"Alice is going to kill you..." She laughed, kicking off her shoes and rushing over to the bed. I had pulled back the comforter and she slid between the sheets, like she was climbing into her own bed. I tucked the comforter snugly around her waist and gave her a kiss.

"I can handle Alice, don't worry." I teased, as I handed her the remote to the stereo. "I have a bunch of CDs loaded in there, see if you can find something you like. My only rule is do not leave this bed. Understand?" Her big brown eyes looked up at me sweetly as she silently nodded her head. Go to the kitchen Edward...focus...so what if you have a gorgeous girl sitting in your bed. Go make the food!

I quickly left the room, pausing when I was safely down the hall, to catch my breath. In the kitchen, I quickly made her eggs and mine and then loaded the tray with food as fast as I could. Piled high with every form of breakfast food imaginable, I carefully made my way back to my bedroom. I gently pushed open the door with my elbow and stopped to look at the angel before me.

Bella was curled up in my bed, her eyes closed, her face smiling and buried into one of my pillows. She was exquisite. I wanted to drop the tray to the ground and run over to her, to kiss her and tell her how she made me feel, but I didn't. Instead, I just watched her lay there for just a few seconds longer as my heart raced, until her eyes slowly opened and she squealed when she saw the tray of food.

"Hungry?" I asked as I went over to her. She shot up from the pillows and scooted back against the headboard, waiting for the tray.

"Actually yes, considering it's, 5:15 in the morning, I am." She was smiling in awe as I placed the tray across her lap. Unable to be away from her a minute more, I climbed into bed next to her, careful to not spill the tray of food. As I looked at her angelic face, I

laughed to myself. Well, you finally got her into bed Edward. Just not the way you had been thinking. She caught the expression on my face.

"What are you smiling about?" She wondered out loud.

"Oh nothing, I've just been dying to get you into bed for weeks and I finally did it." I laughed. She returned my laughter and gave me a playful shove.

"And neither of us lost our bets!" She looked down at the tray and then back to me. "Seriously though, this is amazing." She raised her soft hand to my face and caressed my cheek. "Thank you." She whispered.

"My pleasure." I said as I kissed her.

Breakfast was delicious, even more so thanks to the incredible creature in bed with me. After we finished eating, I took the tray into the kitchen, tossing it on the counter and hurried back to Bella as fast as possible. When I came back into the room, she lifted up the comforter, welcoming me back to bed. I hopped back in, snuggling up to her warm body that had kept the bed warm in my absence.

Talking with her was so effortless, I had to remind myself, that I had only known her for a short time. I felt like we had been together for years rather than days. I had never felt to at peace in my life, so complete. The outside world no longer existed in those few hours, all that mattered was Bella. As we talked, I watched her face intently, memorizing every expression that crossed it. Her laughter was so carefree, and her smile so genuine, it was contagious. And when we weren't talking, we laid in each other's arms in a most comfortable silence that I had never experienced before with anyone.

I knew we were running out of time, so I stole a quick glance at the clock, hoping she wouldn't notice, but of course, I was wrong.

"Don't say it..." She mumbled as she attached herself tighter to my chest.

"Sorry Bella, but we do have to get going in ten minutes. Your 'mother' gave you a curfew." I laughed as I started to kiss her.

"Stupid Alice" She mumbled as she kissed me. "Stupid bet."

As she said the words, I considered, just for a second, offering to buy her any pair of shoes on Earth to drop out of the bet. I'd give her anything she wanted if it meant she could stay, if I could date her, actually date her and kiss her really kiss her...and touch her and everything else I had been dreaming of doing for weeks.

I realized as I ran my hand up and down her back, that this was where I wanted to be, always, with Bella. She was everything I wanted and needed in a woman. She was fun, and silly and gutsy and loving and smart and witty and beautiful, so beautiful. Just thinking about her leaving in a few minutes after the morning we just shared, it actually hurt. I would be counting the minutes until I could see her, I needed her. I loved her. I told myself. Part of me froze and the words, part of me screamed YES!

I could feel my breathing increase as I let it all sink in. I loved Bella. I never wanted to be away from her. She was the missing part of me, the part I thought I'd never find. But now I had that piece, lying on my arms and nothing else mattered. As I was lost in my own thoughts, I didn't notice she was staring up at me. Her big brown eyes were so deep and

loving, I almost told her right then and there, but I was afraid she would think I was insane. I didn't want anything to ruin our morning so instead, I simply smiled, while my heart exploded with love for her. I saw a tiny smile start on her lips before she shyly buried her face back into my chest. I could feel her tiny heart pounding rapidly against my chest and my smile grew even bigger. Yep, I love her.

I pulled my car in front of her apartment, but decided not to go in and face the wrath of Alice just yet. I wanted to take some time and process all that had happened this morning.

"Thank you again for everything Edward. It was perfect." Bella said, bringing me out of my thoughts. I reached out and touched her smooth, pale cheek.

"Anything for you Bella."

"I'll talk to you later. Bye Edward." She said as she gave me a kiss.

I love you Bella. "Bye, my love."

BPOV

My head was still spinning as I walked in the apartment. I shut the door behind myself, slid down it, landing on the floor and sighed loudly. I love Edward Mason...oh my god I love Edward Mason! The words kept rolling through my head over and over again as my hands trembled in my lap. It took me a second to even notice Alice and Rosalie were standing over me calling my name.

"Bella? Earth to Bella! What is wrong with you?" Alice's voice suddenly became worried when she saw I was shaking.

"Oh my god, did he hurt you?" Rosalie screamed, ready to hunt Edward down and beat him into a bloody pulp. I looked from her face to Alice's and shook my head 'no' as I felt a smile growing bigger and bigger on my face.

"I love him." It felt so strange to say the words out loud, but as I heard them coming from my mouth, I knew without a doubt that they were true. My voice grew stronger the second time I said it. "I love him."

After that, all I remember was a flurry of arms and squeals wrapping around me as Alice and Rosalie threw themselves onto the floor too.

"Bella!!! Tell us everything!" Alice begged.

"Can we get off the floor first?" I laughed as I climbed to my feet. I held out a hand to each of them and helped them off the floor as I ran and threw myself onto the couch.

Alice stood in front of me, with her hands on her hips, grinning "Spill it Swan!" Rosalie sat down next to me and folded her arms waiting for me to say something.

"Well, what do you want to know?" I asked coyly.

"Where did you go for breakfast? What did you talk about and oh I don't know ...You said you love him!!! Explain!!!" Alice finally burst.

"He took me to, his place for breakfast." I glanced up nervously at Alice who was turning purple

"He took you where?!!" She hissed.

"His place, for breakfast...in bed." I mumbled the last part as quietly as I could but when Rosalie whistle next to me, I knew it was bad.

"Isabella Swan are you saying that you had breakfast IN BED with him? That is so against the rules. Who has a breakfast meeting IN BED?" Alice kept screaming 'in bed' at the top of her lungs. Rose was laughing quietly next to me as I decided to do some damage control.

"Alice, it was nothing. You could have been sitting in the chair at his desk and nothing happened except we ate, and talked and I guess snuggled a bit, but that isn't against the rules." I plead my case as best I could. When I saw her jaw set, I decided to just move on, hopefully hearing the details would distract her.

"When I got there he had already started cooking, he had sausage, bacon, pancakes, fruit, hand squeezed orange juice and eggs. I offered to help, but he wouldn't let me, instead, he took me to his room, tucked me into bed and ran back to finish the food. We ate and talked for the next 5 hours. It was...spectacular." I sighed as I leaned further back into the couch. I heard Rosalie say a quiet "Awwww." Next to me. Even angry Alice's hardened face smiled a bit.

"OK, that was romantic, he's good, I'll give it to him. And within the rules..." Alice conceded as she sat down on the other side of me. I knew the big question was coming, I just didn't know what would ask it.

"Sooooo you love him?" Rosalie said smirking.

I felt my face get hot as I nodded my head. "I do. I love him...so much. It sounds lame I know, but it was just right, being there with him, in his arms. Nothing else mattered."

"Did you tell him?" Alice asked on the edge of her seat.

"No, not yet. I didn't want to scare him away you know? It was a perfect morning, and I didn't want to mess that up by sounding like some deranged stalker." I laughed.

"I told Emmett..." Rosalie whispered.

Now Rosalie was the one pelted with flying arms and squeals in her ears.

"Tell us tell us!!" I shouted as I clapped my hands. "Where did he take you this morning?"

"He took my to the Ritz Carlton for breakfast. It was spectacular. We had a quiet table in the corner overlooking the River. The food was to die for, it was their champaign brunch and there were lobster tails an caviar, oysters, Belgian waffles made as you watched, fresh fruits, crepes, prime rib, omelets and would could get the lobster tails int the omelets!" Emmett obviously was learning her tastes. "And Emmett was wonderful. He was still Emmett, and silly, but he was also sweet and thoughtful. He bought me flowers and held my chair out for me as I sat down and he held my hand through the entire meal." She sighed at the memory of her morning with Emmett.

"So when did you tell him?" I asked.

"Well, we were done eating and he was staring at me with the cutest grin on his face. So

I asked him what he was thinking and he just blurted out 'I was thinking ...I love you Rosalie'" Her face turned completely red.

"He said it first?" Alice asked, in complete shock.

"Yes. So I leaned over and kissed his cheek and whispered in his ear I love you too Emmett. Lucky for us, we were in public or we'd be out of the bet by now..." She laughed as she hugged me tightly.

"Rosalie that is so exciting! I am happy for you two. You are so brave." I admired her so much for the way she just followed her heart and her feelings.

"Well does anyone want to hear about my morning?" Alice asked slightly hurt we weren't begging for her details.

"Yes of course Alice! Tell us everything." I insisted, as Rose and I turned and gave her our complete attention.

"Well, after we got ready, Jasper put me in the car and briefly went back to his place to pack up a picnic basket, and grab a few blankets because it was cool this morning. When we got the car packed we headed down to Washington Park. He pulled the picnic basket out of the back seat and the huge blankets and we found a lovely place to bundle up watch the sun rise."

"Alice, didn't you freeze? It wasn't exactly warm this morning." Rosalie asked astounded Alice would risk freezing to death.

"Actually, I was quite warm, in Jasper's arms, under the blankets..." Alice giggled with a smile on her face. "Then, after the spectacular sunrise, it warmed up and he spread out a lovely breakfast and a big thermos of hot chocolate for us to share. He even fed me the strawberries." She swooned as she crashed into my shoulder.

"He is just the most fantastic and interesting person, he wrote me a love poem which he shared after breakfast and just swept me off my feet." She gushed.

"A love poem?" Rosalie's attention was caught at the word love.

"Sure, he loves me." She beamed.

"And when did this happen Alice? You have been holding out on us!" I just about shouted with surprise at her.

She sighed and said "He told me a while ago."

"Days or a week?" Rosalie pressed.

"Days."

"And you said..." I prompted.

"I told him I loved him too silly! I already told him I was the woman of his dreams the second time I saw him. I was in love with him then, I just had to wait for him to figure it out." Alice said with a wink. I noticed that she was downright radiant as she talked about loving Jasper.

Nelly sang to me and I hopped off the couch to pull the phone out of my pocket. Alice and Rosalie laughed at my eagerness. "She must be in love..." Rosalie muttered and I threw her a death glare. She cupped her hand over her mouth to signal her silence while I was in the phone with Edward.

"Hello Edward"

"Hey. I just wanted to make sure Alice hadn't ripped you limb from limb for spending the morning in bed with me." He teased. I felt my cheeks turn red as my heart fluttered at the sound of his voice.

"No, I 'm still alive, barely. I have a feeling she will be watching you like a hawk for a while though so you better behave." I laughed as Alice nodded her head in silent agreement from the couch.

"Put Alice on..." He said. I held the phone out to her, giggling because he had been expecting this. She winked and put the phone to her ear and huffed.

"Don't you 'hello Alice' me Edward! You're sweet talking may work on Bella, but I am a different story. You better get explaining or Bella is out of our bet." She pretended to fume. Rosalie gave me a small poke which made me laugh more.

"No, no, no you explain this. Who has a breakfast meeting in bed?" Alice interrogated him brilliantly.

"What do you mean, you were done with business by then? What?" She pulled the phone away from her ear. "Bella, when did you discuss Christmas presents?"

"In the car on the way to his house..." I said truthfully.

"That still doesn't make breakfast in bed within the rules Edward." She said into the phone.

She rolled her eyes as he explained himself. "Yes, I have...no I guess not...AARRGGHHH! I am watching you Edward Mason! I have my eyes all over you...one false move and...I didn't mean like that...you are incorrigible, here's Bella." The phone landed in my lap as Alice smiled and tossed it at me. She was pleased with how her intimidation of Edward went, flexing her muscles in a show of victory.

"Hello? Are you still there?" I asked laughing.

"Yes, she doesn't scare me. Hey, I had another question I forgot to ask. When are you leaving to go to your mom's for Christmas?" Shit, Renee...I had to go home.

"Saturday we all leave. Rosalie is coming with me, Alice is flying home to Boston if her flight doesn't get canceled. Why?"

"Well, I wanted to give you your Christmas present before I go, actually we all do. Can we stop over tomorrow night and do a mini Christmas?" He asked hopefully.

I answered immediately. "Yes!" Alice and Rose looked at me in confusion as I shouted into the phone with a bit too much excitement.

"Perfect! I'll let you go...You probably need a nap." He said sweetly.

"Goodbye Edward."

"Goodbye, my love." He said softly into the phone before he hung up. I stood there frozen. My love? He said that before too, when he dropped me off today. I realized

Rosalie and Alice watched me clutching the phone to my chest for a second as I tried to process what he said. They became concerned when I didn't say anything for so long.

"Bella, what's wrong? Is Edward alright?" Alice asked shaking my shoulder slightly.

"HUH?" I asked, not having heard her question.

"What did he say?" Rosalie asked slowly becoming terrified.

"My love..." I mumbled.

"What?!" They both said together, utterly lost with where this conversation was going.

"My love. He...he said...goodbye...my love. That's what he called me...he said it this morning too...he never said that before..." I stuttered, trying to put the pieces together in my head.

"OHMYGODBELLAHELOVESYOU!!" Rosalie this time squealed at super speed. I looked at her unsure of what the jumble of words just meant.

".You." She said clearly, annunciating every word for me. "Bella Swan, Edward loves you. You don't call someone your love if you don't love them." Alice was forcefully nodding her head in agreement too.

"No, he can't...it was just an expression." I murmured as I sat back down onto the couch.

"Why can't he? You love him, why can't he love you and don't you dare say you aren't worth his love or I will give you a black eye!" Alice shouted at me, holding her tiny fist in front of her chest.

"Bella, she's right honey. He loves you." She held my shoulders as I shook my head no. I felt her hand grab my chin and pull it so my eyes met hers. "He loves you Bella." She nodded her head up and down as she said it and wiped the single tear that fell down my cheek.

"He loves me?" I barely whispered. In that moment I thought my heart would burst apart. Edward may actually feel the same way about me. For the first time in my life I, Bella Swan, was in love and if Rosalie and Alice were right, he was in love with me too.

At that moment, I decide I was betting on Alice and Rosalie.

Friday morning we got an early start to the mall in search of the perfect Christmas gifts for the boys. It took us hours and multiple returns before we each felt we had an acceptable gift that they would like, and one that would convey the proper emotion with it. When we got home just after 1:00 I turned on the TV to check the weather. A huge storm was getting ready to slam into the east coast and Alice was getting worried about making it home for Christmas.

"Alice, you may want to call that airlines again and see if you can get out of here tonight.."

I told her as I watched the snowfall predictions for on Saturday.

Alice spent the next hour on the phone with her parents and the airlines trying to change her flight, with no luck. She came into my room and laid across the bed.

"There's no way I'm getting to Boston. Stupid snow..." She said sadly as she crawled under my covers with me.

"Come to Forks, maybe Renee will try and set you up with the son of one of her garden club friends...it will be fun!" I teased. "Seriously, come with us...it won't be the same without you."

"Fine, but I'm not kissing anyone just because I'm standing under mistletoe, I don't care who's son it is...they better keep their lips to themselves, you tell her that." Alice smiled as she gave me a big hug. She hopped off my bed and went to pack for Forks, and I needed to start.

At 4:30 Rosalie's phone started ringing, I could hear Emmett's ring tone blaring in the family room. Rose appeared at my door and gave it a little tap as I was putting the bow on Edward's Christmas present.

"What's up Rose?" Her face was sad and she was still holding her cell phone.

"That was Emmett. They aren't going to be able to come tonight, they had to leave all of a sudden something about the pipes at Edward's mom's house bursting and they needed to go save the furniture... and shitty cell phone service. They all went, I guess Jasper's flight to Chicago got canceled by the storm too." She mumbled.

"Well shit." I didn't even try to hide my disappointment when I realized it would be almost a week until I saw Edward again. "Merry frickin' Christmas." I said as I raised the glass of wine I had been drinking up to Rose who just rolled her eyes and she sulked out of my room.

My alarm blared at 8:00 am and I was in no mood to listen to it. Edward didn't call last night for the first time in weeks. I knew he was up to his eyes in a disaster at his mom's, but I was still bummed. I checked the phone as I sat up in bed just to make sure I didn't miss anything, but there were no messages.

I threw the covers off me and headed out to the kitchen deciding to get some coffee, and wake up the other two. Rosalie was already awake, lying on the couch and looking like hell. She had the thermometer in her mouth and a bucket next to her on the floor. Wadded up Kleenex were scattered on the floor around her.

"What the hell happened to you Rose? You look like shit!" I exclaimed as I felt her blazing forehead.

"I love you too Bella." She mumbled with the thermometer in her mouth. Alice stumbled out of her room and looked at Rosalie's pitiful form on the couch.

"Good morning typhoid Mary." Alice mumbled as she sat down on the couch at Rosalie's feet.

"Such sympathy from my friends...it really is touching." Rosalie said sarcastically as she held out the thermometer which read 102 degrees.

"Rose, you are sick! What are we going to do? We better not leave until tomorrow, I'll

call Renee and tell her we'll be a day late." I started walking toward the phone, when Rosalie called to me.

"Bella. Don't do that. I probably have what you had last week. And that lasted three days...you guys can't stay here until I'm better, you'll miss everything. Just go and I will be fine. I'm going to be sleeping the whole time anyway. That's what you did."

"But Rose, we can't leave you here alone. What if you get really sick?" Alice pleaded with her.

"Bella, Angela is staying in town right? Can't I just call her if I need anything?" Rosalie insisted "Listen, I am not going to ruin Christmas for all of us. Go to Forks, let Renee try and trap you under the mistletoe with the pimply, bad breathed, neighborhood boys and then come home and we'll celebrate Christmas again with the hott, sexy, boys that really matter. That would make me happy." Rosalie said as she clutched the bucket as a precaution.

"I don't know about this Rosalie..." I said feeling extremely guilty.

"I insist." She said. As I looked at Alice, she shrugged her shoulders and headed to her room to shower.

"If you're sure Rosalie, but we will be calling constantly to check on you..." I said as I gave her a small hug. I ran and packed, then made a quick trip to the grocery store to buy every kind of food known to man to help with the flu.

"Bella, what did you buy?" Rose asked in a groggy voice as she walked into the kitchen from her room, rubbing her eyes.

"I got some ginger ale, soup, pudding, Jello, bread for toast, hot chocolate, tea, and a ton of cold medicines that might help." I said as I lined everything up on the counter. She just shook her head and smiled.

"I will be fine Bella, I am a grown woman. Love you guys. I'm going back to bed, drive safely. Call me when you guys get in." She gave a wave and waddled back into her room. Alice came over and dropped her bag on the floor.

"Let's get this show in the road Bella. Don't worry, she'll be fine. Angela is going to come by and check on her tomorrow..." We grabbed our bags and a pile of gifts and headed out the door.

So there you go...B&E's free kiss is coming, next chapter...even if it is 30 pages long... and I think...well I know...someone will be out of the bet by the end of next chapter... Going out of town for a few days ...so if my replies take a bit longer, forgive me! I put a head to head up for my poll, the race between The Meadow and Compromise was too close to call, so it is a showdown! Go vote ...Please review...

Chapter: 19

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Renee

BPOV

The drive to Forks was fun with Alice in the car to help pass the time. We called Rosalie once from the road to see how she was feeling. Our loving concern was met with a string of profanities for waking her up from a nap. The four and a half hour trip flew by, and soon, I was pulling into a familiar, snow covered driveway.

My parents' home sat in a small clearing that was surrounded on three sides by tall, mature, pine trees that towered over the house. The two-story house, was white with black shutters, and as always, the yard was littered with thousands of Christmas lights. There was a sleigh, four reindeer, a giant inflated snowman and at least a dozen candy canes scattered across the lawn. I knew, in the evening, the driveway alone was so well lit, a commercial airliner could mistake it for an airport runway from the sky.

"Boy, you weren't kidding when you said your mom had a thing for Christmas, were you, Bella?" Alice said in wonder as she pressed her face to her window to take in the crazed winter wonderland before her.

"Renee loves Christmas...I think more than I ever did, even as a kid." I laughed as I turned off the car. Alice climbed out, and before she could shut the door, we heard Renee screeching from the front porch.

"Girls! You made it. Charlie, go get their bags." Seconds later, my poor father came flying out the door, with only his slippers on his feet, to brave the snow and retrieve our bags, rather than face Renee's wrath.

"She's a little excited you girls are here and hopes to have you both engaged by Wednesday at the latest...good luck," Charlie said as he kissed me on the head and gave me a hug. "You may want to remind her you 'don't like boys' for a few more days."

"Thanks, Dad," I mumbled as I headed up the front walk. Alice was hot on my heels, giggling. "You won't think this is funny for too long, Alice... Hi mom," I said as Renee came crashing into me before I made it all the way up to the porch.

"My baby, my baby. I'm so glad you're here. We are going to have the most wonderful Christmas ever!" Renee exclaimed as she hugged me like she hadn't seen me in years, when she saw me a month ago for Thanksgiving. "ALICE!!!" Renee screeched when she looked over my shoulder to see a shivering Alice patiently waiting to be let into the house.

Renee released her death grip on me and clung to Alice like a long lost daughter. "I am so happy your flight was canceled. I mean, I'm sorry you can't see your family, but now, we get to spend the holiday together! The more the merrier!" she squealed.

Charlie came up behind us huffing from all the suitcases. "Ladies, are you here for a visit or are you planning on moving in?" He laughed as he balanced the bags in his arms and struggled his way through the door.

"Charlie, I'll help you!" Alice shouted as she squirmed her way out of Renee's arms and grabbed the nearest suitcase.

"You girls go get settled. I had the guest room set up for Rosalie, but now, Alice can use it. Is there any chance Rosalie might make it up?" Renee asked hopefully. Nothing made her happier than a house full of people.

"I don't know, we'll see how she's feeling in the morning," I said as I headed up the stairs behind Alice and Charlie.

Charlie led Alice up the stairs and down the long hallway upstairs. My room was all the way at the end of the hall on the left. The guest room was right next to mine, so Charlie stopped in there first, to drop off Alice's mountain of suitcases. I stuck my head into the room, grabbed my two small totes and tossed them quickly into my room.

My room was the same as it had been for the last ten years. The walls were a powder blue with midnight blue curtains and bedspread. I laughed, remembering the fight Renee and I got in because she thought it looked too much like a boy's room when I told her the colors I wanted to use. I laid the bags on top of my bed and tossed my overnight bag into the bathroom, and then headed down to the guest room to check on Alice.

Alice's room was my mom's dream room; the walls were a very soft pink and the curtains and bedding were green with hints of pink. This was the way she thought I should have decorated my room; but since the color pink gave me hives, I decided against it, and was happy I did. Alice however, loved the colors and the feel of the room.

I quickly helped Alice unpack her suitcases, found some fresh towels for her bathroom, and grabbed her an extra pillow out of the hall closet to make sure she had everything she needed. As she put the last sweater into the dresser, I waved her over to the bed.

"What's up?" she asked as she laid down next to me, her chin in her hands.

"Before we go downstairs, we need to prepare," I said seriously.

"Prepare for what?" My serious tone had confused poor Alice.

"Renee. More specifically, the Spanish Inquisition she is about to put us through. We need to get our stories straight," I said as I pointed back and forth between the two of us.

Alice threw back her head and laughed. "Oh, Bella. Don't be silly."

"Listen, you need to trust me on this. We are still on our Boycott of boys, understand? Let her think we are exploring our feminine options for the next few days. If not, then she is going to try and play matchmaker, and trust me when I tell you, she is the worst matchmaker in recorded history! She is the anti-cupid." I pulled a picture from my pocket and thrust it in front of Alice.

"What is this? Is this you? And who is that you are sitting next to? Is he wearing a ...BIB?" Alice asked, her eyes wide in disbelief

"Yes, that is me from Christmas last year. The guy's name is Arnold Fitzer and Renee thought we would make the 'Cutest couple'," I said complete with air quotes "I had to spend the entire evening with Bib Boy and hear all about his harmonica collection." Alice actually snorted, she was laughing so hard. "If you're lucky, he may stop over sometime while we're here, I know Renee is still friends with his mom... maybe she will let you have a shot at him." Alice turned to me in horror. "I think the braces should be off by now..." Alice let out a small scream as her hand flew to her mouth.

"So why don't we tell her about Edward and Jasper so that she stops playing matchmaker?" Alice said quickly, I think finally understanding my need to deceive Renee and avoid her matchmaking at all costs.

"Do you really want to play twenty questions about Jasper only in the end to have Renee tell you she doesn't think he is good enough for you, and that she can find you a better guy right here in Forks..." I held up the picture of bib boy again to remind her of the horrors that could await her at the hands of Renee. "Because that's what she has done every time I have tried telling her I have a boyfriend. We do not mention the names Edward, Jasper or Emmett while we are talking to her, deal?" I held out my pinkie to her with a serious look on my face. Alice glanced at the picture one more time before wrapping her pinkie tightly around mine.

"Deal," she said quietly. "I am ripping down every piece of Mistletoe in this house too. There is no way I'm kissing him or any of his toad-like friends while I'm here," she mumbled as we climbed off the bed and headed out the door.

Renee was in the kitchen, making sandwiches. "Hey girls, sit down at the table and I will get you something to eat." She put a turkey sandwich in front of each of us, along with a glass of soda before she joined us, grinning from ear to ear.

"Soooooooo, how is your silly boycott going?" she asked as she popped a potato chip into her mouth.

"Fine," I mumbled, giving a quick glance to Alice, who was concentrating a little too hard on her glass of soda in order to avoid Renee's stare.

"I, um, talked to Mrs. Newton yesterday..." Renee said trying to sound casual, but I knew she thought she had some bomb she was getting ready to drop. "...and she said when Mike got home, he mentioned that he ran into you the last week."

Crap! Stupid Mike...how much did he tell her? Did he mention Edward? I wonder if he told his mom the part about rubbing his penis on my leg!

"Oh?" I said, keeping my answers short, until I found out exactly how much she knew. Alice watched silently as I tried to outmaneuver Renee. I heard Renee sigh, very aware I was withholding information from her.

"Yes. He said he met you at a bar, and that you were with your two girlfriends." She threw out her first bit of information.

Ok, no big deal...Alice would corroborate the story.

"Oh, yeah, Alice you remember Mike, don't you?" I asked with a small smirk on my face. Alice bit her lip to keep from laughing.

"Yes, he was...quite... a dancer as I recall." I looked back across the table to Renee for her next question.

"Funny you should mention dancing Alice...because he also said that while he was dancing with Bella, some guy threw her over his shoulder and took her off the dance floor. Apparently he also threatened Mike if he ever looked at Bella again.... Do you remember that part too?" Renee asked in an overly sweet voice. Her eyes, however, were piercing as she stared into mine, waiting for the slightest sign of weakness. I felt Alice give me a small kick under the table.

"Oh that, yeah, that was funny. Alice remember when 'E' did that? It was all a joke. I'm sorry if Mike thought he was serious. E was just messing around." I started laughing and gave Alice a small nudge with my elbow to signal her to join in.

"Oh, that was too funny. Gosh, he thought he was serious?" Alice giggled for a second and then took a large gulp of soda.

"E? Who is this E character? Is he someone you're seeing?" Renee asked hopefully.

"No, mom, remember? We are a 'No Man Zone'...it's girls only for another week and a half. E is just a friend of mine. And for your information, he's not really into girls right now." I blurted out. Alice started coughing, apparently choking on a piece of ice.

"He's gay?" Renee said as more of statement than question.

You mean cheerful and merry? Yes, he's gay mom...

"Absolutely. He's helping us, explore all our dating options. Because of him, we met Vicki and her partner. Vicki is great, mom. She has 14 piercings all over her body," I mumbled, still not knowing how I was keeping a straight face.

"Actually, Bella she has 18, I believe, but you can only see twelve," Alice added a wink to make sure Renee got a good idea of where the others might be located. Her comment added some support to my carefully built lie. "And she wears the coolest leather biker boots..."

"Oh," Renee muttered, thinking over the line of crap we just gave her. "Well, did you give Mike the number to that pizza place on accident or on purpose?" she countered, already sensing the answer.

"Mom, he was...it was...I'm not..." I stammered, not expecting Mike to run and tell his mother that bit of info.

"Renee, the guy looked like someone being tazered on the dance floor. He was vibrating all over the place, and I think, his mom may want to get his hearing checked because I don't think he ever came close to dancing on the beat. If it's not his hearing, then he must be having seizures...either way, he needs medical attention." Alice finally exploded with giggles. "If Bella ended up with him as a husband your grandchildren would be...well, I'm sorry to say...dorks."

I burst into a fit of laughter at Renee's face when Alice called her future grandchildren dorks. Her mouth was hanging open and her eyes were huge. She looked back and forth between the two of us, and then a light bulb went off in her head, because her jaw snapped shut and she got a smile on her face as she leaned across the table and asked Alice her question.

"And what kind of grandchildren would I have if Bella married this guy named E?"

Damn my observant mother... I glanced over at Alice who looked like she had just seen a ghost. I gave her a kick to wake her from her stupor.

"Wh...What did you say Renee?" she asked still dazed. Renee was smiling broadly now, feeling Alice was about to crack.

"I said dear, what kind of grandchildren would I have if Bella married E?"

"Um, I never really thought about it before...hm,...tall?" Alice replied innocently as she batted her eyelashes. It was such a perfectly generic answer that it threw Renee off the scent of a relationship completely.

"Well, I guess tall is better than dorks...This could get awkward when dad and I go to the Newton's tomorrow..." Renee trailed off, lightly laughing.

The rest of the evening was spent helping put the finishing decorations up throughout the house. There were lights to wrap around the banisters and popcorn garlands to be made. Charlie and I worked on setting up the train under the tree while Alice and Renee finished boxing up the last batch of Christmas cookies. By 11:00, Charlie and Renee were watching the news, so Alice and I decided to go to bed. I said goodnight to Alice in the hall and headed down to my room.

In the pitch black room, I saw, on my nightstand, my cell phone was blinking. I threw on the light and snatched it up. 2 missed calls, 1 new message. The display read, and when I saw who had called, my heart dropped, Edward. I quickly found the text message he had left.

Bella,

I'm sorry for dashing out on you yesterday and not calling. My mom's house is a disaster and we have been dragging boxes and trying to fix pipes since we got here. I miss you, I miss talking to you... I hate all indoor plumbing...I will try and call you tomorrow if my phone cooperates.

Goodnight, my love,

Edward

I had finished reading it for the second time, when I heard a tap on my door. "Come in," I mumbled, still upset I missed his call. Alice's head poked through the door.

"Did you get one too?" she asked with a small pout, as she held out the phone in her hand. I nodded my head in sad agreement.

"Did you call Rose?" I asked.

"Yeah, she still sounds terrible. Angela will check on her in the morning. Don't worry," Alice said with a wave as she headed back out the door. "See you in the morning."

"Goodnight, Alice."

After she closed the door, I opened the phone and read his message one more time

before texting a quick note back to him.

Edward,

Sorry about the pipes, I hope everything is OK at your mom's. Renee's house is...the usual torture.

I miss you too, a lot. I'll keep my phone on me tomorrow, just in case.

Goodnight.

Bella

"I love you." I whispered before I hit send. I kissed the phone and laid it back on the nightstand beside my bed. As my head hit the pillow, I hoped somehow tomorrow I would get to hear Edward's voice. I laid in bed and listened to the hum as the furnace turned on for a few minutes before I fell asleep.

There you have part 1, more to come soon. I have one chapter I need to decided what I'm doing with it... and then type the end of the last chapter... It's Renne's fault it is taking so long, she just won't shut up at times! Review... :)

Chapter: 20

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Your next update of the day...it's longer and I think you will be happy with it. More to come later :)

Guests

BPOV

In the morning, I woke to the rich smell of coffee and the clanking of dishes downstairs. I glanced at the clock and was surprised to see it was just after 10:00. I hopped out of bed, snatched my phone, and ran down the hall to Alice's room to see if she was still asleep. I tapped on the door and opened it only to find her still curled up in a ball under the thick green comforter.

"Alice, good morning!" I said softly as I sat down in bed with her, rubbing her back to help wake her up.

"Jazz?" Alice mumbled as she started to wake up.

I laughed. "Sorry, it's just Bella."

Her eyes opened and she rolled over and stretched. "Damn, I was hoping..." She laughed as she climbed out of bed. "Good morning, Bella. Bless Renee for letting us sleep in this morning."

"I'm going to shower, but I was hoping I could ask for a favor.." I smiled as I bounced on the edge of her bed.

"Sure, what do you need?" she asked with a smirk.

"Would you babysit my phone, and if he calls come get me?" I asked in a super sweet voice, all the while blushing, because I couldn't believe I was asking her to do that.

"Of course...as long as you return the favor when you're done showering," Alice said with a laugh and a hug. "We're quite a pair."

Unfortunately, I showered and Alice showered and the only call we got was from Angela, who reported Rosalie looked a bit better and that she got her to eat some toast and orange juice before she left the apartment. When we were showered and dressed, with my phone safely tucked into my pocket, we bounded downstairs together to find Charlie in the kitchen, having a cup of coffee and reading the newspaper.

"Here they are. Good... morning, ladies," Charlie said with a glance to his watch to make sure he could still say morning.

"Good morning," we said in unison as we headed to the coffee and crumb cake that was

sitting on the counter.

"So where's mom?" I asked as I joined Charlie at the table, Alice sat down beside me.

"She is out running an errand. Dropping towels off or something..." Charlie mumbled as he buried his nose deeper into the sports page.

Alice and I ate our breakfast and were half way through with the crossword puzzle from the paper when Renee came home, with her arms full of groceries. "Girls, girls, girls..." she said with a smile.

Uh, oh she ran into someone at the grocery store...

"You will never guess who I ran into today..." she started as she began putting the groceries away.

Charlie shook his head knowingly and whispered "It starts..." before heading out to the family room.

"Well actually, you will never guess, but that is besides the point...wait until you see who's coming over later...and I found you some boys!!!" she squealed. Alice's hand grabbed mine in terror, as visions of Bib Boy danced in her head.

If only she knew about all the other ones Renee had brought home over the years...she would be running and screaming down the street, I thought to myself, as I lowered my head, and readied myself for the fight that was about to start.

"Mom...we aren't interested in boys right now," I said through my clenched teeth.

"Oh come on, Bella, they're cute with a capital C," she said grinning. "You just might change your mind about this silly 'Boycott' thing..."

"No mom, no set ups. Do you understand me? Or I will do something drastic..." I glared at her as she slouched against the counter, sensing defeat. I knew she remembered vividly, the year she invited the guy who made to the state Math Olympics in hopes of getting me my first kiss, so I dyed my hair blue in protest to scare him and everyone else away. I glanced over at Renee defiantly and looped my arm in Alice's, bent to rest my head on her shoulder like we were a happy couple and sighed. Renee's eyes narrowed and she threw in the towel.

"Fine, be alone for the rest of your life, Bella. I am just trying to help you find love," she snarled as she stormed from the kitchen.

"Already found it, Mom..." I whispered to Alice, who was laughing with her head down on the table.

The rest of the afternoon, we avoided Renee, who was still fuming. I took Alice on a quick tour of Forks and she wanted to get a little something for my parents for letting her stay with them for the holiday, so we did some quick shopping. A few hours later, we returned home, grumpy, not having heard from neither Edward nor Jasper all day. When we walked in the door, we saw Renee, in the dining room, tangled up in a wad of red ribbon, cursing.

"Mom? Need some help?" I said with a laugh, as I started untangling her arm.

"Bella, Alice, you're back. Oh, thank goodness. I have all these things left to wrap for my friends and you know how bad I am at wrapping... and people are coming over tonight," Renee said, looking helplessly at me. As soon as I was old enough, I had become her personal wrapper...some years, I even wrapped my own Christmas presents.

"Just leave it to us, Renee. We can wrap them for you!" Alice offered happily. She was anxious to get back into Renee's good graces after the showdown this morning.

"Thanks girls...I need this one wrapped first, if you don't mind," she mumbled as she threw a green sweater at Alice's head and ran out of the room. I shrugged my shoulders and we dug into the pile of gifts, wrapping like professionals.

We had quite the system; I was the paper person, and Alice was the ribbon decorator/label master. In a matter of twenty minutes, we had finished the large pile Renee had placed before us, and a few extras she threw in along the way.

"All done, Mom!" I shouted into the kitchen, where she was frantically making something to eat.

"You girls are lifesavers! Thank you ..." she yelled from the other room as dishes clanked. "Go relax, I've got everything under control." Of course, the sounds coming from the kitchen sounded like anything but in control.

"I'm going to go upstairs for a bit Bella and try and call Jasper," Alice said as I sat down on the family room couch.

"Go ahead. I'm just going to sit here and listen to some music until we have to hide from her guests." I laughed as Alice headed up the stairs. I laid down on the couch and turned on the stereo. I closed my eyes and found my thoughts wondering about Edward. What was he doing right now? Did he miss me? What was he wearing?

I imagined how it would feel to be in his arms, to hear his voice. The smell of his pillow filled my memory, how would it be to kiss his incredibly warm lips... I even debated sending him a text message, but thought that would be a bit too 'desperate' as Alice would put it.

If she gets a hold of Jasper, then I'll try and call him, I thought to myself as I stretched out on the couch, my chest aching because I missed Edward. I took my phone out of my pocket for the tenth time today and checked for a message, only to find nothing. Renee came into the room and started placing small bowls of snacks on the end table -- a sure sign that someone was on their way.

"So, who's coming now, Mom?" I asked. Of course, my real question was, What dork is coming and how quickly do I need to find a place to hide.

"A friend of mine, Bella. She's a sweetheart and she's bringing..." But she never got to finish her sentence because the doorbell rang, and she immediately rushed over to the door. I could hear her laughing as she greeted her guest in the foyer. The music from the stereo caused me to miss some of the conversation as I strained to hear who it was. I heard other voices now.

Great! A group of people I need to dodge or hide from, I thought as I sat up on the couch and ran my fingers through my hair to make myself slightly more presentable. I heard the voices growing louder as they approached.

"I hope you called the Realtor and told her about all the trouble you're having, Liz," Renee said sternly.

"Don't worry, we've been on the phone all weekend with her, and a number of other handymen. These guys saved me I have to say..." I heard a voice which I could only assume belonged to her friend Liz.

"Come in, please. Just set your coats down. I want you all to meet my daughter. She's home for the holiday." Renee and a beautiful woman with dark brown hair came through the doorway arm in arm. "Liz, this is my daughter Isabella. Isabella, this is my dear friend, Liz."

I gave a small wave from my place on the couch. "Hello! Nice to meet you." I smiled. I've never met her before, I thought to myself as I watched her and my mother put their heads together, whispering back and forth.

My mom threw back her head and laughed. "No, sorry Liz, I forgot to mention, my daughter here is apparently trying her hand at being a lesbian," Renee said as she nodded her head skeptically my direction. My face turned bright red at Renee's comment, Liz however raised an eyebrow in surprise and smiled as she turned and reached her arm behind her.

"Well, then, she just has to meet my newly gay son, come here... Edward," Liz said as she pulled a handful of a grey shirt through the doorway, and a very embarrassed Edward came flying into my family room, his eyes glued on his shoes.

I was certain I was hallucinating. He couldn't be here, in my living room. He was a figment of my imagination...I was losing it. I slowly stood up and the hallucination didn't move or look up at me from his position inside the doorway, instead it fidgeted nervously in front of me.

"Edward?" I said softly in disbelief.

His head shot up at the sound of my voice and his look of embarrassment turned to complete joy in a fraction of a second "Bella?" he said in astonishment, his green eyes dancing

I don't remember making the decisions to do it, but the next thing I knew, I was on my feet and catapulting myself into Edward's arms. My arms flew around his neck and he stumbled back slightly from the force at which I crashed into him. I felt his arms wrap tightly around me and my feet left the floor as he swung me around the room.

I felt my feet slowly touch the ground, and only then, did I look up into his gorgeous face. He looked just as astounded and confused as I felt.

"What are you doing here?" we said together, laughing.

A voice from the doorway said suspiciously, "I take it you two know each other?"

Shit, Renee... God, how am I going to pull this one off.

I hid behind Edward's chest and said very softly, "Please go along with whatever I say. She will drive us crazy for the next few days otherwise..." He smiled and winked, letting me know he would follow me lead. I moved from behind him to face our smirking mothers.

"Sure we know each other...Mom, this is my friend 'E' that I was telling you about earlier,"

I said pointing my thumb in his direction casually. Edward raised his hand and waved, grinning.

"And where did you two meet?" Liz asked, staring intently at her son now.

"Um, at the bar..." Edward fumbled, not knowing what I had told Renee already. Behind Renee, I saw a tall blond figure in the doorway.

"Jasper?" I asked. He poked his head into the room and smiled. I jumped up and down, clapping excitedly.

"Go upstairs, first door on the left." I pointed behind him, signaling where the stairs were so he could go surprise Alice. He saluted me, turned on his heel and I heard his footsteps as he made his way up the stairs. Renee and Liz just looked at each other in confusion.

"Jasper and Alice know each other too..." I mumbled, trying to make it sound like no big deal. Of course, the scream and crashing noise from upstairs made that a tad bit more difficult. Edward chuckled softly next to me.

"You have no idea who we're dealing with here," I hissed through my clenched teeth.

"I think I do...our mothers seem very much alike...don't you think?" He smiled and muttered without moving his lips.

"Shit...we're screwed," I mumbled, shaking my head. Renee and Liz continued to examine us as we stood nervously side my side in the family room.

I didn't dare glance over at Edward while facing my mother or it would be all over; she would know, without a doubt, that I was completely in love with him, she was that observant. And since I hadn't been able to tell him that yet, I didn't want my mother spilling the beans.

From what Edward had said, his mom was just as bad. They whispered something between the two of them, and then announced they were going to the kitchen.

"Well, you two kids chat. I'm going to get Liz some coffee and a bite to eat." I heard them continue talking as they walked away. "Is Ed coming over too?" Renee asked and I heard Liz mention something about a water pump as their voices drifted out of earshot. I waited one more second before turning to Edward, just to make sure they were, in fact, gone.

Before I could look at him, I felt Edward's arms wrap around my waist, and I was being pulled toward him. "Hello beautiful," he murmured into my ear as he kissed the side of my face. I felt my heart flying in my chest.

"Hello there. How in the world are you here with me now?" I asked as I ran my hands up and down his back, still not completely believing he was standing in front of me.

"I'm not sure myself. The pipes burst at my mom's new house. So we came up here to help her move all the stuff out of her basement because it was filling up with water. My dad did what he could; but for the past two days, we've been moving furniture, boxes, and learning all there is to know about plumbing, pipes and water heaters...and swearing a lot." He laughed.

"But I thought you said you grew up in Salt Lake City?" I asked, completely confused.

"I did, but just before Thanksgiving, she and my dad announced they were moving to Sappho. My dad got a job offer and mom was all excited because she was going to get to live near...an old friend of hers. I guess that's where your mom comes in..." he said as he smiled down at me.

I was so happy I couldn't contain it anymore. Once again, I whipped my arms around his neck and found myself nearly strangling Edward. "I missed you so much! And now, we get to spend Christmas together," I squealed. I released his neck and slid down his chest, grabbed his hands and started pulling him toward the kitchen. "Come here..."

I stuck my head into the kitchen where Renee and Liz were having a glass of eggnog and a bite to eat. They didn't stop their conversation while I stood in the doorway with Edward.

"Mom, Edward and I will be upstairs if you need us," I said quickly and turned to walk out, but Renee caught me.

"Bella, do you think that's appropriate for you to have a young man up in your room...alone?" she said, giggling slightly. Liz was doing her best to contain her laughter as well.

"Get a grip mom. Edward and I are friends. Got it?" I said.

Renee just continued to smirk. "Whatever you say, Bella." Renee rolled her eyes at me as we left the room.

Hand in hand, we went upstairs. I was going to stop in Alice's room first; but instead, I pulled Edward to the end of the hall, down to my room. I needed a few minutes alone with him.

As I gently closed the door behind us, I felt myself being pushed back into the door and Edward's lips were all over my neck and ear. I heard him murmur 'loophole' in between kisses. I held on to the sides of his shirt as the kisses trailed up and down my neck, and finally stopping on my lips.

Until his lips met mine, I didn't know exactly how much I had missed him. I felt every part of my body react to his touch, aching to get closer to him. His chest crashed into mine, causing the door to bang slightly behind me. Much too soon, he pulled away from my lips, leaving me breathless as always.

"I told you I missed you. You're just lucky I controlled myself in your family room." He laughed as he pulled me away from the door.

"Renee would have loved to have seen that," I mumbled, still trying to clear my head from his kiss.

He released my hand and turned to look over my room. Immediately, he walked straight over to the pictures that were sitting in frames on my dresser. He picked up each one and examined them, occasionally asking me when it was taken or how old I was in the picture.

I sat down smiling on my bed, with my legs crossed and just watched the man I love, wander through my room, looking at all my childhood treasures. When he came across my prom picture, he let out a chuckle.

"Who's this stiff?" he asked, pointing to my date, who wasn't exactly smiling in the picture, he was trying to look tough.

"His name was Bill and he was on the chess team," I mumbled the last part into my sleeve.

Edward grinned and took a few steps closer. "He was on what?" His eyes were twinkling as he continued to come closer.

I playfully clamped my hands over my mouth to show I had no intention of repeating what I'd just said. He jumped on me and started tickling my sides. I began to thrash around under him on the bed, laughing hysterically.

When I could take his tickle torture no longer, I gasped, "Chess team. The guy was on the chess team, OK?" Edward froze above me and started laughing until he had tears in his eyes. I gave him a smack on the arm and pushed him off my bed, causing him to land on the floor with a loud thud. A minute later there was a knock on my bedroom door.

"What are you two up to in here? Did I win some shoes?" Alice sang as she pushed the door open, Jasper at her side.

Edward was still on the floor laughing, holding out the prom picture up to them, and managed to choke out, "Guy...chess club...dork." Alice took the picture from his hand and after examining it herself, she and Jasper joined Edward in laughter.

"If you guys are done mocking my childhood...I am going downstairs to watch a movie," I said with my hands planted firmly on my hips. I started to storm towards the door when Edward threw himself in front of it, blocking my escape. "Move, Edward," I growled.

"I'm sorry I laughed at your dork...I mean date..." he said with the cutest, crooked grin on his face. When he smiled at me like that, I couldn't stay mad at him. All I could think about was kissing him, so I did.

"Wait!" I shrieked, ripping my lips away from his. "Where the heck is Emmett?" Alice and I looked at each other immediately both thinking the same thing, our eyes huge.

"We got a call this morning from the Downunder that they needed someone to come in last minute, and cover the holiday. We drew straws and Emmett lost. He just left for Portland before we came over. I doubt he's even home yet, why?" Jasper asked, still confused by the looks Alice and I were exchanging.

"It's probably nothing, but Rosalie is home sick...alone..." Alice said suspiciously. "Maybe we'll have Angela make a surprise visit over to the house tomorrow." I nodded my head in agreement and actually got a little excited. If someone got knocked out now, maybe no one would last until New Years.

Downstairs, Edward and I laid across one of the couches and Jasper and Alice took the other. I threatened to make them watch the Sound of Music if they didn't stop laughing about my prom date; but when they backed off, I let Jasper and Edward pick the movie. I got the movie ready while Alice braved going to the kitchen and facing Renee and Liz. As the opening credits of Goldeneye started, she came back into the room with two huge bowls of popcorn and Jasper trailed behind her laughing.

"How bad was it?" I asked from the safety of Edward's arms on the couch.

"They are on to you, my friends...you better watch out." Jasper laughed as he handed a bowl of popcorn to us, and then grabbed Alice, pulling her onto the other couch with him.

I looked up at Edward nervously. "Do you think you could kiss Jasper or something to throw them off the trail? Maybe you two should sit together on the couch and snuggle...that might help too," I mumbled as I started to stand up, but Edward didn't let me get very far.

"I am not lying on this couch with anyone other than you, and I am most definitely not kissing anyone other than you," he said as he laid back and pulled me onto his chest.

"That's getting pretty close to a rule violation over there ..." Alice snapped from the adjoining couch.

"Stupid rules," Edward mumbled as he turned onto his side, holding me in front of him. I gave him a kiss, and then turned over so I was facing the TV, my back pressed tightly against his chest. He grabbed the blanket off the back of the couch and tossed it over us, getting another look for Alice.

"What?" he asked innocently as he laid back down, pulling the blanket up to our shoulders.

"If I see that blanket moving in the wrong places, you two are in trouble. You may want to keep your hands visible too..." she said, looking at Edward suspiciously. He rolled his eyes at her and said, "Just watch the movie, Alice. Just watch the movie..."

Alice huffed and laid her head against Jasper's chest as they snacked on the bowl of popcorn in front of them. I set our bowl on the ground, there was nowhere to put it with us laying down.

Renee and Liz, not so subtly, cruised through the room just after the movie started. The smiles on their faces were gigantic as they looked at us lying in each other's arms on the couch. They didn't say a word to us and we tried to ignore them too. They just headed to the living room, but they did turn off the lights, making it dark, and romantic in their minds, I'm sure.

I was watching James Bond flirt with some scantily clad woman when I felt Edwards hand playing with the bottom of my shirt. He lifted it up slightly and started running his fingers across the exposed section of my stomach very slowly and gently. I wasn't sure if he was trying to drive me crazy or make sure his movements would go undetected by Alice. Either way, I gave him a little nudge with my foot to try and get him to stop. Of course, it had the opposite effect.

The next thing I knew, he reached up and brushed my hair back behind my head, saying something about it being in his face loud enough for Alice to hear. With the side of my neck exposed to him, I felt his warm breath flowing across my skin. With every breath he took, from the nape of my neck, to my ear, his breath tickled, causing me to twitch slightly.

Again, I nudged him with my foot and he just whispered, "What?" sweetly in my ear, "I'm not doing anything..."

I tried to pay attention to the movie and the constant barrage of things that were being blown up; but all I could think about was Edward, lying behind me and the feel of his body pressed next to mine.

He decided his new game was to see how far he could hike my shirt up my stomach before I would yank it out of his fingers and pull it down. One time, I decided to see just how far he was going to take this little game of his, but when I felt his fingers graze over my bra,

I elbowed him in the gut. He just snickered behind me.

Fine, two can play this game.

He was easy, because he was a guy, and I didn't have to do much to get him worked up. A little incidental contact in all the right places and he was mine. I pretended to stretch, and as I did, I made sure to rub my hip and rear firmly across his groin. Immediately, Edward jumped, and moved as far back into the couch as possible. I looked over my shoulder and smiled at him.

"Sorry" I whispered, but he knew from the look on my face, I was anything but sorry. He gave me a warning look, which I just shrugged off and turned back to the movie. I waited another minute, before I leaned up a bit, pretending the blanket had come off my feet. I sat up farther and moved the blanket back over our feet; and then as I laid back down, I slowly tucked the blanket around his legs, his thighs and hip, causing my hands to come in contact with his rear which I gave a little squeeze, before laying back down, closer to him than ever.

He let out a big sigh when I laid my head back on the pillow we were sharing. I heard him murmur 'Cheater' into my hair and smiled at my success.

I could actually feel my plan working as I occasionally would shift my hips slightly, causing more rubbing and contact with his now very stimulated groin.

"Bella..." I heard him whisper. "Truce?" he asked as he pulled his hand out from under my shirt.

I moved my body a few inches away from his as a sign of my accepting his truce; allowing him room to breathe, settle himself, and avoid the constant contact with my ass which was apparently more than he could bear.

Thank goodness he caved...I thought as I closed my eyes, trying not to think too much about the dangerous game we had started to play. Shoes, Bella...Stupid, expensive shoes, Bella...

Edward must have been thinking the same thing because he leaned forward and whispered softly, "How much are these shoes you want anyway..."

I rolled onto my back and looked into his stunning green eyes and said, "You can buy shoes, but you can't buy eternal bragging rights, Edward..." and then I gave him a kiss and went back to watching the movie.

"Bragging rights are overrated...if you ask me..." he muttered softly, pulling me back against him.

The movie dragged on, and when it ended, Jasper put on another one. I yawned and snuggled closer to Edward. I could feel myself getting really sleepy, so I nestled in the comfort of his arms, knowing I would be asleep in minutes.

Edward yawned as well and kissed my head. That was the last thing I remembered.

Part 2 of 5 I believe... On to checking over the next one! Thanks again the Hb1 for all her help. Review if you love me ;)

Chapter: 21

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Part 3 of 5...

Mistletoe

APOV

I had fallen asleep on Jasper, and when I felt his chest shaking under me, I immediately woke up. Before I could open my eyes, I realized he was laughing at something. I pushed myself up off of him and mumbled "Jazz?" He looked down and kissed the top of my head.

"Shhhh, Sleepyhead. Don't wake them up. This is too funny," he whispered, pointing over to Edward and Bella, who were asleep on the couch next to ours.

They looked really cute together. Edward had his arm wrapped around her waist and she had rolled onto her back, their faces a few inches apart on the pillow. Bella's hand was clutching the front of Edward's shirt. And then the talking started...

"Avocados, I need three..." Bella mumbled.

A few seconds later Edward answered her, "I only have two."

I bit my lip to keep from laughing and looked over at Jasper, who was shaking with laughter.

"They've been doing this for a half hour! A few minutes ago, they were talking about pine cones. Just give them a few minutes, they'll do it again," he said, pointing back in their direction.

"I know Bella talks in her sleep all the time, but Edward too?" I said in amazement.

"Bella..." Edward whispered.

"Hmmm. Edward," Bella responded to her name.

"They do that all the time." Jasper laughed.

"I need more socks..." Edward moaned.

"Ok...here," Bella replied.

Their silly conversations continued for another ten minutes. I was reaching over Jasper to get the camera that was sitting on the table so I could get a picture of the two of them looking so sweet when I heard it.

"I love you, Edward," Bella said as clear as day.

I froze and looked at Jasper, who had a similar expression of shock on his face. We both held our breath to hear Edward's response.

"I love you too, Bella." he mumbled and pulled her tighter to him.

"Oh, Jazz..." I sighed. "Do you think they've told each other yet?"

Jasper laughed. "Not while they were awake..."

I got up off the couch and snapped a picture of the two lovebirds, forever memorializing the moment when they first admitted their love to each other -- even if they were asleep. The flash of the camera made both of them start to stir. I hopped back over to the couch with Jasper and gave him a kiss.

"I love you, Jazz."

"I love you too, Alice...more than anything."

BPOV

I opened an eye to see Edward's face right next to mine on the pillow. His arm was wrapped tightly around my waist and we were toasty warm under the blanket. I glanced over at Alice who gave me a strange smirk from the other couch with Jasper. I looked back at Edward who was now starting to stir. I brushed his bangs out of his face and kissed each eye lid.

"Wake up, Edward. All we need is our mom's finding us sleeping together. They'll have the church picked out by morning," I teased.

His eyes flew open and he smiled. "I'm comfy here, I'm not moving. Let them find us," he said as he nuzzled my neck.

"Boys! We need to get going..." We heard Liz say loudly from the next room. Both Edward and I shot up from the couch and sat next to each other, with a safe distance between us as to not call too much attention to us. I quickly ran my fingers through my hair before Liz and Renee turned the corner.

"How was the movie?" Renee asked with her eyes darting back and forth between Edward and I.

"Good, I fell asleep for a bit..." I yawned as I stood up. Edward was also on his feet.

"Well, you two did look rather ...comfortable there on the couch," Liz said making the same face Edward makes when he is being coy.

"Come on, Mom, we've bothered the Swan's enough for one day. Let's go see how much damage dad has done to the house by now..." Edward laughed as he shoved his mother toward the door before she could say anything more. He glanced back at me and mouthed 'I'll call you' and gave me a wink that, of course, Renee noticed.

The door no sooner shut behind the three of them when Renee pounced on me. "Bella Swan...you had better start telling me what the heck is going on between you and Edward. And for the record, that boy is most definitely not gay...he, he is... I think, he's in...lo-"

"DAD! HELP..." I screamed, interrupting Renee's comments that were way too accurate.

Charlie came into the kitchen, joining Renee in the doorway and before she could say another word, he planted a big kiss on her, complete with a dip and everything. Renee stood there stunned for a second, until Charlie pointed over her head at the mistletoe. She blushed and followed Charlie into the other room, completely distracted from her previous chain of thought.

"I'm going to bed after all this excitement" Alice said as she danced up the stairs.

"I'll be right up, I'm going to clean up the family room." I turned to grab the bowls of popcorn when I heard a knock on the door. "I got it" I called to Charlie and Renee who were already upstairs.

I peeked out the window and saw a smiling Edward standing on the porch. "Miss me already?" I teased as I opened the door. He stepped in and closed it behind him.

"No, I forgot something," he said as he glanced in the other room.

"What did you forget?" I asked. I hadn't noticed his phone lying around when I started my cleaning. I looked up at his grinning face and waited for his answer.

"This..." he said as he leaned over, took my face in his hands and placed a gentle kiss on my lips that make my knees buckle slightly. "Goodnight, my love," he whispered as he turned and walked out the door chuckling.

I stood a second in the doorway, I'm sure looking just as stunned as my mother had a minute ago. When I heard him honk the horn, it broke my trance and I waved to him while closing the door.

The next morning, I woke up to find Alice already downstairs chatting away with Renee over some donuts. "Good morning," I mumbled as I reached for the coffee. "So what's the plan for today?" I asked Renee as I plucked a donut from the box and took a bite.

"It's Christmas Eve, silly...there will be a houseful of people here tonight, you know that." Renee laughed. Christmas Eve meant Renee's annual Open House, also known as the longest evening of Bella's year... This was the night the who's who of Forks would come, stop over for some food and eggnog. My old teachers, neighbors, people from high school, and basically, anyone I would hope to never cross paths with again, will be sitting in my house and I will have to get them refreshments and make irritating, meaningless small talk.

"Bella! We have to go shopping..." Alice screamed, breaking me out of my sulking. She was on her feet and throwing her dishes into the sink before I could respond.

"Alice, why in the world do we have to shop now?" I grumbled.

"Do you have a Christmas gift for everyone on your list?" I check off the names in my head, Alice, Renee Charlie, Edward...uh oh. Edward's gift was sitting in the apartment back in Portland.

"You're right...Mom, will you be ok without us for a bit? We'll go fast, I promise." I chugged my coffee and shoved the donut into my mouth as I ran up the stairs. We didn't

even shower, we just threw baseball hats on our heads and flew out the door.

I called Edward from the car, explaining that we had to run out and do some last minute shopping. It sounded like he and Jasper were doing the same thing. Not surprisingly, they were invited back over to my mom's house tonight and Liz offered to come early to 'help set up'. I laughed and told him we'd see him back at my house later.

Two hours later, Alice and I returned home with great gifts for Edward and Jasper. Alice, of course, went with a sentimental gift. I, however, went for a gift that I hoped would be useful and make him smile. We dashed upstairs to wrap them, and then showered so we would be ready to help Renee if she needed us. It was just before noon when we appeared in the kitchen.

"Give us a job, Mom," I said, rolling up my sleeves, but she just laughed and waved us away. "I won't be needing you... I have some helpers of my own coming this year," she said with a grin. Right on cue, the doorbell rang.

I opened the door and squealed at the sight before me. "Aunt Esme, Uncle Carlisle!" I screamed as I rushed out onto the porch to hug them. "Come in!"

"Bella, you get more beautiful every time we see you," Aunt Esme said sweetly as I took her coat and hung it in the closet. "You are absolutely glowing, child."

"Thank you," I mumbled. She was even more observant than Renee, if that was possible.

"How are things at the hospital, Uncle Carlisle?" I asked as he put his arm around me and I led him to where Charlie was hiding out in the family room.

"Same as always, busy." He grinned.

I wasn't actually related to Esme and Carlisle, but I called them aunt and uncle because they were like family; I had known them since I was little. My parents met them at a charity fundraiser in town and they became fast friends. They always spent the holidays with us if they were in town.

Carlisle was the big doctor in town and they were very well off. They lived in a huge house up on ten acres, just outside of town. They were very kind, and two of the most breathtakingly beautiful people on the planet. Renee was always commenting on how they looked younger and younger every time she sees them; and I had to agree, it had been at least two years since I'd seen them and they looked exactly the same.

I went back into the kitchen and found Esme and Renee up to their elbows in potatoes and peelers. "Aunt Esme, did you meet my roommate Alice?" I asked.

"Alice, very nice to meet you, dear. How are you enjoying Forks so far?" Esme asked with a kind smile.

"I'm having a wonderful time. Are you sure we can't help with something?" Alice asked as she looked at the pile of potatoes before Renee and Esme, but both of them smiled and waved us off.

Alice was telling Esme about her job and the highs and lows of being a personal shopper when the doorbell rang again. Renee and Esme exchanged a smirk, and I knew who it was before I even opened the door.

"I'll get it..." I said loudly in Renee's direction. I took a deep breath and opened the door.

Liz and her husband, Edward Sr. were standing on the porch with Edward and Jasper a few steps behind. "Hello, Bella dear," Liz said as I opened the door. She gave me a tight hug as she walked through the door and into the kitchen.

Mr. Masen, Edward and Jasper followed her, however they stayed in the foyer with me when they heard the women chattering in the kitchen.

"Can I take your coats?" I held my arms out to gather their coats, but both Edward and Mr. Masen shook their heads. Edward took his father's and Jasper's jackets and hung them in the closet himself.

"You must be the lovely Bella. I have heard so much about you since my wife came home last night," Mr. Masen said with a laugh. My face turned bright red imagining what Liz could have said.

"Oh, goodness...sorry, Mr. Masen. She and Renee, I think, misunderstood some things yesterday," I mumbled as Edward watched me die of embarrassment before his father.

"First of all, call me Edward. That should be easy for you to remember," he said with a sly glance at his son, who was smiling at me. Mr. Masen turned, after watching his son for a minute and said, "Secondly, I don't think my wife and Renee were too far off," he said as he gave Edward a fatherly pat on the back and strolled off to find Charlie and Carlisle. Jasper headed into the kitchen where I heard Alice introducing him to Esme.

Edward came over and took me in his arms while everyone else was occupied. "Hello, beautiful," he said in a silky voice that made my heart swoon.

"Hey you..." I muttered as I laid my hand on his cheek. He bent down and placed a small kiss on my lips when we heard a noise.

"EH HEM!" Someone behind me cleared their throat loudly. I jumped a mile, and landed as far away from Edward as possible only to see it was Alice and Jasper, who were grinning.

"What? Is it scare the living crap out of Bella day or something!" I gasped, grabbing my heart, which felt like it was going to jump from my chest.

"Esme would like to meet 'your friend' as they keep calling Edward. I'd get it over with before they have any more time to gossip. But you may want to wipe that bit of gloss off your lips, Edward," Alice teased as she pointed at his face.

Edward quickly wiped his lips with the back of his hand, smiled at Alice and headed bravely into the kitchen.

Please God...just let them behave...I prayed as I stood next to Edward in the doorway to the kitchen. "Aunt Esme, this is Edward. Edward, this is my Aunt Esme, and you remember my obnoxious mother from yesterday..." I said as I glared at Renee, who looked like the cat that swallowed the canary sitting on her barstool across the kitchen.

"Edward, it's so lovely to meet you," Esme said as she shook his hand, her eyes never leaving his face except to glance in my direction, which instantly made me blush. "I can see why she's so taken with you," Esme whispered quiet enough for only Edward and I to

hear. And then with a wink, she returned to her friends at the other end of the kitchen. Well, that was relatively painless... I thought, and then it happened.

"Oh Bella, before you and Edward leave, will you both do me a favor?" Renee asked as she kneaded the bread dough.

"Sure Renee, what can we do for you?" Edward asked, eager to help out where needed.

An evil grin danced across her face as she said, "Look up." And pointed a dough covered finger over our heads. There, perched in the doorway, was a freshly hung piece of the most annoying, parasitic, green plant known to mankind or at least to me -- mistletoe.

"Damn it," I mumbled as I banged the back of my head on the door jamb repeatedly.

Edward, however, must have found it a challenge or something, because he started grinning. He grabbed me by the waist with such force, that not only did it make me gasp, but also the three women staring at us from the other side of the kitchen.

With a dazzling smile on his face, he placed his hand on my cheek that was facing our witnesses. He slid his hand down across my shoulder, slowly making a trail with his fingers as he worked his way down my arm, my elbow, my wrist, before finally resting at my fingertips.

I was holding my breath, not sure what was going to happen next. I heard a small squeak from our audience. He winked, then lifted my now, completely limp hand to his lips, gave it a tender kiss, and then placed it back at my side.

"Ladies," Edward said with a nod of his head as he placed his hand on the small of my back and led me out of the doorway.

Even in my breathless state, I heard the kitchen erupt into girly squeals. I flopped into a nearby chair and sighed. "Great. Now, I think, my mom and my aunt have a crush on you, too."

Edward laughed out loud, unaware of the effect his little display had on them -- or me.

"Come on, let's find Alice and Jasper and get out of here," he said with a smile. We headed upstairs, only to find them looking through old photo albums in the guest room.

"Let's get out of here. I need to hide from my mother for a while." I laughed as I snatched the album of my toddler years from Alice's hands.

"What do you want to do, Bella?" Jasper asked curiously. Then it hit me, the only thing to do on a snowy day...

"Sledding!" I squealed as I ran off to put warmer clothes on.

We bundled up, borrowing some clothes from Charlie's dresser for Edward and Jasper and came bounding down the stairs like a herd of elephants.

"Bye, Mom. Going sledding!" I shouted as we ran past the kitchen.

Renee just shook her head and laughed. "Have fun, kids! And don't be too long...the guests will be coming soon," she yelled out the door after us.

I grabbed a bunch of inflatable tubes from the garage and we headed out into the woods

for an afternoon of fun.

The snow was perfect for sledding. I led the gang to the hill that I used to spend hours on every weekend when I was little. Somehow, the hill didn't seem as huge and daunting as I remembered it; but then again, it was ten years ago and I was a bit bigger and older now.

Edward and Jasper made huge snow ramps on the hill so we would hit them at full speed and our sleds would sail through the air, landing with a thud, feet away from where we left the ground. Edward won every race, but I won the distance contest easily.

Alice and Jasper made an army of snow angels in a flat clearing alongside the hill as Edward and I ran one more race for the grand championship of sledding. Needless to say, he won, by a mile. I fell off my sled, laughing, halfway down the hill and rolled the rest of the way to the bottom. By the time we wandered back to my house, there were a few more cars in the driveway.

I turned to my friends, "It starts..." as I waved my hands at the house.

We managed to sneak upstairs without Renee seeing us. Charlie caught us on the stairs and told us to hurry up, shower and get back downstairs as soon as we were ready.

Our clothes were all soaked, so I suggested Edward and Jasper jump in the shower and I'd dry their clothes while they were showering. Then they could go downstairs and mingle, while Alice and I got ready.

I found a towel for Edward and sat on my bed while he went into my bathroom. I heard the water turn on and tried to busy myself, instead of sitting there, imagining a very naked -- very yummy -- Edward on the other side of my bathroom door.

As I dug through my dresser, looking for something to wear tonight, I heard the bathroom door open. I was just expecting him to fling the clothes out onto the floor. But when I didn't hear them hit the ground, I turned to see Edward standing in the doorway, a towel wrapped around his waist and a pile of clothes in his arms.

Stay right where you are, Bella...not another step! I screamed in my head. "Just toss them on the floor, I'll get them in a second," I said breathlessly, turning my attention away from his god-like form and back into my dresser drawers. Breathe...don't look at him. Don't look at him.

"I can't just throw them on the floor, here."

I could see him walking closer to me out of the corner of my eye and panic started to set in. Shoes...something and something else...shoes and a bunch of crap that doesn't matter...shoes and...who cares about shoes really?

I turned to look up into his playful green eyes and felt all my willpower fading away with each step he took in my direction. He stopped inches in front of me, his smoldering eyes making my heart thunder in my chest.

OXOXOXOX

OK...send all that email for the cliffie which really isn't but anyway...send it too...someone else! HA. Hope you enjoy it

Chapter: 22

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

AUTHORS NOTE : OK- This does NOT necessarily take place next in the story... it is the scene where someone loses the bet... but it isn't picking up where last chapter left off. OK that said, grab a pillow to cover the squeals as you imagine who this could possibly be... Bella and Edward... Alice and Jasper or Emmett and Rosalie... poor sick Rosalie who you all suspect.

HUGE thanks to Hb1 who cosmetically enhanced the withered and sagging little lemon seed I gave her into this beautiful and perky non-lemon tree...

Sex is better than shoes

? POV

My heart was pounding and my breath was coming in small gasps, trying to recover from his delicious kisses. I couldn't believe this was finally happening. After all the time I'd spent trying to deny my feelings for him, it felt so good to finally give in and succumb to my desires.

He stood before me shirtless, his khaki pants resting low on his hips, tempting me. He looked sexier than should be allowed by law. I kept my eyes focused watching his reaction as I ran my fingers lightly over his chest, caressing every muscle in my exploration of his body with my hands. He closed his eyes and moaned softly at my touch as my hands ran across his lower abdomen, grazing the path to his forbidden fruit.

He wrapped his hands into my hair, pulling my lips to his and kissed me with so much passion, my head was literally swimming. Our mouths moved together like two pieces of a puzzle, made only for the other. His kisses were slow at first, and then quickly reached a fevered pace.

His lips left my lips and began searching my neck for the place that would send me to new heights. I leaned against the wall behind me for support as his tongue ran along my neck and tickled my earlobe. I stretched my head back, allowing him better access to the sensitive skin that always drove me wild. He moved slowly up and down my neck until...

Ah.....I moaned. "Right...there...yeah," my request was breathless and he chuckled.

"You like it when I kiss... here?" He continued placing sweet kisses, tickling my neck with his tongue and blowing on the wet spots to increase the sensations.

His hands moved to the hem of my shirt and I gasped an involuntary sharp breath as his fingers slipped under my shirt and started to tease their way up my skin.

When the heat of his hands met my heaving breasts, I arched my back, needing to be closer to him. Air was too much space. I pressed myself harder against the wall as he stepped forward, melting his body to mine. I rocked my hips against him as he started grinding me into the wall.

I placed my hands on his chest and moved them up and round back, enjoying the feeling that was the man I loved. Before I knew what was happening, he'd scooped me up in his arms. I eagerly wrapped my legs around his waist, running my nails along the beautiful tan skin of his back. His strong hands gripped my bottom, as he kissed me and carried me over to the bed.

He sat on the edge of the bed, with me in his lap. His hands brushed against my chest as he took my shirt off and threw it onto the floor. He leaned back devouring me with his eyes before sliding the straps of my bra off my shoulders and following the disappearing satin with his lips.

““Beautiful,” he muttered as the white lace and satin dangled from his finger, his eyes on my surgeon-perfect C breasts. The bra hadn't even hit the floor before he pulled me to him, skin on skin. He laid back onto the bed, pulling me on top of him.

I smiled and raised a suggestive eyebrow. It was now my turn to investigate every possible inch of his mouth-watering frame. I leaned down and kissed his neck, my hair tickling in my wake as I kissed his neck and made a trail of kisses across the middle of his chest.

He knotted his fingers into the sheets, soft moans of pleasure escaping his throat as I continued running my mouth over his torso. He gasped when I got to his waistline and I looked up to see his eyes full of desire as he sat up and gently regained control.

His gloriously large hands caressed my flesh, causing me to tremble with pleasure. A smirk tugged at his mischievous lips as he rolled me onto my back. His eyes never left mine as he slid his hands down my stomach and began unbuttoning my pants. I lifted my hips to allow them to slip off easily, they too landed with a small thud on the ground.

His lips crashed to mine. His mouth parting as my tongue begged for entrance, his meeting mine in a struggle for dominance. I traced my fingers down his back, around his hips until they rested at the button. A sharp intake of air was all the permission I needed as I ripped at the button, sending it flying across the room. I then teased the zipper down much too slowly for him.

He placed a quick kiss on my lips before standing and teased and tempted me as he worked the khaki prison to the floor. I giggled, not figuring him for the commando type. My eyes consumed the beautiful sight standing in front of me.

““I need you,” I whimpered. “Now.”

He smiled. “God, you're beautiful,” he whispered as he crawled back on top of me, now completely naked.

This is so much better than those damn shoes, I thought with a smile, as I felt him slowly running his hand up my inner thigh.

OXOXOXOX

Are you still there or did you die?? Breathe Bella... or Rose... or Alice

Chapter: 23

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Here is it, the long awaited kiss. And you find out who gets caught! Enjoy

Commando

BPOV

I scurried out of my bedroom, my face still flushed from Edward. I casually knocked on Alice's door and the door opened barely a crack, just enough to stick Jasper's clothes out. All I saw, was her bare, pale arm as she dropped them into my chest.

"Thanks, Bella," Alice's muffled voice said as she quickly slammed the door shut.

Weird... I thought to myself.

I tossed the pile of clothes into the dryer and turned it on high as I hid in the laundry room, hoping to remain undetected my Renee and her loony guests.

I watched the timer countdown to zero and before it could chime, giving away my location, I opened the door and took the warm pile of clothes out, spreading them out on top of the dryer.

I easily sorted through the shirts and pants, but then I was faced with a major dilemma, who wore boxers and who wore boxer briefs. As I stood in the laundry room, I held the identically sized undergarments in my hands, trying to imagine who's ass went in which pair.

Jasper struck me as more of a boxers guy so that was my best guess, but I figured I'd ask before I handed the clothes back to Alice, if she stuck more than her hand out of the door this time.

Alice did open the door and took Jasper's clothes from the pile in my arms. Jasper confirmed the boxers were his when he stuck his head out of the bathroom door. I quickly exited her room before seeing any more of Jasper than I had intended.

I gave a little knock to my door before I walked in the room. As I glanced around the room, Edward was nowhere to be seen. Where the hell could he have gone with no clothes? "Edward?" I called softly.

The bathroom door flew open revealing Edward, in my baby blue bathrobe with tiny, yellow, rubber duckies all over it.

"You look very manly, Edward..." I laughed as I whipped out my phone and snapped a picture of him in his hilarious outfit.

"HAHA. If you want to see manly, I'll show you manly, Bella..." he threatened as he started to loosen the belt on the robe.

The devilish part of me wanted to dare him to drop the robe and show me the goods, but the sensible side of me said If he does that, it is all over Bella, the point of no return will be upon us. My face turned red at the thought of being flashed by the perfect specimen of a man before me. With my heart racing and before he could intentionally or unintentionally have a wardrobe malfunction, I thrust his clothes at him, hoping he wouldn't see how much my hands were trembling.

I gave him everything but his underwear. "Here you go. Somehow I just knew you were the boxer briefs kind of guy," I teased as I dangled his underwear from my finger.

He snatched it out of my hand and closed the bathroom door with a small bang as he pretended to be upset with me. Edward emerged from my bathroom clean, dressed and smelling like soap. I was laying on my bed when he came out, and I found myself smiling at the sight of him.

"You clean up pretty nice, Mr. Masen," I laughed.

"Thanks Miss Swan, glad to hear you approve. I'm going to go downstairs and flirt with your mom and aunt for a while. I'll see you down there. Oh, by the way," he said as he glanced back at me as he opened the door. "I left you a little present in the bathroom." And with a wink and a smile, he was gone.

I climbed off the bed and took my pile of clean clothes into the bathroom with me. Lying on the counter, were Edward's boxer briefs

Damn that man, and his little naked ass...I laughed as I turned on the shower.

I stripped and quickly jumped into the shower, lathering my hair and wondering what Renee was doing to poor Edward, or worse, how what she introducing him to people.

With new found energy, I quickly washed myself and got dressed. I even decided to follow Edward's lead and left my forest green silk panties sitting on top of his boxer briefs on my bathroom counter. I slid into a pair of plain black slacks and a form fitting green blouse with a deep V neck. I took a quick look in the mirror at my outfit and smiled.

Before I left the bathroom, I gave my hair one last brushing, threw on a quick spray of perfume and headed to check on Alice. I tapped on her door, and she was dressed too, sending Rosalie a quick text to check on her -- and Emmett.

As I got to the last step, I could hear the ladies laughing in the kitchen and the men had congregated in the family room. We headed for the kitchen to see who was here. Six women were huddled around the punch bowl, laughing as I stuck my head in the room.

"Bella, Alice," Renee called us over to her, wanting us to come chat with her friends.

We spent the next fifteen minutes talking with the wife of my old dentist, a girl from high school I completely detested, and the wife of one of the new deputies at the station.

Meanwhile, Alice managed to suck down a glass of wine; her head, I'm sure, was spinning from all the small town gossip.

"Mom, we're going to go...say hello to everyone else," I said sweetly as I generously refilled our wine glassed.

Alice mouthed a silent 'thank you' to me as we got up and headed out of the kitchen. In the foyer, we sat down at the bottom of the staircase and drank our wine. "This is going to be a long evening, isn't it?" Alice asked nervously.

I nodded my head in agreement.

"She has plenty of liquor, right?" Alice asked with a smile.

"Yes, if we're lucky we can drink ourselves silly by 10:00 and we won't remember a thing... no matter how bad it gets." I laughed as I stood back up, ready to check on the guys in the family room.

Alice walked into the room first, and found an open seat next to Jasper. I stood in the doorway for a minute and watched the two of them whispering back and forth. Alice laughed at something Jasper was saying and laid her head sweetly on his chest. They just fit together I thought with a smile.

I continued looking around until I found Edward. He was sitting on the couch with Uncle Carlisle deep in conversation. I couldn't hear what they were talking about, but I watched Edward gesture with his hands to demonstrate something to my uncle, and then Carlisle laughed out loud. Carlisle then began telling Edward something interesting because I saw him lean forward with a look of concentration on his face.

Edward's hair looked darker in the dim lights of the family room, but his emerald eyes shone like always. I wasn't sure how long I had been watching him, when felt someone come up behind me and put a cool hand on my shoulder.

"You love him, don't you?" Esme said softly as she brushed her hand down the back of my hair

"More than I ever thought I could love someone, Aunt Esme. He's just so ... amazing," I said, never taking my eyes off of Edward.

"He loves you too, you know," she whispered in my ear. I turned my head and saw her eyes were warm and loving as she nodded her head knowingly at me before she went and joined Carlisle on the couch. Edward looked up, noticed me standing in the doorway, and hurried over.

"Don't you look beautiful," he said as he quickly appraised my outfit. "Did you like the present I left in your bathroom?" He smirked, giving a slight tug on his belt loop.

"As a matter of fact I did, and I was inspired to follow your lead," I said softly, making him draw a quick breath in surprise. "Come on, there's got to be an empty room in this house somewhere." I took his hand and we navigated our way through the family room to our final destination, the completely empty living room. "Peace at last.." I murmured as I fell onto the couch.

Edward stood near the piano and smiled. "Are you having fun yet?" he asked as the doorbell rang again, signaling the arrival of even more freeloaders in my home.

I let out an annoyed groan in the direction of the front door as I threw my arm over my eyes. "Wake me up when they leave, please..."

I heard his footsteps followed by the soft tinkling of a single piano key. I moved my arm

to see Edward sitting at the piano bench, smiling while he messed with the keys.

"Do you play?" he asked, looking over the top of the piano at me.

"Sure, I'll show you what I learned after two years of piano lessons." I sat down next to him, sat up straight as my teacher had always taught me to do and cracked my knuckles loudly, before finally placing my fingers on the keys.

Edward raised an interested eyebrow at my preparations, and waited for the show to begin. I then broke into the most horrible version of Silent Night ever played by a human with all ten fingers.

Edward's face was priceless. He sat stoically next to me, trying his hardest not to laugh in fear of hurting my feelings. I saw him biting his lower lip with each sharp note I hit, like it was somehow causing him physical pain as I played completely out of tune.

Keeping a straight face, I turned to him and said eagerly, "What did you think?"

"It...it was...really..." he struggled to find a tactful word to describe how bad it actually was, but he was saved when Renee came into the room.

"Bella, that was horrible! And you had lessons for two years! Mrs. Wonters is probably rolling over in her grave at that." Renee laughed as I faked being offended.

"Edward liked it, didn't you?" I said as I turned to him, unleashing my big, brown baby doll eyes on him.

"It was lovely, Bella. I doubt I could have done much better..." Edward said, gently patting my hand.

Liz however begged to differ, "Edward Anthony, stop feeding Bella a line, and play for her." Liz gave her son a quick swat to the back of his head. He rolled his eyes at his mother and turned back to the piano before him.

"Do you play?" I now asked him in astonishment.

"A little..." he said as he placed his fingers tenderly on the keys and began to play.

I watched in amazement as his fingers floated over the keys. Effortlessly, he began playing O Holy Night, in perfect tune, not missing a single note. Without pausing, he transitioned into Joy to the World, followed by Hark the Herald Angels Sing.

The whole time he played, without any sheet music, I watched his fingers fly across the keys with speed and precision. He smiled at me, his face was completely relaxed -- no sign of stress or even concentration. The man playing was as beautiful as the music itself. By the second song, everyone had crowded in the small room to hear him play. As the final note hung in the air, everyone began applauding and shouting 'Bravo'.

I placed my hand over his and said, "Edward, that was phenomenal."

"Thank you," he whispered as he leaned over and touching his head to mine.

The crowd of admirers, descended as they began their compliments and I stepped to the side, leaving him to their praises.

““Thank you very much,” he said, flashing a crooked smile at me.

The room began to feel much too small and claustrophobia started closing in. I weaved my way through the room, listening to everyone discussing Edward’s talent for tickling the ivories.

““And then, when he was eight...” the pride in Liz’s voice was apparent as she spoke to a group of women. “He was able to play Beethoven’s Fifth Symphony. Very bright boy -- a prodigy.”

I smiled at the faces that passed by as I retreated to the kitchen for some much needed time to myself.

While I sat on the kitchen counter, watching my legs swing back and forth, my head was spinning. I had just witnessed something so beautiful that I couldn't even put it into words.

I already knew I loved Edward. But with every day that passed, I continued to find out something new about Edward -- something that made me fall even more in love with him.

Just when I thought he couldn't get any more perfect. I was shaking my head, thinking about how lucky I was, when I heard footsteps on the kitchen floor.

“There you are. I was wondering where you ran off to...” he said as he started walking toward me.

“Edward, that was, beyond impressive...” I stammered, dropping my eyes, “It was...breathtaking.” The footsteps stopped and I could see his shoes on the floor directly in front of me.

“The only breathtaking thing around here is you, Bella.” He lifted my chin and his green eyes bore into mine, making me feel the intensity of the feelings behind them. He put his hands on my knees and ran them softly, intoxicatingly up and down my thighs.

This is it, I told myself. I need to tell him. I want to tell him. It's now or never.

I took a deep breath, trying to collect myself. I opened my mouth and my mind went blank. The well-thought-out speech I had come up with to proclaim my love to him, left my head, and instead, I started rambling, “Edward, I need to tell you something...and I don't want you to think I'm nuts or anything. But I know how I feel...even if I've never felt this way before...about anyone... but I'm sure, trust me... and I just want you to know that... well... I love you. And I know I haven't known you very long, and it seems fast, but...”

I didn't get another word out because Edward's finger flew over my lips and stopped my babbling. He stepped even closer to me, now standing between my legs. His face right next to mine.

“Did you just say you loved me?” he asked with a brilliant smile on his face.

His finger was still pressed to my lips, so I slowly nodded my head yes.

The next thing I knew, I was in his arms. It was as though I were flying as we spun around the center of my kitchen. He threw back his head as laughter filled the room.

At least my declaration seemed to amuse him.

Moments later, he hugged me tightly and placed me safely back up on the counter where I had been sitting earlier. He took my hands in his and looked deeply into my eyes.

"Bella, I love you too." He pressed one of my hands to his lips. "'I have loved you, I think, since the first time I heard your voice, when you told Emmett to go take a hike.'" He kissed the other hand. "And each time I saw you after that, I just fell deeper, more helplessly, in love with you. The morning we spent in bed was when it hit me. As I held you in my arms, I realized that I love you. I knew, in that moment, that I could never stand to let you go."

I completely understood every word he was saying. I felt the exact same way. My emotions started to get the best of me as tears of joy started to fill the corners of my eyes.

"My love..." I whispered.

He tilted his head to the side, his eyebrows furrowed together slightly, not sure as to what my muttering meant.

"You started calling me 'my love' after breakfast that day,'" I clarified.

"You noticed?" he asked with a sheepish grin. "'And here I thought I was being clever, telling you, without really saying the words.'"

He wrapped his arms around my waist and pulled me closer to him. Being up on the counter, we were eye to eye and I decided to take my second leap of faith and do the other thing I had been putting off for far too long now.

"I love you," I said intensely as I put my hands on the sides of his face, and gazed lovingly into his eyes.

"I love you too," he said as he leaned in, making our faces less than an inch apart.

I didn't give him any warning that I was going to use my free kiss, I just let things happen on their own.

The kiss started gently, as all the others had. But when I parted my lips against his and my tongue grazed his lower lip, he responded immediately, parting his lips as well, allowing my tongue to explore his mouth for the first time ever.

His hands moved to my hips and he pulled me to the very edge of the counter. I wrapped my legs around his waist and pulled him back into me.

My hands left his face and secured themselves tightly in his hair, causing him to let out a small moan which only made me more excited. Our lips continued to move together, and I couldn't stop kissing his incredibly soft lips, even if it meant not breathing.

He was all that mattered; his lips on mine, our bodies pressed together, the warm feeling that was filling my body as he touched me. Every cell in my body craved him. This kiss was everything I had hoped it would be; and at the same time, everything I feared it would be, because I didn't know if I could stop myself.

How was I going to do this and then have to wait another 7 days to be with him like this again? I was already thinking in the back of my mind of ways that we could make it into

the laundry room undetected.

His hands ran up and down the sides of my body as I continued kissing him. I felt his fingers lift the bottom of my shirt like he had done under the blanket the night before, except this time, I didn't want him to stop. I kissed him more voraciously and his hands flew up into my hair, clutching it tightly in his fists.

Using all the will power I possessed in my small body, I finally broke the kiss and pressed my forehead to his as we looked at each other breathing heavy, like we had just run a marathon.

"Impressive," I whispered.

"Exquisite," Edward smiled.

"Well, I guess they aren't gay anymore, Liz," I heard Renee say loudly from the direction kitchen doorway.

Liz started snickering next to her, "I knew it."

"Kids, as happy as I am that you are enjoying each other's company, we do need to make Christmas dinner on that counter tomorrow. So if you could move this to a surface we won't be preparing food on... or eating on tomorrow, I would greatly appreciate it. Other than that, carry on!"

Edward and I both started laughing when Renee and Liz left the kitchen. When I finally caught my breath, I told Edward, "I was going to tell you to meet me in the laundry room, but now, I think the moment has passed."

"Your mom did give us permission you know..." Edward said with a devilish grin, as he nodded his head toward the laundry room.

"You know they are out there telling everyone they caught us. We have about ten seconds until Alice finds out and comes screaming through that door." I counted back from ten in my head and then pointed at the kitchen door.

"BBBBBEEEEELLLLAAAAAA!" A small object rocketed into the kitchen and tried to yank me off the counter, but Edward held me tight, refusing to let me go.

"Edward Masen, you let go of my friend right now," Alice said with a ferocious growl. "We have important girl things to discuss and she has a story to tell..." she said as stomped her foot on the floor.

"I better get this over with," I groaned, but Edward still refused to let me go. He raised his eyebrows at me, as if waiting for me to say the magic words which suddenly became clear... "I love you." I kissed him on the cheek, and he finally released his grasp. Alice giggled next to me as I hopped down.

"I love you too." Edward smiled as he leaned against the kitchen counter and watched us walk away.

We turned the corner and Alice grabbed my wrist and dragged me upstairs to her room, slamming the door shut behind us. "Bella! You finally told him, well you told him yesterday, but I doubt he remembers..." I interrupted Alice's squeals and ramblings.

"When did I tell him yesterday?" I asked sharply.

Alice settled herself and broadly smiled back at me. "You said it in your sleep when you two were on the couch, and he said he loved you back. Apparently, he talks in his sleep too. Jasper and I thought it was very cute."

Alice fished in her pocket for her cell phone. "Don't say another word, we need to get Rosalie on the line." Her index finger was held up in front of her, signaling me to wait as she dialed. She set the phone to speaker as it rang out loud. On the fifth ring, Alice and I started to look at each other with concern and then we heard the phone open and clank onto the floor of her bedroom.

"Hel...shit, wrong one...Hello?" Rosalie mumbled as we heard her rolling around on her bed, trying to get the phone.

"Hey, Rose! It's us...how are you feeling?" Alice asked.

"Oh, hey, guys. I'm doing OK. How is everything there?" We smiled at each other, Rose finally sounded like she was getting better.

"Things here are great, our little Bella has something to share with us..." Alice said in a proud and motherly voice.

"EEKKK! You kissed him, Bella, didn't you?" Rosalie screeched into the phone "Tell me, tell me. You didn't tell Alice about it yet, did you?" Rosalie accused as we heard a loud thud on the phone.

"What was that?" I asked. I heard Rosalie scrambling.

"It was a pile of magazines I had laying on the bed. Sorry, my foot just knocked them off. Ok, back to the kiss. So..."

"Well, he had just played the piano beautifully and I went into the kitchen to clear my head. He looked so gorgeous sitting behind the piano...but anyway, I was sitting on the kitchen counter and he came in looking for me. I don't know what came over me, but I decided to tell him I loved him. And when I told him, he grabbed me off the counter and swung me around the kitchen, laughing."

Alice and Rosalie both 'Awwwwwed' as they visualized the scene. I heard a smack over the phone.

"Rose? Are you OK?" Alice said, looking extremely suspicious.

Again, Rosalie stumbled over her words. "Sorry, there was this... pesky fly bothering me so I smacked it,... or tried to, but it was too fast. Anyway, get to the kiss, Bella."

"Well, he set me back up on the counter and told me he loved me too. It was the most amazing moment of my life. I took his face in my hands and kissed him. When he realized what I was doing he was, let's just say, he was very eager to make me happy. He is such a great kisser. I felt it all the way in my toes." I sighed, thinking back to the kitchen. "And I really thought I was going to lose the bet right then and there in my mom's kitchen. Actually, I was planning on dragging him off into the laundry room until..." I stopped because I heard quiet snickering in the background with Rosalie.

Alice signaled for me to go on with the story, while she silently ran out of the room.

"Until??" Rosalie asked.

"Sorry, until I decided to end the kiss. I was still thinking about sneaking off with him when Renee and his mom caught us," I said sheepishly.

"Your moms walked in on you making out on the kitchen counter?" Rosalie gasped, and then started giggling. "Oh, Bella I bet you turned a new shade of red."

"Yeah, it was great..." Alice returned to the room, with Edward and Jasper in tow. Jasper had his phone in his hand and was getting ready to dial. "After she announced she didn't think we were gay anymore, she gave us her blessing to do it on any surface in the house we wouldn't be eating on tomorrow." As I finished, I watched him dial, and then press the phone to his ear.

"Oh my gosh, Bella. That is just..." As Rosalie was laughing, we all heard it. She did too because she fell silent. The only sound on her end was the phone ringing in the background and a ruckus, as someone tried to answer it.

"Rose, is that a phone ringing? Whose phone is it?" I asked, somehow managing not to laugh.

"Um, yeah. Well, I guess..." she stammered, and then we heard a deep male voice growl in the background.

"What do you want, Jasper? I'm at work..." Emmett spat into the phone. Edward and Jasper burst out laughing and left the room with their phone to interrogate Emmett.

Alice and I waited a second to let Rosalie finish swearing at Emmett before we started teasing her. "So Rosalie, is there anything you'd like to tell us?" I teased, giggling uncontrollably.

"Yes... I'm out. Emmett was spectacular! Amazing! The best ever! My God he's an animal in bed. And it was well worth losing that damn pair of shoes. Enjoy another week of cold showers ladies, and now, I'm going to have hot, sweaty, sex...again!" And just like that, she hung up.

Alice and I rolled around on the bed laughing until our sides hurt. When we finally caught our breath we looked at each other and smiled. I extended my hand to her, saying as she shook it, "And then there were two..."

OXOXOXO

Hope it was worth the wait. Thanks again to Heartbroken1 who helped me get this monster out. I hope you enjoyed your little update marathon as someone called it in their review. I will be working on Family therapy....and I'll update this one after.

Chapter: 24

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Tonight is a two chapter night...yes you heard right. Big thanks to Hb1 for her editing expertise on these chapters.

Also a huge tremendously big, THANKS to all of you. With this chapter, the reviews will go over the 4000 mark which is pretty unbelievable. You guys rock!

Confession

BPOV

"And then there were two...."

Alice and I followed the roaring laughter into my room, where we found Edward and Jasper clutching their sides, the cell phone still in Jasper's hand.

"What did he say? We want details..." Alice begged as she ran across the room to Jasper. Edward was still laughing when I sat down on his lap in the rocking chair, he was gasping for breath.

"He didn't get to say very much other than they had sex and he enjoyed himself immensely because all of a sudden we could hear Rosalie whispering very dirty things in his ear. The last thing we heard was the sound of the phone dropping to the ground...." Edward managed to squeak out but was interrupted by Jasper.

"And then, there was a lot of moaning." The two of them exploded into laughter again while Alice and I stared at the phone in Jasper's hand.

"Are they still on the line?" I asked in astonishment. Edward nodded his head as tears streamed down his face.

Alice whipped the phone from Jasper's hand, pressing her ear to it and immediately started blushing. "Oh my..." She quickly snapped the phone shut and shook her head side to side. "Well she certainly sounds like she's enjoying herself."

After laughing for who know how long, we decided to return to the party and see how many people were downstairs now. Alice and Jasper walked out the door first and as I was about to follow them, Edward caught my arm and held me back.

"What's wrong?" I asked as I looked into his eyes, puzzled.

"Nothing. Everything is perfect," he said as he leaned in and kissed me gently on the lips. "I love you," he whispered as he took my hand and led me out the door.

"I love you too."

When we got downstairs, it looked like the crowd had tripled. Renee found us immediately and began introducing us to everyone. I politely made conversation with Renee's guests while Edward sweetly charmed all the ladies in the room.

The best moment of the evening was when the Newton's arrived. I saw my parents chatting with Mr. and Mrs. Newton and pointed them out to Edward. He snickered something about the apple not falling too far from the tree when he got a look at Mr. Newton.

"Did their creepy son come too?" Edward whispered in my ear as I sat on his lap in the recliner. I glanced into the foyer but didn't see him anywhere.

"I don't see him, we might just be safe." I laughed. "I'm going to go get some punch. Do you want anything?" I asked as I stood up. Edward shook his head no and flashed one of his heart stopping smiles just before I turned to walk away.

I was about to reach the punchbowl when someone bumped into me in the doorway to the dining room. "Oh sorry," I mumbled. When I looked up, I found myself standing chest to chest with Mike Newton who was smiling with excitement.

"Bella. There you are. I was looking for you." I felt his arms wrap around my body, pulling me into a hug that was way too close for comfort. I shuddered slightly.

"Mike... I didn't know you were here." I looked around wildly for help, but couldn't find anyone near. For a split second, I considered screaming, but decided that would be much too rude. So I opted for small talk while I waited for the chance to run for my life. "How have you been?"

"Good. You know..." He spoke in a very low voice. "I have been thinking about you ever since our dance last week."

At that moment, I think that I threw up in my mouth a little bit. "Um, great....hey, I'm sorry, but my mom needs some help..." I muttered as I tried to wiggle away from him. But he put an arm on either side of me, trapping me somewhat against the wall. He snickered and looked up.

"Look, Bella mistletoe..." he said smugly as he got closer to me.

If you think I am kissing your vile face, you actually are dumber than you look.

I took a deep breath to object when I heard the voice of my hero, "Bella, my love, there you are."

I sighed in relief. I was saved from the slimy clutches of Mike. "Mike, do you remember Edward?" I said casually as I watched Edward glower at Mike. He looked more frightened by the second. Mike didn't speak; he simply nodded his head and dropped his arms from my si

"Mike, funny to run into you again, especially when you are so.....close to Bella. I thought we had an understanding," Edward said snidely to Mike, who looked close to tears.

Pleased with the reaction he was getting from Mike, Edward turned to me with a wicked look on his face. "Bella, my love, it looks like we have found ourselves trapped under the mistletoe again..." he took my hand that lay at my side and pulled me into his embrace. Mike stepped aside, but continued staring at our little performance.

Edward held me in his arms and bent over me, whispering "I love you" as he pressed his lips to mine in rather dramatic fashion. My hair cascaded over his arm as he dipped me back similar to what Charlie had done to Renee the night before.

Behave Bella; behave....I screamed in my head, even though I wanted nothing more than to kiss him as deeply as I had earlier in the kitchen.

He must have felt my inner struggle and kindly broke the kiss before I did anything stupid. I fell back against the wall, breathing heavy for a few seconds before I even remembered Mike was standing there, aghast.

Edward reached up, pulled down the mistletoe and stuffed it Mike's front pocket and said menacingly, "Don't ever get that close to her again. Do we understand each other?" Mike stumbled backward and quickly walked away.

Edward smiled triumphantly as he turned back to me. "I'm not letting you out of my sight for a single second." He laughed as I entwined my fingers with his and kissed his hand gently.

The rest of the evening, Edward stayed true to his promise and didn't leave my side.

Shortly after his encounter with Edward, Mike abruptly left the party, telling his mother he didn't feel well.

Alice and Jasper spent a lot of time with Aunt Esme and Uncle Carlisle. Every time I saw them, they were huddled together laughing. I was glad to see them getting along so well.

At nearly 11:00pm, the last of the guests finally left. The only people who remained at the house were the Masens, and Uncle Carlisle and Aunt Esme. I collapsed onto the couch where Edward put his arm around me and pulled me close to him. I closed my eyes and laid my head against his chest while he hummed softly in my ear.

"Edward honey, we need to go." I heard Liz's voice call from the other room. I grabbed a handful of his shirt and held it tightly in my fist.

Edward started laughing. "Sorry love, I need to get going."

"Stay with me..." I mumbled into his chest. "Please."

The thought of him leaving was unbearable after everything that happened this evening. He admitted he loved me and I couldn't stop thinking about the kiss we had shared. My heart started racing just remembering the feel of his mouth on mine, and the way it felt when our bodies were pressed tightly together. I opened my eyes to see a smile on his face.

"I have to go love. I'm sorry. Believe me, there's nothing I'd rather do than stay with you. You have no idea how hard it is going to be for me to walk out that door," he said as his lips grazed my cheek.

"Edward..." his dad said as he stuck his head in the room. He grinned when he saw us and stepped out. "I'll give you a minute..."

I sighed and released my grip on his shirt. "You have to go." I pouted like a child as I stood in front of him. He got off the couch and took my face in his hands.

"I have to leave for a while, but I will be back soon. Sleep well. I love you more than you could ever know, Bella." The tenderness in his voice as he spoke nearly brought a tear to my eye.

"Goodnight, Edward. I love you too...." I whispered as I gave him one last hug before he headed off after his parents. Jasper met him in the foyer and the two of them yelled a quick goodbye to Renee and Charlie before they closed the front door behind them.

Alice came sulking into the room and sat back down with me. Her tiny head rested on my shoulder. "I miss Jasper," she sighed in a sad voice. We giggled as we heard them beep the horn on the way out of the driveway.

"I know... I asked Edward to stay. You almost had yourself some shoes." I chuckled as I stood up and started throwing plates and cups into the nearby trashcan. Alice came over and started helping.

"I'm glad you told him you loved him, Bella." Alice smiled and rubbed my back lovingly.

"Me too. Let's get this cleaned up. We need to call Rosalie and find out what the hell she has been doing while we've been gone!" In record time, we had cleaned most of the family room and headed to the dining room.

"I think we know exactly what she's been doing, and with whom," Alice said smugly. "You forget, I listened in...."

A half hour later, all traces of the freeloaders were gone, the house looked presentable once again. Renee went up to bed, exhausted from her long day. She did mention that the laundry room was a much better location for a romantic rendezvous if Edward and I felt the need to be alone again.

I told her to back off and that if she emails me one bridal website I will never speak to her again or I'll get married at a drive-thru chapel in Vegas with Elvis as the minister.

Alice and I were the last two up to bed. When we got to Alice's room, we dove onto the bed and called Rosalie immediately.

"Hello?" a very tired Rosalie said.

"Rosalie Lillian Hale, you have some explaining to do....." Alice said sternly.

Rose started laughing, knowing she was completely busted. "Hang on, let me go in the other room, he's....snoring." We could hear the fumbling of the phone as it moved closer to the loud, deep snores. Emmett sounded more like a grizzly bear than a man when he slept. We both laughed. Then there was a squeak a door opened and I could tell from the echo, she was in the bathroom.

"Ok...what do you want to know...?" I knew she was bracing herself for our questions.

"Were you ever really sick?" I started with an easy one.

"No," she said quietly.

"WHAT?? How did you fake the fever?" I asked in shock. I had felt her head myself.

"I had a heating pad under the blanket," she confessed, chuckling slightly.

"And did Emmett know you were going to fake an illness to stay behind?" Alice asked suspiciously.

"It was all his idea. I wasn't going to go to Forks at all; we were going to spend Christmas together. It was always the plan for me to fake sick and Emmett was going to pretend to get a call from work saying they needed someone last minute to work the holiday before he left with Edward, but then his mom's pipes broke and he had to go up early to help them. The call he got from 'work' while he was up there, was actually me...."

"How did we miss all this?" Alice said to me with a bewildered look on her face.

"It was easy, actually. You were distracted by your flight getting cancelled and Bella waswell, in love. It made this much easier than I ever expected." Rose laughed, happy to have come clean.

"Soooooooo," I said giggling. "What have you two been up to?"

"Honestly, we haven't left bed except to eat, and shower for the last two days."

"Well, it certainly sounded like you were having fun before," Alice teased. "Did Emmett ever realize he didn't hang up the phone when he was talking to Jasper? Because we got to listen in on your latest sexcapade, you know....." We both burst out laughing.

"He did what?? What did you hear?" she screamed. We heard the door to her bedroom flying open and crashing into the wall.

She must have flipped the light on because Emmett yelled, "Hey, I can't see.... I'm blind, Rose! What the hell are you doing?"

"Where's your phone?" she hissed at him.

"Um, I don't know. I had it, but I kinda dropped it when you did that thing with your tongue..." he said in a very husky voice, Alice and I giggled.

"Emmett! Alice and Bella are on the phone shut up! You didn't hang up your phone and they were all listening to us before!" she yelled.

"Good, maybe Edward and Jasper learned a thing or two; you girls better thank me when you see me again!" Emmett yelled in the background. I had tears running down my face from laughing so much.

"Here it is, you idiot."

We heard the phone crash into something and Emmett yelling, "Ok, girls, I am going to go, tell Edward and Jasper they are assholes for listening and I plan on smacking them the next time I see them."

"I love you two, and don't do anything I wouldn't do," she said with a laugh.

"From what I heard before, there isn't much on that list, Rose!" Alice squealed into the phone. Just before she snapped it shut, she added, "We love you too, have fun! Bye Emmett, you hot, sexy, man!"

We rolled off the bed and laughed on the floor for a good ten minutes. Finally, when our sides hurt so bad we couldn't stand up, we were ready for bed. I gave Alice a big hug and we made an agreement that whoever woke up first, gets to wake up the other person. It was Christmas after all.

I went into my bathroom to get ready for bed and saw Edward's underwear still sitting on my sink with my panties on top of them, it made me smile. I brushed my teeth and got dressed for bed. I decided to end my evening of going commando, throwing my underwear back on. I glanced back down at Edwards and decided to wear it instead of a pair of shorts to bed along with a t shirt. I crawled into bed and grabbed my phone to text Edward.

Edward,

I'm going to bed, just wanted to say goodnight.

I love you,

Bella

PS: I'm wearing your underwear to bed! I look pretty cute in them if I do say so myself. Too bad you're not here to see it, oh well.

I chuckled as I closed the phone imagining his face when he read the message. That will teach him to go home, I laughed to myself. Reaching over, I flipped off the light next to my bed and snuggled down under the covers, waiting for the bed to warm up.

It was impossible to sleep. Every time I closed my eyes, I saw Edwards face or I would remember the feel of his lips on mine, and it was just too much. Luckily, I didn't know his mom's address or I probably would have driven over there at midnight, just to make a fool of myself and see him.

God, I'm pathetic, I was thinking when I heard the familiar jingle of my phone receiving a text message.

Bella,

Are you trying to kill me tonight? First you ask me to stay with you, and then you tell me you are lying in bed, wearing my underwear. I am only human.

I would say goodnight, but I am getting out of bed to take a nice cold shower.

I love you too.

Edward

I was still giggling at his reply when the phone started ringing. Of course it was Edward.

"Hey there. How was the shower?" I laughed quietly into the phone.

"Lonely..." he murmured.

"I'm sorry... only 167 hours if that makes you feel any better." I tried to cheer him up a bit.

"Not much." He laughed. "Hey, I forgot to ask you something tonight."

"What?"

"I wanted to see if you would be my date for New Years Day," he said sweetly.

"Why, I would love to be your New Years Day date. What time will you be picking me up?" I said coyly as I played along with his game.

"Well, I'd like to get an early start to our date, so I'll get you at the stroke of midnight. Is that OK?"

"Sounds like a plan! Of course, I'll be out with my girlfriends celebrating New Years Eve, so it might not be a bad idea to go to the same place so we can just leave from there." I was grinning from ear to ear at the thought of actually going on a date with Edward, alone, without any crazy bets hanging over both of our heads.

"That sounds like a great idea. OK, I'm going to try and get some sleep, but I doubt it will work, I'm finding myself a bit distracted this evening."

"Me too..." I said quietly. "Goodnight Edward."

"Goodnight, my love. I'll see you tomorrow."

Xooxooxooxoox

FYI-Emmett was the hands down winner in the last poll, Rosalie in second. The vile Mike Newton got a disturbingly large number of votes...my personal choices were Emmett and Jacob, in case you were wondering. New poll up now. Thanks to everyone who voted.

Hope you enjoyed this chapter.....now go read the next one!

Chapter: 25

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks again to Hb1, Editing Queen! How about that, I made you Royalty.

Gifts

BPOV

The next morning, the first thing I remember hearing was the creaking sound of my door opening, then quiet footsteps in my room. My back was toward the door, but I opened one eye to see the clock said 7:00am, and the sun was just starting to rise outside my window. I buried my head under the pillow and groaned.

"Alice, we are not eight years old...don't you think 7 am is a bit early..."

She said something, but with the pillow over my head, her words were muffled and lost.

"Just get in bed and lay down for a little bit, I'm not ready to go downstairs and face Renee and her questions about Edward again." Alice lifted the covers next to me, pausing before she climbed into bed and began gently rubbing my back.

As I tried to go back to sleep, I rolled all the way onto my stomach and my bare leg brushed against Alice's flannel pajama bottoms. Wait, Alice doesn't wear flannel.... "This isn't Alice in bed with me is it?" I said mortified. The shaking I felt from his laughter, confirmed my suspicions. "Edward!" I shrieked as I flipped over to see his beautiful face, inches from mine, his hair still messy like he just rolled out of bed himself.

"Merry Christmas!" he said happily as I bolted upright in the bed.

"What the hell are you doing here? How did you get in? Who told you to come up here?" I thought for a second "Renee..." I muttered my mother's name like it was a dirty word.

"Actually, she's the answer to all those questions. She and my mom decided last night that you all were going to come to my house for breakfast. She and Charlie are off getting ready, and Jasper is waking up Alice." He pointed his thumb in the direction of Alice's room when we heard her scream. "See, now Alice is awake too." His smile made me melt completely into his arms. That was, until there was a knock on my door, and Renee stuck her head in.

"Merry Christmas, you two, Lovebirds!! Hurry up, we need to go..." She stood in my doorway in her green, flannel, Christmas tree pajamas.

"Um, hi, Mom. This isn't what it looks like, and are you going to put on some real clothes before we go to the Masen's?" I asked as I pulled the covers over me to hide Edward's underwear that was currently on my butt.

"No, we're supposed to come over in our pajamas. Liz's orders. Come on, get up! And

don't worry, I didn't see anything..." she said in a sing song voice before she closed the door.

I glanced over at Edward, who was highly amused by the whole exchange. "Don't encourage her Edward.... I'm telling you....don't encourage her," I mumbled as I put my elbow on the pillow and propped my head up in my hand next to him. He mirrored my body position, and gave me a sexy smile which sent my heart flying. "Edward.... Whatever you're thinking... stop it..."

"What?" he said innocently as he leaned over and I felt his lips running along the side of my neck. He gently pulled the collar of my t shirt to the side so he could kiss my collarbone. My head fell back as I enjoyed the sensation of his lips on my skin. His free hand wrapped around my side and rested on the small of my back to hold me close. "I missed you last night," he whispered to me as his lips moved to my cheek. "You have no idea how much..."

Bella, this is trouble.... You are getting close to the point of no return.... Oh, come on, would that really be such a bad thing?

My internal argument raged until I heard Renee scream, "Bella!!" Her shrill voice startled me so bad, I fell backwards out of the bed and landed with a thud on the floor. Edward flung himself across the bed, trying to catch me, but missed.

His arms dangled over the side of the bed as his green eyes ran themselves all over my body. I didn't realize why he was staring at until he muttered "You really do look unbelievable in my underwear..." His voice thick with desire, as he started to advance toward me.

"Freeze, Masen! I need to throw some pants on... don't you take another step." I held up one finger in warning to him. He sat up on the bed and sulked, but I felt his keen eyes still examining my body as I went to my dresser for some more appropriate clothes.

I reached in the top drawer and pulled a pair of red and black plaid pants, and just pulled them on over what I was wearing. He fell back onto the bed and groaned, "You're going to keep them on?"

His body was sprawled out pathetically across my bed as I crawled next to him and kissed his cheek. "Yes, I am! And you know you love it." Before I could run away, his arms grabbed me and knocked me over onto the bed beside him.

"You know we could always just stay here....." I felt his tongue running along my jaw as he worked his way to my mouth.

"Isabella Marie Swan!!!!!" Renee hollered from the bottom of the stairs. "Edward Anthony Masen! Get down here!"

I pointed at Edward and laughed, "OOOHHHH, you're on trouble....." I jumped off the bed and ran to the door.

"I'm coming, Mom; it's all Edward's fault!" I glanced back and stuck my tongue out at him, but he had sprung to his feet and started chasing me down the stairs.

Renee stood at the bottom of the stairs, tapping her foot at me, trying to look intimidating, but a faint smile came over her face when Edward wrapped his arm around my shoulders.

"Sorry, Mom..." we mumbled together. She rolled her eyes and headed out the door with Charlie.

Alice was standing off to the side in her silk pajamas, looking very excited, but unsure of her wardrobe. She kept fidgeting with her pajamas and running her fingers through her short hair. Alice was most comfortable when she was dressed to the nines.

"Don't worry, you look beautiful, Alice," I said as I skipped past her to the Christmas tree. I quickly grabbed all my gifts; one for my parents, one for Alice, and one for Edward. He eyed the presents curiously, trying to figure out which one was his.

"Mr. Nosey, don't worry about which one it is...just go get in the car. You'll find out soon enough," I said with a playful smile.

The Masen's house sat on the top of a small hill. It was a beautiful red brick colonial with black shutters, complete with the white pillars on either side of the front door. A single candle was illuminated in each of the windows of the house and perched on the roof of the garage, was an enormous lighted Santa, sleigh and four glowing reindeer.

"Merry Christmas!" Liz cried as we walked in the door. She was dressed in green plaid pajama's that matched Mr. Masen's exactly. I glanced down at Edward who was wearing exactly the same plaid bottoms, but a solid green shirt. I bit my lip to keep from laughing.

"One day a year I wear them, because it makes her happy if we all match. Tell anyone and I will scan your prom picture and make t-shirts. Do we understand each other?" His cheeks turned the cutest shade of pink from his embarrassment.

"I think it's cute." I gave him a wink then went over and hugged Liz and Edward Sr. "Merry Christmas! And thanks for sending the human alarm clock after us," I said as I gave a nod Edward's direction.

She stole a quick look at her son, her eyes twinkling. "He's the one that woke us up so early this morning. It was like he was five years old all over again." Liz leaned in grinning and said, "I think he missed you..."

"That's enough, Mother..." Edward rolled his eyes and placing a hand on my back, led me out of the foyer and far away from Liz.

We ended up in the kitchen where Jasper was flipping pancakes into the air and Alice was catching them on a plate. Edward went to work on the bacon and sausage and handed me a box of eggs. "Get scrambling, girl." We worked side by side, watching Alice run around chasing Jasper's flying pancakes, and trying not to get hit when one sailed out of control in our direction.

Breakfast was delicious. We all gathered around the dining room table and spent the next hour listening to stories about Liz and Renee in college and all the trouble they got into. A few times, I covered my ears because I was getting more information than I wanted to about my dear mother. More than once, Edward even cringed hearing about his mom and the frat boys back in the day.

When the last plate was loaded into the dishwasher, Liz gathered us all around the Christmas tree to exchange gifts. Edward and I sat next to Alice and Jasper on one side of the tree while our parents sat on the other.

"I want my gifts first!" Alice demanded. Patience never was her strong suit. I dug around and found the big, rectangular box with the penguin wrapping paper on it, and handed to her grinning madly. "That smile has me worried..." Alice mumbled as she started tearing the paper off my gift. She opened the box and had the most confused look on her face. Her nose wrinkled like she smelled something bad as she began inspecting the contents.

"Sweatpants? You got me sweatpants....FROM WALMART??" she shouted as she looked at the tags. "Are you mentally ill?" Alice screamed. I started hyperventilating, I was laughing so hard. "And a sweatshirt...size LARGE? What are these... fat clothes?" She was glaring at me for explanation, but I was laughing too hard to answer. I took a second and calmed myself to explain.

"Remember a few weeks ago, when you asked me to go outside my comfort zone, and I agreed, under the condition that I got to push you out of your comfort zone once? Well, Rose went to a football game, so you get to wear what I pick out for you for one day, and I pick non designer clothes!" I said triumphantly, but Alice continued to glare.

"Wait a minute, I ask you to go outside your comfort zone and you get...this!" She waved her hands, motioning to Edward, "Totally hot guy, you fall madly in love with..." I heard Renee and Liz screeching on the other side of the tree. "And I get this?" She thrust the grey sweatpants into the air.

Edward was rolling on the ground, slapping the floor with his hand. Jasper was trying his hardest not to laugh, his face buried in his hands.

"Come on Alice, it's just us and we all love you. You will look cute.....if anyone can pull off grey sweats, it's you...." I pleaded with her, unleashing my big brown eyes on her. "For me, Alice...."

"I hate you!" she spat as she marched off to the bathroom to change.

When she was out of earshot, we burst into hysterics. Alice was gone much longer than I thought she would be. Jasper gave Edward a bunch of CD's and Edward gave Jasper a set of DVD's on the Civil War. Both of them were examining their gifts when Alice returned.

She stepped into the room and I almost didn't recognize the clothes she was wearing. It looked like she had been attacked by "Edward Scissorhands". The sweatshirt was cut so that it was now sleeveless and hung fashionably off her shoulder, exposing her tank top underneath; like in that movie "Flashdance", but Alice wore it inside out. The sweat pants were rolled up to her mid calf and somehow she'd made them very form fitting. She looked really cute.

"Happy?" Alice scowled.

Jasper saved the day by whispering something in her ear that made her grin bigger than I had ever seen before. She threw her arms around his neck and hugged him.

"Ok, where were we before I was forced to dress like a hobo?" She reached around and found a box wrapped in red paper and held it out to me, but not before she stuck her tongue out at me and smiled to let me know I was forgiven.

I took the package from her hands and gingerly removed the paper. Inside was a first edition copy of "To Kill a Mockingbird", my favorite book. "Alice, this is fantastic!" I wailed

as I threw my arms around her.

"I bet you feel pretty bad for doing this to me now, don't you??" she teased as she pulled on her sweatpants. I searched behind me and pulled out a small wrapped box and handed it to her.

"Here is your other gift," I said as her face broke into a smile, realizing the sweats weren't her only gift.

Inside the box was a charm bracelet she had admired when we were shopping. I added a few charms to make her laugh, a high heel shoe, a car and a book. I even found a 'J' which was hanging right next to the shoe.

"Bella, I love it!" she screamed as she tackled me onto the floor. She climbed off of me and ran over to Jasper to show him all the charms. He got a big smile on his face when he saw the 'J'.

"Would you like your gift now?" Edward asked, his smooth voice making my heart beat speed up with anticipation. There was a twinkle in his eye as he waited for my answer.

"Sure," I said excitedly.

(np) Before he handed me my present, I tried to wrack my brain and guess what it could be. The package was a long, rectangular box, a bit deeper than usual, but not large and not very heavy. I gave it a playful shake before I started to rip the gold paper off my gift. With slightly trembling hands, I lifted the lid, and what was inside took my breath away.

"Do you like it?" Edward asked anxiously as he awaited my reaction.

"Oh Edward, it's beautiful..." I gently picked up the fabric inside to reveal the most exquisite black dress I had ever seen.

"I wanted you to have something beautiful to wear with your new shoes on our first date."

His silky voice stirred something deep down in my body. I imagined how I would look in this dress and at the same time, imagined how it would feel to have Edward take this dress off of me and carry me into his bed. I gave my head a slight shake to bring me out of my fantasy.

Edward was smiling uncontrollably as he watched me stare at the dress, hypnotized by it. It was so beautiful I couldn't stop looking at it, touching it. I stood up and held it up to my body while Alice jumped to her feet and started clapping her hands together. Liz and Renee ran over to admire the dress also.

"Edward, it's spectacular. You better take her someplace wonderful," Liz advised her son, while Renee nodded her head in agreement. They gawked at it for a few more minutes, and then instructed me to put it away before I got it dirty.

Smiling like crazy, I carefully placed it back into the box, and went over to Edward.

"Thank you so much. I absolutely love it and I love you." I brushed his hair out of his eyes and ran my fingers down the side of his face before I placed a tender kiss on his lips. As I rested my forehead on his, I gave him a big smirk. "Would you like your present now?"

"Absolutely!" he said with enthusiasm as I reached for the box wrapped in the blood red

paper. I placed it in his lap and sat at his feet while he opened it. He looked down and raised a suspicious eyebrow at the grin on my face. As soon as his fingers broke through the paper, revealing the gift underneath, he started laughing. His reaction was music to my ears; I could no longer contain my excitement.

“Do you like them? I thought they might come in handy...” I teased as I reached into the box and pulled out one of the running shoes and dangled it on my finger at him. “Maybe you’d like to work on your stamina for the next few days.” I was still giggling when he snatched the shoe off my finger and stuffed it back into the box with a smile on his face.

He waved me closer with his finger like he was going to tell me a secret, his eyes full of such fire and desire that I got butterflies in my stomach as I moved closer to him. “So worried about my stamina, are you?” he said so softly that I was the only one who could hear him. “You know Bella; I’ll admit that when I run, I don’t have the greatest stamina. However, in other activities, my endurance is rather.... phenomenal. I’ll have to show you sometime soon....”

I sat back down, completely speechless, my mouth dangling open a bit. Screw the shoes, Bella

Edward was grinning proudly at my flabbergasted expression from his little comment. I could feel the blood coursing through my veins and I became very aware of his lips and how sexy they looked in that crooked smile of his right now. I couldn’t take my eyes off of him, and I could see the same yearning in his eyes. He reached down, picked up my hand, and kissed the inside of my wrist gently.

“Edward....” I said, trying to warn him with my eyes that this was probably not the best idea, considering our parents were on the other side of the room, and Alice was watching us like a hawk at this moment.

“Thank you for the gift, Bella. I’ll put them to good use. I promise,” he said with a wink, and then returned my hand to my lap. I realized I was practically panting, so I took a few deep breaths before facing Alice. She could tell just from the look on my face that I was on the verge of throwing in the towel and shot me a knowing smile.

“Alice, give Jasper his gift,” I nearly shouted, trying to distract myself from the fact that Edward was now caressing my hair.

He chuckled softly behind me. “What’s got you so worked up, Bella?” I turned and smirked as I pointed directly at his face. Pleased with himself, he sat back and laughed.

Alice gave Jasper a beautiful, hand carved mahogany box, which could be use for storing important papers, mementos or letters. When he opened it, I could see a few pink envelopes peeking out that Alice must have put in there.

The antique shop, where we bought it, said he thought it was from the mid 1800’s, and as soon as Alice saw it, she knew Jasper would love it. He ran his fingers across the carvings on the top of the box a few times, admiring the craftsmanship that went into making it. He scooped Alice up in his arms and hugged her tightly, and again whispered something in her ear that made her blush.

Jasper sat Alice on his lap as he handed her a beautiful box, covered in silver paper with an enormous red bow tied on top. She carefully slid the ribbon off and ripped the paper from the box. She opened the box a crack and squealed, pulling out three thick, bound journals

Alice had been writing in her journals every night since she was ten years old, recording her thoughts and experiences, documenting every day in her life. I knew someday she hoped to share them with her daughter, and show her how she was feeling at some of the most important times in her life, her first love, the boy who broke her heart, true friendship and love.

I watched her caress the leather covers as Jasper pointed to the one with the darkest cover. Alice placed it in her lap, opening it to the first page. Her eyes immediately filled with tears as she started reading. Her eyes darted across the page, taking in every word, and then she collapsed back into Jaspers' arms and buried her tear stained face into his chest.

I took Edward by the hand and we went and joined our parents, giving Alice and Jasper a moment alone.

"So what did you get, Mom?" I asked Renee, who was clutching a box in her arms and grinning

"Well, Liz and I got each other gift certificates to the salon, so we can get our hair and nails done one afternoon. And Daddy got me a Food Saver food vacuum!" She was giddy over the crazy machine in her hands.

"Very romantic, Dad..." I teased.

"Hey, she has been asking for that crazy thing since she saw it on TV last month. And she looks rather happy to me." Charlie shot back as he wrapped his arm around Renee and kissed the top of her head. "Now just think how much fun you can have when I come back from fishing."

Liz showed off the new mixer Edward's father had given her. It was a pale blue and matched the small flowers on the wallpaper in her kitchen. She was as pleased as Renee with her gift and asked Edward to carry it into the kitchen for her. Charlie and Edward Sr. followed, wanting to get another cup of coffee.

"Bella, I have something for you, dear," Liz said softly as she held out a present toward me, a warm smile on her face. She patted the couch next to her, for me to sit down.

"I'm sorry, Liz. I feel terrible. I didn't get you anything..." I mumbled with embarrassment.

"Bella, you have given me the best gift of all, you and Edward." She glanced toward the kitchen where we could hear Edward and his dad arguing about who was going to climb on the roof and take down the giant Santa and smiled. "All I have ever wanted was for him to be happy, and to find true love." She placed her hand on my knee and her eyes glistened with tears. "He found that with you, Bella and I couldn't be happier. You are such a lovely young lady. I can see in your eyes how much you love him. It radiates off of you when you look at him. He is happier than I have ever seen him, smiling for no reason and chipper. That is all because of you."

When Liz finished speaking, I tried to hold back my tears, but a few escaped and ran down my cheek. She motioned to the gift and I started to rip the paper off the package. Alice came over to see what it would be. When I took the lid off, I nearly dropped the box from shock.

Sitting on my lap was an ornate, silver picture frame that held two photos. One was the picture that Alice must have taken the night Edward and I fell asleep on the couch. I was

on my back, clutching the front of his shirt in my hand and Edward was next to me, his arm draped across my stomach, his face right next to mine.

"That was the picture I took, right after you told him you loved him, Bella," Alice said quietly. My tear-filled eyes looked up at her and I mouthed a silent 'thank you', because I was unable to speak in that moment. My eyes then moved to the adjacent photo.

It was a very sweet picture. There were two small children who couldn't have been more than two years old, lying on a couch sound asleep. The little boy was lying on his back and the little girl with brown hair had her head resting on his stomach as she slept. I looked up at Renee in confusion.

"Is that me?" I asked pointing to the little girl. The face was half hidden in the boy's shirt, but she looked familiar. Renee nodded her head yes and I noticed her eyes were full of tears too. I glanced back at the picture and looked at the little boy. "Then who is this?" I looked up at Liz, who was staring at something. I followed her eyes over to Edward, who was standing in the doorway, watching us quietly.

"Edward?" I said in disbelief.

"This was taken when they came for a visit, just before they moved to Salt Lake City. When Alice showed me the picture she took of you guys the other night, I called Liz to see if she still had this one," Renee said softly, stroking my hair.

"Thank you...it's the most precious thing..." was all I managed to squeak out before I started crying, while I clutched the photo to my chest, holding onto it for dear life.

Xoxoxoxoxox

Everyone together.....AAAWWWWWOnly one person guessed they met when they were little. Kudos to you! Hope you liked it, go vote in the poll if you get a chance.

Chapter: 26

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

ARPOOLING

BPOV

Edward watched from the doorway as I held the picture in my arms. Renee and Liz reminisced about the day it was taken. We had gone to the local park for a picnic, but instead of eating, Edward and I found a playground to explore. We spent the afternoon running, climbing and going down the slide. By the time we got back to the house, Edward was sound asleep, so Liz laid him on the couch for a nap. I apparently, crawled up there a few minutes later and fell asleep too.

After they shared the story behind the picture, Renee and Liz excused themselves into the kitchen, Alice mumbled something about going to find Jasper, and then, she was gone too. With the room emptied, Edward slowly walked over to the couch where I was sitting, and joined me.

"May I?" He asked as he took the frame from my hand. I watched him tilt his head to the side as he inspected the picture. He ran his finger delicately across my hair in the photo, a small smile on his face. He seemed to be taking in every detail of it, holding the frame close to his face occasionally to get a better look at something. "You were a very cute little girl," he said softly, his voice full of emotion.

I took the picture from his hand and pointed at his sleeping, toddler face. "And you were adorable. Just look at all the curls you had." I looped my finger through a wavy piece of hair that had fallen into his eyes and pushed it to the side, then letting my hand rest on his cheek. "Did you know?" I asked softly.

He shook his head, his eyes going back to the picture for a second. "I found out when you did. My mom was looking through her old photo albums, but I just thought that she was being nostalgic with it being Christmas." He gave his shoulders a shrug, smiling, and again turned his attention back to the pictures, examining them as if trying to remember something. "I have seen this picture so many times before, but I never knew who she was....." he whispered so softly I didn't know if he meant for me to hear him.

"I will treasure this always." I collapsed against his chest, the picture still in his hand.

I had looked at the picture at least twenty times since opening the gift from Liz. Every time I saw Edward's baby face, my heart melted. Awhile later, as I stood in the kitchen, Alice caught me peeking at it yet again and laughed. "Do you believe me yet?"

"Believe you about what?" I mumbled as I tore my eyes away from the picture only to be met by the smug look on her face.

"About this..." she said, tapping her finger on the frame. "That this was meant to be."

I wanted to believe her, more than anything. "I don't know. " My insecurities were getting the better of me, and as much as I tried to fight them, they were still there, screaming in my head.

"He loves you, Bella. It's written all over his face. Every time you walk into the room, he absolutely glows," she said with certainty. I, however, was hesitant. "Surely you can't be questioning how he feels about you?" she said in disbelief.

"No, I know he loves me.... I just..." My mind was racing for the words to make her understand. "I guess I just don't understand why he loves me..." I looked back down at the picture, letting my hair cover my face so I could hide.

From behind me, I heard the kindest, most gentle voice offer an answer, "I love you because you are brilliant, and funny, clever and silly, beautiful and honest, loyal and trusting, thoughtful and kind." Edward gently spun me around to face him. He lifted my chin so he could look into my tear-filled eyes and continued, "I love you because you are the most amazing person I have ever met, and I will love you...always." There was no doubt or uncertainty in his voice, only love.

His thumbs ran across my cheeks and slowly wiped away the trails of tears. "I love you," he whispered. If the look on his face wasn't enough to convince me, the intensity of his eyes told me every word he spoke was true.

"I love you too. More than I ever imagined I could love someone...." I stood on my tip toes to kiss his now smiling lips. "Only 156 more hours," I whispered while my lips were still touching his.

He made a playful growl and spun me around. "Now to find Jasper. We should be getting back to my house; we have a Christmas dinner to cook." He gave my hand a reassuring squeeze before he disappeared out of the kitchen.

"Feel better?" Alice asked gently. I nodded my head, smiling when I heard Edward and Jasper arguing about who got to drive. "Good. Be happy Bella, you deserve this." She hugged me as tightly as her tiny arms could. As I hugged her, my hand across the back of her sliced up sweatshirt.

Laughing, I said, "Come on; let's get you home, out of these ugly rags and into something fabulous!"

Edward and Jasper dropped us off at my parent's house so we could get dressed and help Renee get dinner started. After we showered, made a quick call to Rosalie and Emmett to wish them a Merry Christmas, we headed off to the kitchen, the smell of turkey filling the house.

"Give us a job, Mom."

Renee looked up from peeling potatoes long enough to say, "Go set the table, girls. There will be.... 10 of us this year. The dishes are in the hutch. Use the red table cloth and the green napkins..."

"We've got it under control, Mom... don't worry." Alice and I flitted to the dining room, sticking the extra leaf in the table; it was now big enough for ten people. Alice folded the napkins into elaborate shapes, something her mom had taught her when she was little. When we were done, the table looked like it should have been on the cover of a magazine.

The rest of the afternoon was spent in the kitchen. Alice was on cookie duty, making elaborate cookie trays for dessert. I was in charge of salad and the cheese tray. When Aunt Esme got here, she and Renee went on turkey watch, nervously peering into the oven window every few minutes, hoping the bird wouldn't hold up dinner.

I was looking out the kitchen window when I heard their car pull into the driveway. "They're here!" I squealed, dropping the bowl I was washing into the soapy water and dashing to the door.

"Someone's a little excited..." I heard Esme giggle as she cleaned up the bubbles that had spilled over the edge of the sink on my way out of the kitchen.

I threw open the door to see Edward standing on the porch, cheerfully smiling, while the rest of his family was yards behind him, laughing. "I haven't seen him move that fast in a while," Edward Sr. snickered to Liz, who was smiling when she saw me already in Edward's ar

"Leave him alone, Edward, he's in love. You used to be that excited to see me too, many moons ago," Liz teased as I led them all into the house. Edward collected their coats and hung them in the front closet.

"Gentlemen! I find it best to stay away from the kitchen at this point in the dinner preparation, for the good of my marriage. Renee gets a little nuts right now....the turkey never cooperates. Carlisle and I are hiding out here watching the game." Charlie held out his arm, leading them into the family room.

The turkey was only a half hour late this year; it was the closest Renee had ever been to serving dinner when she said she would. The rest of the food was fabulous and the company was even better. Edward and Jasper told everyone about their plans for the bar; including what locations they were currently looking into as possible sites. I watched Carlisle and Edward put their heads together and discuss the merits of one location over another when marketing the bar. Charlie kept us laughing with stories from his latest fishing trip including the one about the legendary, 20 pound, Black Fin Trout that he swears he saw inches away from his boat.

Christmas with Edward was magical; there was no other way to explain it. Alice and Jasper were off whispering together on the couch while Edward played the piano again for me. I sat alongside him in awe, as his fingers nimbly flew across the keys, creating the most magnificent melody. I recognized it as the tune I frequently found him humming to himself.

Much sooner than I would have liked, they left. Liz needed them to finish tearing up the basement carpet that had been ruined in the flood before they headed back to Portland the following day. Alice and I offered to come over and help, but the boys wouldn't hear of it. They were however, more than willing to ride back to Portland with us when I offered. Edward's father was saved a long trip, and Renee felt better that Alice and I wouldn't be driving all that way by ourselves.

The following afternoon, just after lunch, Alice and I said our goodbyes to my parents. The snow fell gently on the lawn as Alice thanked them profusely for their hospitality. They told her she was welcome to come back anytime, the sooner the better. Charlie jammed our bags into the trunk, trying to keep some room for Edward and Jasper's as well. Charlie made sure we had our maps, cell phones and a blanket in case we broke down. I flashed my AAA card at him and rolled my eyes, telling him we would be fine.

After he closed the trunk, he gave me a hug and kissed the top of my head. "I love you, Bella. You girls, be careful on the way home. If you get tired, let Edward drive please. Don't be stubborn..." I responded with another eye roll which just made him laugh. "Can I tell you a secret?" Charlie asked in a hushed voice. I leaned in closer so I wouldn't miss it. "Your taste in men is almost as good as your mother's."

"Dad, you're a dork," I grumbled as I punched him in the shoulder, trying to sound annoyed. But really, I was about to jump out of my skin with excitement because Charlie liked Edward, a lot. "I love you both; we'll call you when we get in." I hugged my parents then jumped in the car where Alice was already trembling with excitement. We waved as we pulled out of the driveway and headed toward the Masen's house.

Edward and Jasper were packed and standing on the porch when we pulled into the driveway. I turned off the car and started laughing. "Is Liz ready to get rid of you two already? Why are you standing on the porch like you've been thrown out of the house?"

Edward strode out to the car, laughing. "You haven't bothered to look at the weather, have you?" I shrugged. "There's a storm coming, we need to get moving. Come on..." Edward threw the bags in the trunk and smashed it closed with all his might. I ran into the house quickly so I could say goodbye to Liz and Edward Sr. They both gave me a big hug, and wished us a safe trip.

Liz pulled me into one last hug and whispered "Take good care of my baby for me." Then she kissed me on the cheek.

"I will, I promise." I waved as I ran out to the car. Edward was sitting impatiently behind the wheel.

"What the hell do you think you are doing?" I asked as I ripped open the driver's side door.

"I'm driving. Now, get in," he directed. I however, thrust my hands to my hips and glared at him. "Bella, please....be reasonable. I will get us home faster."

I was about to throw a handful of snow directly into his face, when Alice saved him. "Come on Bella, let the big baby drive, you can be in charge of the radio... Let's get this road trip started!!" I glared at Edward who had a triumphant smirk on his face, thrilled Alice jumped to his aid.

"Fine." I growled as I huffed down onto the passenger seat. "Quit smiling at me, I'm mad at you." My arms were crossed tightly on my chest. He started the car, but before pulling out of the driveway, I could see him grinning at me out of the corner of my eye. I tried to ignore him, but it wasn't working.

I continued staring stubbornly out the windshield, refusing to acknowledge him. I saw him wave at me, but I ignored him. He poked me in the shoulder, but I ignored him. He beeped the horn and I ignored him until his dad came running out of the house to see what was wrong. I felt the corner of my mouth twitch, but I took a deep breath and continued to ignore him. Finally, he leaned over and stuck his tongue out at me like a two year old brat and I cracked. I started laughing.

"I thought you were going to get us home fast. So far we've been in the car for two minutes and gone nowhere!" I teased, as he threw the car into reverse and started down the driveway. As soon as we hit the blacktop of the road I asked the questions that always annoyed the hell out of Charlie when we were in the car. "Are we there yet? How

much longer until we get there?"

Alice giggled from the back seat. "Are we going to have to listen to you two bicker for the next 5 hours?"

"The way Edward is driving, it may take more like seven now" Jasper commented as he glanced over Edward's shoulder at the speedometer.

"Um, I hate to break it to all of you, but it's snowing. I'd prefer we make it back in one piece if you don't mind," Edward retorted as he reached over and took my hand in his, giving it a squeeze. I started to smile when I felt a sharp pain in my shoulder.

"Punch buggy Blue!" Jasper yelled as he pummeled me.

"What the hell?" I screamed.

"Jasper!" Alice chirped as I heard a loud slap from the back seat.

"But it was a punch buggy...come on, haven't you ever played it before?" Jasper asked, exasperated.

"Of course. But who wants to get punched in the arm for the next 5 hours??" Alice snapped. "Let's come up with something better to do if we see one..." The tone in Alice's voice had me scared.

"What did you have in mind?" Jasper purred. I glanced over at Edward, who was straining to hear her answer like I was.

"Well, instead of punching someone, if you call punch buggy, you get to take an article of clothing from the person of your choice." I slowly looked over my shoulder in disbelief.

"You are actually proposing we play strip punch buggy?" My mouth hung open. Edward laughed and agreed to it immediately; since he was driving, he probably assumed he was the safest. Jasper quickly agreed as Alice grinned, waiting to see what I had to say on the matter.

"Um, doesn't this break a rule or something?" I mumbled as I quickly started counting the number of articles of clothing I was wearing in my head.

"Rose is out of the bet, so if you agree it is within the rules, then we are fine. Do you agree?" Alice smirked. I had the feeling I was being set up somehow.

I debated how wise an idea this was, as I figured I had ten pieces of clothing on my body. How many punch buggies could there be on this highway?

I was still deciding when Edward started to taunt me. "Bella, are you afraid?" he asked sarcastically.

Get ready to lose Edward. "I'm in, however.... Every third punch buggy is a double loss round. You get to pick two articles of clothing." I glared at Edward. "Happy?"

"Extremely!" he said, beaming. He gripped the steering wheel and scanned the oncoming traffic. "Game on!"

For the next twenty minutes we sat, silent, with our faces pressed to the windows of the car, searching for the first elusive punch buggy. I watched Edward scanning every car as it approached with no luck, but his eyes were darting across all lanes of the highway effortlessly. I started looking off of the highway into driveways and back roads for one, but found nothing.

Seconds later, Edward yelled punch buggy yellow and pointed into the traffic going in the opposite direction, a crooked smile across his face. He gave me a sideways glance that told me I was losing something soon.

"Make your pick, Edward," Alice ordered from the back, still pressing her face to the back window, looking for punch buggies.

"Bella, remove your bra," he said matter-of-factly, like it was the obvious choice.

"What?" I gasped. "How about we start with something small, like a sock, glove, or the coat...anything, but the bra," I begged, but he just smiled and shook his head.

"Alice said I get to pick the article, and from whomever I want. She never clarified an order to undress in... So I pick you and your bra please." The wicked look on his face told me this would be a long ride. I glanced back at Alice, who was snickering.

I will get you back Edward..... I thought as I took off my coat so I could get to my bra.

"I think you missed your calling as a lawyer, Edward. Contract law, you'd have been brilliant at finding loopholes..." I mumbled as I untucked my shirt.

Edward kept one eye on the road, but the other was extremely interested in what I was about to do. I leaned forward and hiked up the back of my shirt, barely exposing my bra strap. With the flick of my fingers, I undid the back clasp, feeling my breasts slightly fall without any support. Alice clasped her hand over Jasper's eyes as she giggled at my predicament.

I quickly shot my hand up the sleeve of my shirt and pulled the strap off of my shoulder and down to my elbow, snaking my arm out of it, exposing no flesh to Edward. I repeated the process on the other side, finally allowing the tiny piece of red lace to fall in a pile on my lap. Edward's jaw dropped as he glanced in my direction. I wasn't sure if it was because I actually did it or from the color of my bra. Either way, it was now my mission to get him back. I dangled the fabric in front of his face for a second before I laid it out across his lap.

"There you go, Eddie.....enjoy." His smile grew larger as he ran his fingers lightly across the lace. He glanced over at my chest and I stuck my tongue out while quickly putting my jacket back on, covering myself.

"Good job, Bella.... Being able to remove a bra without removing your shirt is one of the greatest skills passed down from woman to woman, through the generations," Alice marveled to Jasper as she scanned the countryside for a punch buggy.

Out of nowhere Edward shouted, "Punch buggy Black!" and waved his finger ahead of us. I buried my face in my hands certain he would go after me again. "Bella love, please remove your.....jacket."

I breathed a loud sigh of relief as I wiggled my arms out of my jacket. Feeling slightly chilly,

I folded my arms across my chest and turned up the heat in the car. I laid the jacket between Edward and me on the front seat.

“Punch buggy yellow!” Alice squealed next. “Bonus round!!” She eyed Jasper from head to toe. “Lose the jacket and shirt, Jazz.” She giggled.

Jasper groaned, but obeyed her requests. “Bella, turn that heat up a bit, please...it’s freezing in here,” he begged, now sitting in the back seat in only his jeans and a white tank top.

An hour later, we hadn’t seen any more punch buggies. Edward kept eyeing my jeans like they would be coming off the next time he yelled punch buggy. I frantically scanned the road, hoping to beat him to the punch. I decided to try and distract Edward as a way of improving my chances of finding the next punch buggy. I started running my fingers up and down his arm. He glanced my way and I gave him a flirty smile. I glanced over my shoulder and Alice was doing the same thing to Jasper, trying to keep him occupied as well. I scooted closer to Edward and started to play with the lace of my bra strap that was still strung out across his lap. He flinched when my hands grazed across his thigh.

“Punch buggy Blue!” I screamed. Edward’s head snapped over to see one had broken down on the side of the highway. I gave him a smug grin while Alice clapped from the back seat. “Lose the shirt, Edward,” I said with a laugh.

“Bella, I’m driving the car. I think it’s dangerous for me to remove my hands from the wheel...” he said trying to weasel out of it. Since he took his jacket off before we got in the car, he was already low on clothing, and I could see he was suddenly very aware of that fact.

“He’s right, Bella. It’s snowing, and he needs to keep his hands on the wheel,” Jasper agreed, making Edwards smile broaden. “Bella, why don’t you just help him?” Jasper finished his comment, and the smile totally left Edwards face.

“Great idea, Jazz,” Alice squealed.

“I would be happy to help,” I said gleefully as I knelt on my seat facing Edward. His fingers dug into the steering wheel as he braced for my touch. I ran my hands down the row of buttons in the front of his shirt, and then went to work on the top button.

I very slowly undid the first button, making sure my fingers touched his bare chest as much as possible. He tried to sit stone faced, but every so often, I noticed he was holding his breath at my touch. When I got to fourth button, I pulled his shirt open wide and ran my palms over his chiseled chest.

“You must be cold, let me warm you up a bit,” I said, trying to sound sweet and innocent.

“Bella....” he whispered as my hands ran down his sides, all the way to the top of his pants.

I returned to the buttons and undid the last two buttons. “Lean forward Edward, so I can get this off of you...” He pulled himself toward the wheel and slid his felt arms out of the shirt. I reached behind his back to wiggle the shirt free. I made sure one of my breasts made contact with his shoulder causing him to whimper slightly.

I slid the shirt down his right arm slowly, but before I sat back down, I whispered in his ear, “Just remember, you started this, Edward.....”

When I sat back down, I put his shirt with my jacket and returned to my seat. A semi flew past us on the left and blew its horn, and then slowed down so we were next to each other and blew it again.

"What the hell is this guy doing?" Edward snapped. If he sped up, the semi sped up, if Edward slowed down, it followed.

"I think he's admiring you shirtless, and Jasper in his tank top!" I giggled. I leaned across Edward's lap and waved to the passenger in the semi, who was laughing. He flashed us the thumbs up and pointed at Edward. "See, he thinks you're cute, Edward." A few minutes later the semi pulled away, but anytime we passed a semi after that, on either side of the car, we got beeped at. I assumed they were on the CB radios talking about the car of shirtless guys.

"Punch buggy green! Alice screamed after another half hour. "Jazz, lose the pants." Edward started laughing hysterically.

"I'd be quiet if I was you Edward, one more and you're in the same predicament," I reminded him. His jaw immediately clamped shut, when he realized what I meant.

"Actually, if I find the next punch buggy, it's a double clothing round, and you will be in an even worse predicament." I laughed. Edward immediately focused all his attention back to the road, allowing nothing to distract him.

As the snowfall increased, a small red Honda pulled next to us full of girls. I watched the girls on the passenger's side press their faces to the windows of the car and wave to their friends to look our way.

"Guys, I think you have some admirers...." I pointed out the window to the red car where the girls were waving wildly. Jasper put his hand over his face and sunk lower in his seat while Alice laughed, and waved back to the girls. Edward refused to look in their direction, his eyes focused directly in front of him. The car pulled directly in front of us and the two girls in the backseat spun around and stared at Edward through the glass.

"You'd think they've never seen a shirtless man before," Edward grumbled.

"You have to admit, it is a bit unusual to find one driving down the highway in a snowstorm, Edward," I reminded him.

One of the girls held up a small sign with her phone number on it. Edward refused to so much as crack a smile. When the other girl started to lift her shirt, that was my limit, I leaned forward and raised both my middle fingers to them, making my opinion of their stunt perfectly clear. They took the hint and sped down the road.

"Punch buggy red," Jasper beamed a few miles later.

"Alice, please remove your" Jasper paused, looking at Alice, who was giving him a rather harsh look, daring him to say something obnoxious. "Jacket?" he offered kindly. Alice's face relaxed a bit, but Jasper still had one more article to claim. Alice crossed her arms on her chest and waited. "Lose the pants.....Edward." Alice hugged Jasper and kissed his cheek.

"What the hell, Jasper?" was Edward's first reaction. "Do you really want to see me in my underwear??" I was laughing so hard, I couldn't breathe.

"No, but I didn't want Alice to get cold, Bella is already missing her bra thanks to you, so while I don't want to see you in your underwear, I thought Bella might rather enjoy it," Jasper chuckled.

"Thank you, Jasper." I smiled back to him. "I most definitely will...."

"How could Alice be cold in this car, Jasper, it's 95 degrees in here? The heat is on full blast....make her lose the bra, be a man," Edward tried to reason with Jasper but he just laughed.

"Edward, you tell me, who's more of a man? The one of us currently sitting in his underwear, not complaining, or the guy up front, whining about having to do it?" Jasper asked.

Edward just started shaking his head side to side. "Fine, I'll do it." Alice and I both squealed at the same time, clapping our hands together in glee.

Edward rolled his eyes and then turned to me. "Behave, Bella...I'm driving in the snow. I really don't feel like killing us today." He slowed the car down and set the cruise control so he could take his foot off the gas. He slipped his feet out of his shoes and kicked them over to me. Then he reached down to undo the button of his jeans.

"Oh wait, Edward; I'll help you with that." I quickly put my hand on top of his, to stop him from getting it unbuttoned. Alice whistled from the back, while Jasper snickered.

I scooted closer to him and leaned in to undo the button. My fingers grazed along the top of his pants, causing him to jump. "Sorry, are my hands cold?" I rubbed them together for a second, and then pressed them onto his chest. "Are they warm enough now?"

"Bella..... just get this over with. And you better pray there are no more punch buggies for the next 3 hours," he threatened through gritted teeth. Alice started humming stripper music while Jasper beat the rhythm against the seatback.

The button was undone and as I reached for the zipper, his eyes got big and he mumbled, "Be careful with that... I don't want anything getting stuck in the zipper." I rolled my eyes at him and whipped the zipper down as fast as I could. Edward let out a little yelp of surprise.

"Lift your butt," I commanded as I started to shimmy the jeans off his waist. Together, we worked the pants down to his thighs, revealing him in another pair of black boxer briefs. I sat there for a second, biting the knuckle of my finger, admiring him in his underwear.

He looked like a model with his broad shoulders, muscular chest and abs, not on mention how amazingly sexy he looked in his underwear. Lost in thought, I must have sat there longer than I knew, because Edward's laughter broke me from my trance. "I'm starting to feel like a piece of meat, Bella."

"Oh gosh, I'm sorry, I was just...." I fumbled around to help him get the pants off the rest of the way. I was so completely flustered by how good he looked without clothes on, I couldn't speak. Breathe Bella, Breathe...I told myself.

"Yeah, I know what you were just ...um.... doing," Edward teased, as he wiggled his left leg from the pants, causing my face to turn bright red.

Alice leaned over the front seat and marveled, "Nice legs, Edward. Jazz, you want to look?" Jasper just covered his eyes with his hand and laughed.

"Alice, go stare at Jasper's legs!" I snapped, suddenly feeling very possessive of Edward -- and his nearly naked body. I took his jeans and set them on my lap before I turned all the heat vents toward him to keep him from freezing. Tilting my head up towards his face, I said with a wink, "Personally, I think your whole body is amazing. You should walk around like this all the time."

"I will, if you do too....." He looked me up and down and I could tell he was imagining how I would look in just my underwear. The smoldering look in his eyes made me want to move closer, to reach out and touch him, but I clasped my hands securely in my lap, trying to behave

"So how long do we have to stay like this?" Edward asked Alice, who seemed to be the rule maker of this little game.

"Until the next exit, I'm hungry," Alice giggled. She wrapped her arms around Jasper, pressing her head to his chest to keep him warm.

I felt Edward speed up, wanting to get to the next exit as soon as possible. "Better slow down, Speedy, a ticket right now would be a very bad idea..." I pointed out to him by running my finger down his bare chest, stopping to snap the waistband of his underwear. "You'd really have some explaining to do then."

The next exit was about five miles away. Edward found a corner of the parking lot where he could park so he and Jasper could get dressed without an audience. When I handed Edward back his pants, I made sure I had a small pout on my face.

"I told you, you show me yours and I'll show you mine whenever you want..." A playful smile was on his face as he pulled his zipper up and buttoned his pants. Why am I waiting again?? Look at him, Bella.... Oh yeah, the stupid shoes....who cares! Why am I waiting...I'm stupid, that's why.I held his shirt up to him, and as soon as he put it on, I slithered in close to him and started slowly buttoning his shirt.

I got in very close and pressed my body to him as I took my time threading the button through the button hole. I could feel his breathing pick up the longer I was touching him. "I have to tell you, I have really enjoyed taking your clothes off today. We'll have to do it again sometime soon." As I clasped the last button down by his waist, he pulled me into his arms and kissed me, within the limits of the bet, but there was so much passion in the kiss I started to feel light headed. My heart sprung to life, my breathing became frantic, and I dug my nails into my hands to keep myself from wrapping my fingers into his hair and taking this kiss to another level.

"Um, can you two please stop? There are other people in the car, and I am starving!!!" Alice screeched. I pulled away from Edward, shot Alice a dirty look and then started putting my jacket on.

"Bella, aren't you forgetting something?" Edward dangled my bra from his finger.

"I'll put it on later, just leave it here. Darn thing is a snap to get off, but much harder to get back on. It was definitely designed by a man." I laughed as I climbed out of the car and headed for the restaurant we had parked at.

While we were inside, the weather went from bad to worse. The people at the table next

to us had been driving up from Portland, and they said the roads were horrible about thirty miles further south. There was a TV giving weather updates and the guy in the dark blue suit was expecting a foot a snow to fall in the next few hours, and we were still 200 miles away from Portland. I glanced nervously out the window and watched the huge white snowflakes falling so fast, I couldn't see across the street.

Edward took out his phone and called Emmett to find out what was going on at home. Emmett told him the news was reporting a number of accidents on the roads, but a huge pileup on the highway with traffic backed up for miles. They were recommending people stay off the roads in the city if possible.

Edward and Jasper put their heads together, trying to figure out what the best course of action was for us. Jasper's face was concerned when he and Edward finished their discussion. "Ladies, how would you feel about spending the night in Olympia?" Jasper asked, with his brow still furrowed. "We would need to go a little further south, but we can get there before this storm gets much worse. I don't want us to get stuck on the highway in it."

I looked over at Alice and shrugged. "It's fine with me, Alice do you care?" The huge grin on her face was answer enough. "We'd better make a reservation, I'm sure rooms will be hard to find once this storm gets closer." I took out my phone and called Renee for some help.

"Hello?"

"Hi, Mom. Hey, I need your help with something."

"What do you need, Bella? Where are you anyway?" Renee asked a bit frantically.

"We're fine, Mom, don't worry. But the snow's getting bad and Edward and Jasper think it might be a bad idea to keep heading home, so I think we're going to head to Olympia and spend the night."

Edward raised his eyebrows and Alice giggled from the backseat.

"I think that's a good idea, Bella. It's really nasty the farther South you go, from what the news is saying. See, I'm glad you girls aren't by yourselves. How can I help?" She was relieved to hear we weren't going to brave the snow.

"Well can you get on the computer and quickly find us a hotel?" I asked, knowing Renee was a whiz online. "We'll be on the I-5."

"Yeah, give me a second... OK, I'm searching Olympia hotels. OK, there's a reasonably priced Motel 6 at exit 18..." Renee mumbled as she continued looking.

I turned to the rest of them, "Renee found a Motel 6....."

Edward immediately held out his hand for the phone, shaking his head. With my eyebrows raised, I handed him the phone to talk to Renee. "Hi Renee, it's Edward." He paused. "No. We will not be staying anywhere with a number in the name, or the word 'Inn'. It also must be more than two stories tall and have an elevator. As a matter of fact, just sort the search by price, highest to lowest and start there."

I let out an aggravated sigh and opened my mouth to protest.

He rolled his eyes at me, held up his finger and continued speaking to my mother, "And I'm paying, so tell your stubborn daughter not to give me any grief please." He smiled and handed me the phone back. I narrowed my eyes at him until he whispered, "Because I love you."

I returned his smile. "Hi, Mom. Sounds like Motel 6 is out, find anything else?" I laughed.

"I like him more and more.... He travels in style. Don't argue, be gracious, Isabella...." Renee ordered. "OK, here's one that looks nice. The Red Lion Hotel. It's the highest rated, and it meets all Edward's requirements."

I gave them the thumbs up to let them know Renee had found something. "Can you give them a call and see if they have any rooms for tonight?" I wanted to make sure we had a reservation before we hit the road. I heard Renee dialing her cell phone in the background and then she started chatting.

"How many rooms am I booking, Bella?"

"Um, just get one if it has two beds. If not, I guess we need two rooms," I said to Renee. Alice nodded her head in agreement.

Renee managed to book us a room in Edward's name at the hotel. We immediately left the restaurant, wanting to be in Olympia as soon as possible. The roads got much worse as we continued south toward Olympia. Our jovial mood from earlier was forgotten as Edward concentrated on the snow-covered road in front of him. I sighed in relief that he and Jasper were with us, otherwise, I would have been driving through this mess, terrified.

We pulled into the hotel just after 3:00 and the snow was falling so hard we had trouble seeing the traffic lights when we exited the highway for the hotel. I was never so happy to see a hotel overhang as I was then. Edward parked the car and helped us dig through the trunk to find our bags. Unfortunately, I couldn't remember what clothes I packed in which bag, so I grabbed a random one and headed into the hotel after Alice. She and Jasper were sitting on brown leather couch in the lobby. Edward and I went to the front desk to get our keys.

"We have a reservation, the name is Masen," Edward said smoothly to the woman behind the front desk. She was in her thirties, if I had to guess, and she looked thrilled to have any male attention. She grinned and fumbled around with her computer for a second.

"Oh yes, here it is.... One room, with two beds. Let me see what we have available," she said half talking to us, half talking to herself. I glanced back over my shoulder to see Alice and Jasper holding hands on the couch.

The lobby was beautiful with rich shades of brown and yellow painted on the walls, and bright white trim. The marble floor was freshly polished and the deep brown of the lobby desk made the hotel feel very warm and inviting.

"I'm sorry, it seems that because of the storm, the previous guest hasn't vacated that room. We have two rooms each with one king-sized bed available, would you like two of those instead?" she asked, her eyes glancing over to where Alice and Jasper were sitting.

"That would be fine, as long as they're close to each other please." Edward flashed a flirty smile which made her blush. I rolled my eyes at him and his attempt to manipulate this poor woman.

"The only two rooms I have are across the hall from each other; however, they are our deluxe rooms and are more expensive..." She started to explain, but Edward cut her off.

"We'll take them." My eyes grew huge when I saw how much the rooms cost him. "Remember what your mother said, Isabella...." he said, knowing it annoyed me to be called by my full name.

"Here are your keys," she said, extending a key to Edward and I. "And these are for your friends." She handed a pair of keys in an envelope to Edward and nodded in the direction of Alice and Jasper. "I'll call Mark to help you with your bags."

Edward held up his key to mine, both keys for room 315. "Looks like we're roomies," he said as he ran his fingers down my cheek and along my jaw line. The twinkle in his green eyes was making my knees wobble slightly, so I leaned back against one of the white columns in the lobby for support. Edward took another step closer, nearly pinning me against the pole. "Maybe you can help me with my shirt again."

My face turned bright red because I was just thinking the same thing, but I would never admit that to him, so I turned my head to the side, and the next thing I knew, his mouth was right at my ear.

"Or I can help you out of your shirt, whichever you prefer." His tongue gently ran along my earlobe, making my shiver.

"Jasper," I managed to croak out, completely distracted by Edward and his attempt to seduce me. "Take this before I do something I most certainly will not regret." I held the key out in my trembling hand.

Edward dramatically putting his hand over his heart, "I'm hurt that you don't want to spend the night with me, Bella."

"It'll hurt more to be out 600 bucks, Mr. Masen," I snorted.

Alice stifled a giggle and gave Jasper a playful nudge. "Go on Jasper, help save Bella from herself. You know how hard it is for a girl to resist the advances of a man who is trying to seduce her."

Jasper laughed as he politely took the key, saving me from myself. Alice came over and handed me a key to room 314, our home for the evening.

"Can I help you with your bags?" A voice said from behind us. I turned to see an average looking guy who was about our age dressed in a maroon hotel uniform with black pants. He was much shorter than Edward and Jasper but stocky. His hair was a bit on the long side, but it had been gelled back to keep it off his face. I could see a tattoo peeking out from under the collar of his shirt.

"My name is Mark....what's yours?" He said holding his hand out to me.

As I went to shake his hand, he kissed it instead. That's kinda creepy... I thought to myself. "Um, I'm Bella." I glanced over at Edward who had crossed his arms as he stood beside me, scowling at Mark.

"And you are?" He asked smoothly as he turned his attention to Alice.

“Hi. I’m Alice.” She gave him a small wave, which he returned with a wink. Jasper’s mouth fell open slightly. Jasper glanced over at Edward and the two of them exchanged a look of ‘can you believe this guy?’

Happy to know our names, and completely ignoring Edward and Jasper all together, Mark loaded the bags onto the cart and said, “Follow me ladies...”

Edward and Jasper looked at him suspiciously. Edward wrapped his arm around my shoulders while Jasper took Alice’s hand and pulled her as far away from Mark as possible. We followed him into the elevator, off to find our rooms.

Oxoxoxoxoxox

There you go, another chapter....Hope you liked it. Thanks to Hb1 for being my beta and Leria who has been my sounding board and inspiring me :)

I put up a new poll..... Twilight won book most often re-read. Go vote on this one.

Thank you to all of my Anonymous reviewers. Sorry I can’t reply back to all of you... but thanks for reviewing!

Chapter: 27

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Wet

BPOV

The ride to the third floor was uncomfortable to say the least. Mark continued to make small talk with Alice and I, ignoring the guys completely. They, in return, spent the entire time giving him the dirtiest looks I'd ever seen on their faces. Edward looked even angrier than when he was talking to Mike. If I was being totally truthful, I have to admit that I found it kind of sexy to see them so riled up that a guy was paying attention to us.

We stepped onto the third floor and Mark led us to the left, down a long, carpeted corridor. About halfway down the hall, he stopped and pointed to a door. "Room 314, gentlemen." He quickly placed their bags on the floor beside their door. Then he turned his attention back to Alice and I.

"May I?" he asked, reaching for the room key in Alice's hand. She was so stunned, she just watched as he snatched the tiny piece of plastic from her grasp. He slid the key into the lock, waited for the green light, and then turned the handle. "Come in, ladies. I'll give you a tour of your room and show you where everything is."

He extended his arm, and ushered us into the room. I glanced over my shoulder to see a furious Edward standing in the hallway with his hands firmly planted on his hips, and Jasper looked no better. I tried to give them a reassuring smile, but it didn't seem to help.

"So ladies," Mark said as he let the door fall shut behind him, stopping the cart near the closet to unload our bags. "Welcome to the Red Lion. You have a beautiful view of the valley below." He pulled the curtains open to reveal the snow covered valley outside. It was a spectacular view of the area, with the mountains off in the distance.

"Here is your television...." He waved his hand at the armoire, then sat on the bed and reached into the drawer of the nightstand and pulled out a remote control. "And your remote..." He ran his hand across the comforter and purred, "and your bed..."

Alice and I shot each other a shocked look, "Um...Ok thanks, I think we've got it from here..." I muttered, trying to get him to leave.

He gave us a wink and what I'm assuming was meant to be a sexy smile, refusing to be dismissed so easily. "Wait! I didn't show you the best part of this room yet." He leaped off the bed and walked into the bathroom. Alice and I both followed, figuring the sooner we he finished his little tour, the sooner he leave.

"The shower has a rainfall feature and 6 body jets, 3 on each side. The shower itself is also extra large... room for two or even three...." he said with his eyebrows raised as he once again eyed Alice.

He pointed to the counter. "You also have all kinds of shampoos, soaps and lotions at your disposal. And here is my favorite part..." he said as he turned toward the oversized tub in the corner, "the Jacuzzi tub." He ran his hand slowly and seductively across the smooth marble surface.

A loud thumping on the door to our room interrupted us from the creepiest room tour of my life. "Bella! Open up....is that little twerp gone yet?" I heard Edward teasing from the other side of the door. He was still smirking when I opened the door and mouthed 'thank you' to him. I watched his smile fade when he saw Mark over my shoulder. "Oh, I guess he's still here, isn't he?" Edward said without missing a beat. He strode into the room and grabbed my hand as he headed over to Mark. "Thank you, but the tour is officially over. They can figure things out on their own, they are quite intelligent women." The hostility in his voice was very apparent.

Mark gave Edward a dirty look for interrupting him, but refused to be distracted from his agenda. "Ladies, if you need anything, please call me. I would be happy to take care of you."

Jasper walked into the room just then to hear the end of Mark's speech. He held his hand up to Mark. "No need to worry about them..." he paused to read his nametag, "Mark," he spat "My friend and I will take care of anything these ladies may need." He snaked his arms around Alice's waist and kissed her neck. "And I meant anything they may need." Alice broke into hysterical giggles as Jasper continued to kiss her.

Edward opened the door to our room and waited for Mark to take the hint. As he walked past me on his way to the door, his hand brushed against mine and I felt him slip a small piece of paper into it. When Mark was safely in the hall, Edward slammed the door shut behind him. "What the heck was that all about?" Edward fumed as he came back to my side.

I opened my hand and showed Edward the piece of paper Mark had given me. Alice started laughing. "He did not just give you his phone number, did he?"

Edward was already shredding the paper into a million pieces, and swearing under his breath.

"Looks like you might have some competition there Edward." Alice teased.

"Oh, I don't know about that Alice, you're the one he was looking at when he was talking about how many people can fit into the shower..." I teased.

Her cheeks turned bright red, but Jasper just shook his head back and forth. "Neither of you is to go anywhere alone. Do you understand me?" Jasper said, pointing at both of us. "If you leave this room, one of us needs to be with you, please." He glanced up at Edward, who was nodding his head in agreement.

I went over and kissed Edward's cheek. "You can be my personal bodyguard, how does that sound?" I offered to put him mind at ease.

He looked at me very seriously for a second, and then a smile appeared on his face. "I would love to guard your body tonight, Bella. Thank you for the offer." He smirked as he took my hand and kissed the top of it, never taking his eyes off of mine. "Now, why don't you ladies unpack, get settled and we'll meet up together in a while to check this place out." He and Jasper headed for the door, but paused before he opened it. "And please lock this door, at all times..."

Alice danced over to the door and saluted them. As soon as they closed the door, she

fumbled loudly with the locks and hollered, "We're all locked in, Edward!!" I could hear them laughing as they disappeared into their room.

I went into the closet and handed Alice her black suitcase with the hot pink polka dots, and I tossed my blue and green plain bag onto the bed to sort through and see what was actually in there. I unzipped the lid and paused in confusion. "Alice? Why are your clothes in my suitcase?"

Alice was grinning sheepishly near the dresser. "Well, you remember all that stuff I bought on our shopping trip? Well, funny thing, I didn't have enough room in my suitcases for it, so I kind of...left your ugly clothes in Forks."

"You did what to my clothes?" I shrieked, frantically digging to the bottom of the bag, only to find it completely filled with Alice's purchases.

"You had those ugly flannel pajamas, the hideous librarian sweater which you know I hate, and then all those sweatshirts. Don't ever wear sweatshirts Bella, they are so bulky..... but don't worry about it, I have a whole new wardrobe for you at home," she said happily, trying to lessen my anger. "I saved all your dressy clothes; they're in the other suitcase out in the car."

"But I have no pajamas, no comfy clothes to sleep in tonight, just my jeans... unless I want to try and squeeze my butt into these." I pulled a pair of extra small red silky boy shorts out of the suitcase with a matching silk camisole. "If I don't move or breathe all night, I should be fine." I said sarcastically.

"Sorry, Bella..." Alice mumbled. "In my defense, I had no idea we'd be stranded in a hotel with Edward and Jasper. I don't control the weather either." She was digging through her bag to see if anything of hers would fit me. She held up a tiny t-shirt I would be arrested if I put on my body.

"My bra is in the car....." I groaned. "I better go get it." I started to head for the door when Alice stopped me.

"Bella, leave it alone, you'll be fine. I think you'll cause far more of a ruckus if you go down to the valet stand, in a snowstorm ... braless, just to have them retrieve the car so you can grab a bra off the front seat. Plus, Edward will kill you if you leave this room without him."

I rolled my eyes and zipped up my useless suitcase, putting it safely in the closet before hurling myself onto the bed. I started flipping the channels looking for something good to watch. Most of the local channels were all trying to outdo the next with better weather coverage.

"I'm going to try out the Jacuzzi!" Alice squealed when she was done unpacking her bag. She rounded up her ipod, and a change of clothes before she dashed off into the bathroom. I heard the rush of water as the tub filled. Bored, I looked around the room for something to amuse me. I saw the ice bucket sitting on the dresser, and decided to go for a quick walk.

By the time I had the bucket in my hand, the water was off and the low hum of the Jacuzzi jets came from the bathroom. Alice had her ipod on because when I tapped on the door I heard her singing echoing through the bathroom. "Alice, I'm going to get ice."

"What?" she yelled.

I pointed to her ears so she would take out the ear buds. "I'm going to get ice."

"Call Edward....." Alice said sternly.

"I am perfectly capable of getting ice on my own, thank you," I said as I ducked my head out of the bathroom.

"Isabella!" Alice screamed "You get on the phone and call Edward right now! If you step foot outside this room....."

"Fine, Alice.... I'll call. Just stop screaming!" I stormed over to the phone, dialed 9 and then their room number.

On the second ring, Jasper answered the phone, "Hello?"

"Hey Jasper, it's Bella. Your lunatic girlfriend won't let me get ice alone. Apparently, I need a police escort. Are you or Edward available to make sure I'm not murdered and stuffed into the ice machine?"

Jasper found my rant amusing, I heard him chuckling on the other end of the phone. "I'll meet you in the hallway. "

I stuck my head in the bathroom "I'm going to get ice with Jasper... alone, and we may just be in love by the time we get back!" I snarled into the bathroom as I stuck my tongue out at her.

"Have fun" She dismissed me with a giggle and a wave, and then began singing at the top of her lungs.

"What in the world are you two watching in there?" Jasper asked as Alice tried to hit a high note, but sounded like a dying cat instead. We headed down the hallway in search of ice.

"That, Jasper, is the woman you love. She loves to sing, but she doesn't do it well. She wants to try out for one of those reality singing shows someday. See, you had no idea what you were getting yourself into, did you?" I laughed as we turned the corner into the little alcove that held the ice machine, a vending machine and a soda machine. "I wonder where the ax murderers are hiding..." I said sarcastically as I glanced over my shoulder while Jasper filled my bucket with ice.

"Very funny, Bella. I know it sounds over protective, but too bad. We're not about to let anything happen to the two of you, and that guy was weird. Humor us, OK?" He put his hands on my shoulders and marched me down the hall.

"So what is Edward doing? Why did he make you come down here with me?" I asked as I chomped on a piece of ice from the bucket.

"His back was bothering him from the driving so he's in the Jacuzzi. What's Alice up too?" he asked, trying to sound casual. We arrived outside the rooms and paused.

"She's in the Jacuzzi too..." I looked up at Jasper, who had a sinister grin on his face, looking intently at the door to my room. I handed him the ice bucket and punched him in the shoulder. "Plug your ears because she's a screamer." I laughed as I walked across the hall and opened the door to the guys' room.

"Yeah, I know." Jasper laughed as he snuck into our room.

I let the door to the guys' room fall shut on its own. I could hear the sound of water gently splashing as Edward shifted around in the tub.

What the hell are you doing, Bella? Go through that door and you will be in a small, confined, room with a very wet and naked Edward.... That could be a really bad idea, I told myself. Who the hell cares? Get your ass in there, girl.

With a huge grin on my face, I put my hand over my eyes and walked through the bathroom door. I peeked down at the small bit of the floor I could see under the bottom of my hand and I could see his clothes lying on the bathroom floor. I quickly grabbed his button-down shirt he had been wearing in the car and carried it with me as I staggered over to the counter that was directly across from the tub.

"Hello there..." I said casually, trying not to think about the fact that he was totally naked only a few feet from me. My heart started to pound in my chest, and I started blushing wildly.

I heard a big splash of water, when Edward realized someone was in the bathroom, the hum of the jets, had made my entrance rather stealth. "Oh, it's you Bella! Thank God! I thought it was Jasper.... That would have been really weird." His laughter echoed through the bathroom. "Um, why do you have your face covered?"

"I'm trying to give you your privacy, Edward. I just wanted to say hi. And maybe steal your shirt if you don't mind. Alice left all my 'ugly' clothes in Forks, which in her opinion, was everything I had packed so I have nothing to wear, and oh yeah, I'm still not wearing a bra." My mind started spinning out of control when he asked why I was covering my face. Did that mean he wanted me to look at him, what if I saw him naked...that wouldn't be good..... It would actually be phenomenal, amazing, life alteringly great, but then again I knew I'd lose the bet.

"Bella, please take your hand off your face so I can see you when you're talking to me. There are a bunch of bubbles in here, you won't see anything." I could hear the laughter in his voice "unless you want to....."

"Keep your penis covered, Edward. Do we understand each other?" I asked before I moved my hand away from my face.

"I promise. As long as you keep your breasts covered we should be fine." He snickered. Not trusting him fully, I peeked carefully between my fingers to see him sitting in the tub, the jets causing the water to bubble and move around him, making the water blurry. His chin was resting on his hand along the edge of the tub; his green eyes brightly gazed at me, taking my breath away. He sat up and ran his hand through his already wet hair. He held his arm out to the bubbling water "Care to join me?" I closed my eyes when I heard the seductive tone in his voice.

"Edward, you need to behave please..." I pleaded with him. I took a deep breath before I opened my eyes, to see him holding his hand out to me, wanting me to come closer. You have no other clothes, do not jump into that tub, Bella...don't do it....I took his hand and knelt next to the tub, our fingers intertwined as I sat facing him, occasionally getting splashed by the crashing waves created by the Jacuzzi jets.

"So.....how many more hours now?" he asked as he gently kissed each of the fingers

on my hand and began to move up my arm.

"125, but who's counting?" I tried to feign indifference, but if he only knew how many times in the last few days I had glanced at my watch to calculate the exact number of hours left in the bet, I'd be mortified. He lowered my hand and I let it dangle into the warm bubbling water, making sure to keep my eyes on his face and not let them drift down and look into the water.

"So what were you saying about your clothes?" he asked, breaking me out of my trance.

"Alice decided to unpack my bag, and leave my 'ugly clothes' at my mom's house, and use the new space in my luggage for all of the clothes she bought shopping. Now I have no clothes... so I may need to borrow a shirt of yours later, if you don't mind. I might steal this one now, if that's OK?" I held up his black button-down shirt that I'd picked up off the floor.

"Of course you can borrow it. You can take whatever you need. Everything in my suitcase is clean." He waved his arm toward the bathroom door, smiling. He had made it very clear back in Forks that he enjoyed seeing me in his clothes.

"Thank you, Edward. Ok, I'm going to leave and give you some privacy....I'll stop over later and grab a t-shirt from you." I stood up to leave and from such an angle, I could make out the outlines of his long legs in the water, I followed them up toward his body, and then slapped my hand over my eyes. I could hear Edward laughing hysterically at my behavior.

"Bella love, did you peek?" he teased as I felt his hand rubbing my leg as I stood next to the tub

"I'm sorry....oh just Never mind. I need to go.... Now...." Flustered, I leaned down, my eyes still closed tightly, and blindly went to kiss him goodbye. I felt two very wet hands on my face that pulled me toward him.

"Open your eyes, Bella," he whispered softly. I could feel his breath on my lips and I knew when my eyes opened we would be face to face. I put my arms out and held onto either side of the tub to keep me from falling in. When my eyes finally opened, his beautiful green ones greeted me. "I love you," he said, and then he kissed me.

The warmth of his lips traveled up my chest, filling me with a tingly sensation from head to toe. I tightened my grip on the tub, trying to control myself. The steam from the tub began to rapidly warm my body as he kissed me longer and harder than he had in a while. My heart was flying by the time he pulled his lips away from mine. "Ok, now you may go." He smirked.

I rolled my eyes and stood up, once again covering my eyes. I heard him gasp and felt a cool sensation on my chest. I looked down to see the front of my shirt had draped into the water when I was leaning over the tub, kissing him. The cooler air away from the tub and the transparency of my now wet shirt left little to the imagination as Edward sat there, open mouthed, staring at my breasts and now highly visible nipples. I quickly wrapped my arms across my chest and turned bright red.

"Oops." Was all I could manage to make come out of my mouth as I stood there, mortified. I glanced down at Edward, who was doing his best not to laugh, biting his lip and trying to breathe slowly, but the twinkle in his eyes gave him away. "Do you find this funny, Edward?"

"Funny, no. I find it absolutely hilarious!" And all the laughter he had been trying to

contain came spilling out of him, echoing off the bathroom walls around us.

Funny, you want funny Mr. Sexy guy in the Jacuzzi looking all hot and laughing at my accidental wet shirt contest. We'll see who's laughing now. I glared at him as I picked up his black shirt off the floor and held it between my knees. I turned my back to him, raised my shirt slowly over my head, glancing back over my shoulder at him as I held the damp shirt in my hand. I balled it up and chucked it at his face as he sat in the tub completely stunned. I bent over and took his shirt, sliding my arms into the sleeves, and pulling it onto my shoulders. Still completely unbuttoned, but with the good part of my breasts covered, I turned to face him.

"Too bad you're in the tub, I was going to ask you to help button me," I said with a little pout.

Before I knew what was happening, he stood up in the tub, and my eyes immediately flew to his, never breaking his gaze as he moved, dripping wet, closer and closer to me. He stopped in front of me and ran his fingers through his hair which for some reason made me gasp out loud.

"I wasn't expecting this reaction....you do know you are naked, right?" I asked, my voice trembling uncontrollably.

"Yep," was all he muttered, his eyes burning with desire.

"And you aren't at all embarrassed?" I asked as his hands stretched out and touched the exposed section of flesh down my torso. My body trembled at his touch. He gently took the two sides of the shirt and began leisurely buttoning them together.

"Not at all," he said as he glanced back and forth from the buttons to my eyes, the grin never leaving his face. I dared to admire the way the water glistened on his shoulders, accentuating his muscles. My hands were clenched into fists at my side, fighting the urge to run my fingers down the length of his muscular arm.

"Well, that's OK, I think I'm flustered enough for the both of us," I mumbled breathlessly as I leaned against the bathroom door, feeling lightheaded. Edward took another step toward me, finishing the last button, a sexy grin still on his face.

"Are you feeling alright, Bella? You look a little flushed, maybe you should come lay down...with me." I froze. All bodily functions shut down; I couldn't breathe, move or speak.... I just stared at him as he inched his face closer to mine. "What do you say?" he whispered as he wrapped his arms around my waist, pulling me to his wet, naked body and kissing my neck.

"Ed.....wa....I.....um.....wow.....sho....." I continued muttering incoherently as his warm lips continued kissing my neck and shoulders.

Oxoxoxox

insert Scream and now

insert "You're stopping it there? Are you crazy? You are evil!"

Yes I am, and just enjoy. And nudity is not covered in the boycott so Bella is not out as of now....but that can change. Thanks to Hb1 for being the Queen Beta on this and Leria for letting me bounce ideas off her!

You love me.... You know you do.... Even if I stopped it there...YUMMY.

Chapter: 28

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

I wonder if anyone is even bothering to read this author's note.... I did kinda leave a cliffy for you and I got each and every one of your loving death threats. Thank you so much! Sorry the update took so long, I was sick the last few days, but now that I am better...here you go.... Two chapters. Yes, you do love me!

And I love Hb1—Queen Beta to fanfiction

Previously on Boycotts and Barflies:

"Are you feeling alright, Bella? You look a little flushed, maybe you should come lay down...with me." I froze. All bodily functions shut down; I couldn't breathe, move or speak.... I just stared at him as he inched his face closer to mine. "What do you say?" he whispered as he wrapped his arms around my waist, pulling me to his wet, naked body and kissing my neck.

"Ed.....wa....I.....um.....wow.....sho....." I continued muttering incoherently as his warm lips continued kissing my neck and shoulders.

Orgasms?

BPOV

"Is that a yes?" he asked as I felt his hands slide down my back and come to rest firmly on my hips. He pushed me back into the door, our hips crushing together. It was then that I realized he was just as aroused as I was.

"Oh, Edward" I moaned.

His head immediately raised, his eyes locking on mine. "Bella, I love you," he whispered as I knotted my fingers into his hair. I felt my feet leave the ground, followed by a loud slamming noise.

"Bella? Edward? Where the hell are you?" Jasper called from the other side of the door. "Oh, wait....never mind. I'll leave...I'm not here.....forget you heard me...."

Edward let out a groan of frustration at the sound of Jasper's voice. My feet made contact with the floor as I leaned back against the door, gasping for breath.

"It's fine, Jasper.....we're just..... talking in here..." I mumbled as I kicked the bathroom door with my heel. I buried my face into my hands for a few seconds, trying to pull myself together. When I opened them again, Edward had a white towel wrapped low around his waist.

He put plenty of distance between us, while we both tried to regain our composure. It's all your fault you know..." he said as he pointed an accusing finger in my direction. I

opened my mouth to set him straight when he mumbled, "I told you to keep your breasts covered, but you go and get your shirt wet, and then take the darn thing off right in front of me..." he said, gesturing his hand in the air at me.

As the events of only moments earlier began to sink in, and I started giggling, unable to stop. I fell onto the floor in laughter when Jasper commented from the other side of the door, "Hey, I don't want to criticize your technique Edward, but I don't think it's normal for her to be laughing at you like that....you may want to try something different...she should be doing more moaning than laughing if you're doing it right...."

"Shut up, Jasper! We aren't doing anything..." he yelled at the door, and then dropped his voice and added a wink, "anymore...." Edward leaned back against the counter top, pouting.

I cautiously walked over to him and gave him a kiss. "So close.... Edward...." I patted the palm of my hand on the side of his face. "Better luck next time." I turned and headed for the door, pausing with my hand on the door. "And thanks for the shirt." I pulled the collar up to my nose and took a deep breath. "Mmmmm, it still smells like you. Yummy...." I murmured. When I walked out the door, I heard the shower turn on.

"Hello there, Bella," Jasper said as he leaned against the wall, his arms folded across his chest and a huge grin on his face.

My cheeks turned pink, so I fluffed my hair around my face to help hide my embarrassment. "Hi Jasper, stop looking at me like that... nothing happened."

He eyed me suspiciously, but hearing the twinge of disappointment in my voice, he knew I was telling him the truth. "It's not me I'd be worried about explaining to..." He gave his thumb a point toward the doorway where Alice stood, silent, but looking like she just might burst.

"He better not be using all the hot water. I need a shower." Jasper laughed as he watched Alice stare at me with her mouth open.

"Oh, you have nothing to worry about, Jasper; there will be plenty of warm water. I'm pretty sure he's showering in some serious ice water right now...." I smirked to Jasper. We both laughed out loud when he heard Edward's loud yelp from the bathroom as he stepped into the frigid shower.

There was a sharp tug on my arm as I was ripped out of their room and dragged across the hall, back into ours. "Isabella.... Is there something you'd like to tell me?" Alice asked in her best motherly tone.

"No..." I said, refusing to make eye contact with her. I felt my cheeks burn with embarrassment. "I have no idea what you're talking about, Alice."

"Ok, let's start with...why are you in Edward's shirt? Where is your shirt? Why are the buttons all done wrong? And why is the front of you all wet?" She sat silently next to me on the bed, patiently waiting for my answers.

"Well, I am wearing Edward's shirt because mine got wet, accidentally, so I borrowed his." She raised her eyebrow at me, letting me know that would need further explanation, but I moved on quickly. "My shirt is in their Jacuzzi, I threw it at Edward." I didn't dare look her in the face. "As for the buttons, I guess he wasn't paying attention..." I mumbled 'he' as softly as I could, but Alice and her damn dog ears caught it anyway.

"Hewasn't paying attention?? He??" She shrieked.

I tried to keep a poker face, but the goofiest smile came across my face before I knew what was happening. I covered my face with my hands and nodded my head up and down.

"Eeeekkkk!" Alice screamed as she clapped her hands together.

I took a deep breath and answered her final question which I was really dreading. "And the reason the front of me is wet is.... Well...oh Alice, do I have to tell you?" I tried to beg my way out of it, but the stubborn set of her jaw told me it wouldn't work. "Ok, so he may have gotten out of the tub while I was in the bathroom and kind of started kissing my neck."

"Oh my God, Bella!!! Was he naked?" she screamed.

I clamped my hand over her mouth to keep her quiet. "Alice, shhhhhhh. They are right across the hall. Stop screaming!" I hissed. "Does the whole hotel have to know Edward had me pressed up against the bathroom door, while he was naked and asked me to go to bed with him?" I blurted out before I could stop myself.

Alice's eyes were enormous. I lowered my hand cautiously and allowed her to speak, "Did you..... did you...are you out?" she asked quietly.

I shook my head. "No, Jasper showed up just in time." I sighed half in relief, half in disappointment. I mumbled something about 'perfect timing'.

Alice fiercely hugged me. "Oh Bella, I'm sorry. If you want, Jasper and I can make ourselves scarce and you two can pick up right where you left off..."

"Am I out of the bet?" I asked, wondering if I had pushed the rules to the max with that little display in the bathroom.

Alice looked at me suspiciously. "I'm not sure, do you think you should be out of the bet?"

"No, I don't think so.... I didn't see anything. I didn't peek, not once, even though.....God, I wanted to." I burst into laughter.

Alice was giggling right along side of me. "Fine, if you say you're in, then you're in. I believe you."

"So what did you two do while I was over with Edward? Why does it reek of nail polish in here?" I asked, sniffing the pungent air around me.

Alice proudly threw out her pink fingers and toes. "Jasper painted my nails. He did a really good job, don't you think?"

I paused for a second to admire his handiwork. "Did you scream?" I asked as I stood up from the bed, looking for the remote control to the TV.

"What?" Alice asked as her head snapped in my direction. "What are you talking about?"

"When Jasper walked in, did you scream?"

"Oh that, yep, I screamed," she admitted sheepishly as she fidgeted with her fingers.

"I tried to warn him..." I laughed as Alice's phone rang.

She flipped around and grabbed the phone off the nightstand. "Hello? Hi, Jasper.... Really?" She glanced up at me and smirked. "Yeah, I think she could use one too. OK, give us a few seconds and we'll be ready." She closed the phone and was on her feet.

"Apparently, Jasper thinks Edward needs a drink after your little 'alone time', so we're all going to go down to the hotel bar. We need to hurry up."

"Alice, I have nothing to wear! Look at me." I held my arms up showing off the damp shirt and jeans I was currently wearing.

She looked me up and down for a second and then started clapping. "Oh Bella, you are so lucky the shirt dress is back in style! Come on, let's get you ready, Edward will love this!" she laughed as he dragged me into the bathroom and aimed the hairdryer directly at my chest. Next, she rummaged through her bag and found a pair of black leggings that stretched so I was able to squeeze into them without difficulty and a pair of black patent leather heels. She finished my outfit off with a thick red belt that she cinched high on my waist to help accentuate my chest.

I did a little twirl so show off her handiwork "Thanks Alice, you are simply amazing." I gave her a reverent bow.

"All in a day's work." She smirked as she pulled the red baby doll dress over her head and grabbed the white sweater that was on top of her suitcase. There was a loud knock on the door and Alice yelled, "Come in!"

Jasper and Edward came in, looking downright delicious.

Jasper was in a form fitting brown, crew neck sweater that had cream-colored barcode-like stripes down the center of his chest and brown pants.

Edward was wearing a black button down shirt with white pinstripes and a pair of black slacks. If his clothes didn't make him look sexy enough, the smirk on his face sealed the deal.

"Would you like to explain why your door was unlocked?" Jasper interrogated Alice as she took one last look in the mirror.

"Because we knew you big, strong men were on your way over...." She gave his chest a flirty tap. Jasper laughed and wisely decided to drop the subject.

Edward smiled and headed in my direction. I felt the blush rush into my cheeks as he admired my outfit. "You have no idea how exquisite you look." He whispered as I hugged him. "You really are irresistible in my clothes...."

"You look pretty yummy yourself, even with clothes on." I laughed when I saw his cheeks go pink.

"About that..... I'm sorry. That wasn't very gentlemanly of me to do that to you back in my bathroom. I don't know what got into me... it won't happen again," he said as he stared intently at the carpet.

Grinning, I lifted his face so I could look him in the eye "It most definitely better happen

again in say.....123 hours?"

In a second, the embarrassment in his face vanished, and was replaced by a very sexy grin. "If you insist...." he mumbled just before his lips crashed into mine. His hands wrapped around my back and came to settle on my ass, to which he gave a firm squeeze.

I gasped out loud which made Alice clear her throat. "My offer still stands, Bella.... Jasper and I can vanish..." she said with a giggle.

I gave Edward a tap on the chest and broke the kiss before things got out of hand. "Let's go get a drink," I mumbled as I fanned my face, trying to get my cheeks to cool down. Hand in hand, we headed out the door behind Alice and Jasper.

The hotel bar was packed. All the people trapped from the snow filled the place, looking for a way to pass the time until the snow passed and they could return to the roads. Jasper found a small semi-circle shaped booth we could sit at. Alice and I slid into the middle, with Edward and Jasper on the ends. We were flipping through the drink menu when the waitress came over to the table slightly frazzled.

'Hi, my name is Tiffany. Can I get you something from the bar? We are running low on scotch, so if that is your drink of choice, you better get it now..." she said as she looked over her shoulder to the bartender, who was filling drink orders at a fevered pace.

Edward leaned his head over to the waitress and whispered something in her ear.

Alice smacked my leg and questioned me with her eyes. I shrugged my shoulders, trying not to get jealous that Edward was an inch away from this Tiffany chick.

When she giggled, I kicked him hard in the shin under the table. He winced, but made sure he finished his private conversation with Tiffany before he turned back to me. "Ouch!" he said, rubbing his leg while his new friend walked away from the table. "Jealous are we, love?" he teased.

I glared at him and moved as far away from him as possible in our small space. Before I could tell him off, that slut Tiffany was back, and whispered something to him which made him stand up from the table. As he turned his back to walk away, the sound of my hand slamming into the table top made him pause, turn back and grin. "I'll be right back..." and he wandered off with that slut, whose name I had forgotten... I would just call her the slut....

"What the hell is he doing?" Alice hissed in my ear.

"I have no idea..." I growled, "But I may need your help burying a body later...."

Jasper snorted with laughter.

My eyes followed Edward and the slut to the bar. "What the hell is he doing?" I watched him shake the bartender's hand, have a quick conversation with him, and then sneak behind the bar, setting four glasses on the bar in front of him. Jasper, who had been watching him too, decided he wanted to get in to the action and left the table to join Edward, the bartender, and the slut.

"Where do you think we could find a shovel?" Alice spat as her eyes shot laser beams into the back of Jasper's head.

The slut put her hand on Jasper's back and I had to actually hold Alice in place, she was ready to climb over the table and rip the girl's head off.

Jasper walked behind the bar and took two of the glasses from Edward, filling them with ice and then two different clear liquids and a lime wedge to finish it off.

Edward, however, was measuring and mixing multiple ingredients while the bartender and the slut watched his every move.

"If I wasn't so mad at them right now, I'd say they look so hot when they are behind the bar like that, but since I'm mad.....oh hell, they're hot. There's no denying it...." I grumbled in frustration as I rested my face on my hand.

Alice let out a small sigh, seconding my opinion. I saw Edward pour an orange concoction into the two glasses, and then reach for a third from under the bar, where he poured the remainder of the contents from his shaker into. He offered the third glass to the slut, who tasted it and smiled. Then he offered the cup to the bartender, who laughed and downed the rest of the drink. He gave Edward slap on the back and the boys started back toward our table, with four drinks in hand.

I sat back into the booth, my arms tightly crossed on my chest, a scowl on my face.

Alice dug into her purse and pulled out a compact, which she used to fix her hair and makeup while completely ignoring Jasper, who had sat down next to her.

"I made something," Edward said sweetly as he sat down.

I narrowed my eyes at him. "A new friend?" I snapped as I glared at the slut, thinking up a hundred ways to make her bleed.

Edward laughed when he realized I was staring at Tiffany. "No love, I made you and Alice a drink. The bartender didn't know how to make it so I showed him," he said as he pushed a glass in front of Alice and me. His hand fell off the table top and found its way to my upper thigh, causing me to blush instantly. "Taste it," he said, as he anxiously awaited our opinion.

I looked over at Alice, who casually glanced down at the glass on the table. Very dramatically, she rolled her eyes, put the compact away, and raised the glass to her lips.

I followed suit, realizing I needed drink pretty bad when I felt Edward's hand snake up under the bottom hem of his shirt I was wearing and continue higher up my leg. I took a big swig of the drink and was surprised at how good it tasted.

I could tell there was orange juice, cranberry juice and something strawberry in it. It was really sweet and good so I drank some more. Alice had sucked down half of hers before turning to Jasper and asking if there was alcohol in it, he just laughed and nodded his head yes.

Licking my lips, I said, "This is really good. I like it a lot."

Edward and Jasper laughed out loud.

"What is it?" I asked as I took another sip, trying to figure out the remaining ingredients. I could defiantly taste the alcohol. Edward had made them really strong, I knew that much; I don't know how Alice missed it.

Edward grinned as he said, "I'm really glad you like it. The drink is called 'Screaming Sex with the Bartender'." That sexy twinkle was back in his eye as his finger grazed the edge of my underwear, making me jump slightly.

I clamped my hand on top of his and pushed it down toward my knee. "Well, it is very good.... a lot to live up to however..." I mumbled as I raised the glass to my mouth for another sip.

Alice's glass was already empty and Jasper had pulled her into his chest and bent his head down to her face, to hear whatever she was whispering to him. The grin on his face was priceless.

Edward smiled, and bent his head so it was right next to mine. "Oh, I don't think I'll have any problems making you scream, Bella." If my heart wasn't already flying in my chest, that comment kicked it into overdrive. I felt his hand moving along my leg again, making my mind race back to that bathroom and the feel of his body on mine as I was caught against the door.

"Ladies, the gentleman sends you the drinks with his regards..." The slut Tiffany pointed toward the door, and we caught a glimpse of Mark before he dashed off.

Edward and Jasper began swearing as they tasted the drinks that Mark had sent over and slammed them onto the table.

"Orgasms?" Jasper hissed. "He sent you orgasms? When I find that little...." Jasper was on his feet when Alice put her hand on his arm, pulling him back into the booth.

"Jasper, he has a slight crush, let it go..... I like the screaming sex with the bartender much better than a boring old orgasm anyway...." Her flirty giggle got his attention and he relaxed a little in his seat.

Edward however, still looked ready to kill. "Edward, come on, he's a kid, leave it at that.....nothing to be worried about," I said as I ran my hands down his arm, trying to settle him.

"I'm not at all worried, I'm just going to strangle the little twerp..." he mumbled under his breath.

An hour later, we left the bar. Alice was drunk and I was definitely tipsy. Edward had made us another round of 'screaming sex', and they were so tasty we drank them a lot faster than we should have.

We made our way back to our rooms and decided we needed to take a little nap to sleep off some of the drinks. Edward said he'd come get us around 8:30 so we could go get some dinner. He scooped me up in his arms and carried me to the bed and laid me down on the pillow. Jasper did the same to Alice and then the two of them tucked us in, gave a quick kiss on the head and closed the door shut tightly behind them.

"They really are dreamy, aren't they?" Alice sighed from her side of the bed.

"Yeah, we got pretty lucky, didn't we?" I started to close my eyes to sleep, but every time I did, I saw Edward, wet and glistening in the bathroom. My eyes flew open, and instead of sleeping, I began staring at the cracks in the ceiling. Alice was tapping her foot anxiously next to me. "We aren't going to get any sleep, are we?" I laughed as I sat up in

bed, leaning against the headboard. "What should we do instead?"

Alice scooted out from under the covers and grabbed the remote off the nightstand "Let's find a movie! That should kill some time until they come back." She started flipping the channels in search of the pay per view movies. We were trying to decide between a horror movie or a comedy when there was a loud knock on the door.

Alice squealed and flopped off the bed, still a bit drunk "It's Jasper! I knew he couldn't stay away for too long." She took off toward the door and I heard her say, "Hey sailor, come here often." In her best, husky voice as she opened the door.

Xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

So there you go.....Jasper saves the day.

New poll up!!!

Bella is the favorite to win the bet, but only I and a few others know if you are right or not...Some have found the clues, the answer is in the story... if you look hard enough. Some clues going back at least 20 chapters now...

Chapter: 29

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Hb1 – Queen Beta..... Thank you !!

Mrs. Masen

BPOV

I started laughing until I heard a man's voice that wasn't Jasper or Edward.

"Hey there, little lady....you going to invite me in?" I recognized Mark's voice immediately and I could hear Alice stammering, her head too foggy to come up with a quick comeback.

I leaned forward and looked toward the door to see Mark standing inside the doorway, and Alice leaning against the wall, trying to block his way with her tiny body. He took another step into the room and my instincts took over. I leaned across the bed, found Alice's phone and called Jasper.

"Hey, baby..." he answered.

"Jasper, it's Bella, get over here now! That Mark guy is back and in our room...." I didn't get to finish before I heard the phone clunk to the ground and Jasper tell Edward to get his ass out of bed, followed by Edward cursing.

I closed the phone and leaned forward again so I could see what Mark was doing. He had moved right next to Alice, who was looking back over her shoulder nervously. I flashed the cell phone at her and I saw her sigh in relief.

A second later, the door across the hall flew open, and in the blink of an eye Jasper had pushed his way past Mark, swept Alice up into his arms and carried her over his shoulder back to their room.

Edward stepped into the room and held Mark by the shoulder against the wall. He looked me in the eyes, pointed his finger at me and said, "Don't move an inch."

I nodded my head and sat back on the bed.

Edward barked "In the hall!" to Mark. I waited until I heard the door close to leap out of bed and pressed my ear to the door, trying to hear what was going on.

I could hear Jasper asking Mark what he thought he was doing while Edward was on the phone, I assume with the front desk, insisting they send a manager up to our floor immediately to deal with Mark. Jasper was cursing at Mark and threatening to wipe the smirk off his face. I let out a giggle and used Alice's cell to make a call.

"Hello?" Alice said.

"Are you listening to this?" I whispered as I peered out the peephole, trying to see their faces.

"Of course, I can't see them out the peephole, can you?" she asked.

I laughed imagining her on her tippy toes, trying to get a view of the action. "No, I can't...but oh, I hear another voice. That must be the manager," I said as I strained my ears to listen to Edward insist Mark stay away from us and our rooms.

The manager quickly agreed, and said he'd escort Mark off the floor himself.

Edward and Jasper were deep in conversation when I moved away from the peephole and sat down on the floor by the door.

"Well, I guess they took care of everything. Are you alright?" I asked Alice, realizing I had no idea what Mark had said to her.

"Yeah, he was just telling me that he liked my dress and he wanted to come in and visit with us for a while.....a real creep. Oh hi, Jasper.....Bella, I gotta go..." Alice hung up the phone quickly.

Shit, Edward's coming!! I tried to scramble to my feet and run to the bed, but the door opened just as I started to stand up. Edward stood in the doorway hands on his hips, towering over me. "Hi Edward!" I waved from the floor, smiling.

"What part of 'don't move an inch' did you have trouble with?" he asked with a scowl on his face.

"Oh, get a grip," I said, rolling my eyes. "I was perfectly safe on the other side of this door and I just wanted to hear you and Jasper lay into the creep. So is he gone?" I asked, trying to change the subject.

He held his hand out to me and helped me to my feet. "Yes, he's gone, hopefully fired. But definitely banned from this floor. Even so, Jasper and I don't want you girls in a room alone. He's worked here for a while, he could have a master key or something...So you have a choice, either I stay in here with you or Jasper does. Who would you prefer?" he asked as he sat down next to me on the bed.

Without hesitation, I said, "You, of course. That is as long as you don't snore..." I eyed him suspiciously, but then I burst out laughing when I imagined him snoring like Emmett.

"I can assure you I don't snore..." he said as my laughter died down. He stood up and headed for the door. "I am going to go get my suitcase and I'll be right back. Stay put!"

I saluted him like a good little soldier and laid back on the bed.

When he opened the door, Alice was standing there, ready to claim her clothes. She skipped in, grinning from ear to ear and quickly packed a pair of pajamas and a change of clothes. She went in the bathroom and gathered her toiletries before springing onto the bed next to me. "You, two kids, have fun tonight.....don't do anything I wouldn't do..." she said with a giggle.

"Yeah, don't worry. I have every intention of still being in the bet come the morning, Alice. I'll sleep in the bathroom if I have to, but I'll behave myself," I boasted, praying she would be the one to cave...and that by morning, the whole bet would be over finally.

She grinned and kissed me on the cheek. "Love you, Bella! Sleep well...." she said with a wink as she ran out the door.

I was about to return to the task of selecting a movie when the phone rang. "Hello?" I said, assuming it was Edward calling from across the hall.

"Oh, um...hello, Mrs. Masen? This is James from the front desk. Is your husband there?" the man asked nervously.

Not feeling like launching into a big explanation of the fact that Edward and I aren't married, and not even really dating I just went with it. "Um, Edward isn't here right now. Can I take a message?" I scrambled to find the pen and notepad by the phone.

"Yes, please let him know that the gentleman who was harassing you and your friend has been escorted off the property, and I wanted to apologize for any distress he may have caused you. If Mr. Cullen has any questions, he can just call down here and speak to me anytime. I will be here all night." Just as James finished his apology, Edward walked in the door wearing a grey t shirt and black sweatpants, holding a suitcase in his hand.

I waved to him that the phone was for him. "Hang on James; he just walked in the door." I held the phone out to him and said, "The front desk..."

With a curious expression, he took the phone and put it to his ear as he stood next to the bed. "Hello?" He listened as James introduced himself. A second later his eyebrows shot up and he looked at me grinning. "I'm sorry; you were telling my wife, what?"

Crap, I forgot about that.... My cheeks turned bright red and I distracted myself by flipping through the movies on the TV until he was done talking.

He mumbled a few words of thanks to the manager, and then said, "I don't know, let me ask my wife...." Again, emphasizing the wife part. "Oh wife, James would like to know if you're hungry. He'd be happy to send up some room service for us so we can have a private dinner in our room. What should I tell him?"

My stomach grumbled, giving me my answer immediately. "Tell him your beautiful bride is starving and that would be lovely, dear."

He shook his head, laughing and told James that would be perfect. A few words of thanks later he hung up the phone.

I refused to look at him, because I knew he was going to grill me about the wife thing. I decided to try and change the subject, "What movie do you want to watch? Alice and I were going to watch one before we were interrupted." I kept my eyes on the TV screen as I stretched out on my stomach, moving my head to the foot of the head.

The mattress dipped under his weight as he crawled onto the bed next to me. "I will watch whatever my dear wife wants to watch. Isn't that what good husbands do?" he said as he brushed my hair over my shoulders and ran his hand down my back.

"Ok, so he called me Mrs. Masen, and rather than launch into a long-winded explanation... I ... I just went with it. I'm sorry I forgot to warn you..." I rambled as I tried to explain what happened. I didn't know how he would react to the whole marriage thing and I didn't want him thinking I was a psycho, already shopping for a wedding dress. I found myself more flustered by the second until he said something.

He just laid there and smirked as I floundered trying to make a complete sentence. "I'm just teasing you, Bella. Relax. Of course, I'm sure we could get Jasper online and he could quickly become a minister and marry us before dawn.... And make it legal, Mrs. Masen. I don't think that would break any of the rules of the bet...."

I rolled my eyes at him. "Yeah, and I think Liz and Renee would kill us...if they didn't get to plan the wedding and drive us crazy." I laughed at the thought of the two of them running around making plans. What the hell am I thinking about marriage for? Shouldn't we go on a date first? I shook my head to clear the wedding crap from my brain until Edward leaned over.

His face was only inches from mine. He raised an eyebrow and smiled. "You're right; when we get married, we should let them have their fun..."

When we get married? Did he just say that? Breathe, Bella, breathe...I forced myself to breathe. "How about we go on a date before we get married, there, lover boy?" I muttered, trying to calm my heart that was trying to leap out of my chest.

He sighed. "If you insist....."

I was still scanning movies when I saw the perfect show. "Look, Edward....can we watch this one? I love this movie?" I said, hopping up and down on my knees on the bed.

"Planes, Trains and Automobiles.... Sure. Seems appropriate, considering the day we've had. Now can you please stop bouncing before I throw up?" He laughed as he tackled me back onto the bed.

He pinned me to the bed and started kissing my neck as I laughed. Soon, I wasn't laughing anymore, I was enjoying the feeling of his lips on my skin way too much. My hands ran along his sides, settling on his hips. I gave him a shove and took off for the bathroom, out of breath.

"Shower!" I said as I leaned against the wall, trying to breathe.

"Are you asking me to join you in the shower?" Edward asked with a mischievous grin on his face.

"No! You stay.... I will shower...set the movie up, I'll be back." I ran into the bathroom and slammed the door shut. I could hear him laughing out in the other room. I turned on the shower and let the steam fill the bathroom. I took off the leggings and Edward's shirt and laid them on the counter with my underwear which I decided to just wash in the sink.

When I could hardly see where I was going, I jumped into the shower and lathered my hair with the coconut shampoo the hotel provided. It smelled so good as I rinsed the bubbles from my hair. I quickly washed my body and conditioned my hair. When my stomach growled again, I decided shower time was over. Hopefully, room service had come while I was showering and I could eat soon.

I turned off the water and grabbed two fluffy towels. One, I wrapped around my hair and spun into a pile on top of my head. The other, I used to dry my arms and legs before wrapping it around my body.

Crap, no clothes, I thought as I took a deep breath and opened the door. "Edward, can

I borrow some clothes?" I called from the doorway of the bathroom. I heard him hop off the bed and head in my direction.

He stopped and admired my current outfit for a second, then wrapped his arms around me. "You're toasty warm, aren't you?" he asked as he kissed my bare shoulder.

"Yes, I am. But right now, I need some clothes. Can I borrow a shirt please?" I said as sweetly as possible. He smiled and headed back to his suitcase, but I stepped out of the bathroom and stopped him. "Hang on. I already know what shirt I want..." I went right up to him and tugged on the grey t-shirt he was wearing.

"Bella, I have a ton of clean shirts in here..." he said as he motioned to the suitcase at his feet.

"But this one will smell like you.... those won't." I made a little pouty face and knew I had him.

He lifted the bottom of the shirt over his head, exposing his bare chest yet again.

God he is stunning, I thought as he started walking towards me.

"Here you go. Anything else you want off my body? Just let me know I would be happy to oblige..." he said as he placed the shirt in my hand while his other hand caressed my neck and collarbone.

I broke out in goose bumps at his gentle touch. "No, nothing else off of you, but I do need some shorts or underwear..." He quickly went to his suitcase and rummaged through for something I could borrow.

With my new clothes in hand, I slipped back into the bathroom to get dressed. I heard a knock at the door and prayed it was room service. When I heard the cart rolling in, I quickly threw on the clothes and brushed my hair. I gave myself a quick once over in the mirror, checking to make sure the t-shirt covered my ass, as it hung to my mid thigh.

I heard the gentleman from room service say, "I hope you and your wife have a lovely dinner." I started snickering again.

When I walked out, I was blown away by the elaborate dinner, with a bottle of wine, salad, two steaks with potatoes and an entire dessert sampler tray. There was even a vase full of flowers in the center of all the food. "Holy cow!" I mumbled as I peered under all the lids, my mouth watering. "He sent up all this? I would have been happy with a burger and fries. James must be really sorry...."

I sat down at the table and started cutting my steak while Edward poured the wine. It was the most delicious steak I had ever eaten, cooked to perfection. I didn't realize how hungry I was until I finished off my potatoes and started eating the ones off Edwards's plate.

I was so stuffed after dinner, I went and stretched out across the bed, moaning.

Edward threw a pillow at me, and laughed something about my eyes being bigger than my stomach.

"Start the movie while I digest my dinner. I need to make room for that desert tray." I eyed the chocolate mousse with a raspberry on top that Edward was about to put a spoon into. "Drop the spoon Edward, no dessert for you until I make room in my stomach."

I propped my head up on the pillow and rubbed my stomach, willing the food to digest. He dropped the spoon and came over to lie down next to me.

The movie started and Edward laughed as I moaned every few minutes from eating too much. After a half hour, I started to feel better. When the part came on where John Candy and Steve Martin were in bed together, I laughed. "Look, Edward, that could have been you and Jasper!"

"I don't think so.... We would have done rocks paper scissors to see who got the bed. Loser takes the floor. It is a 'guy's unwritten rule'," he mumbled.

"Well, you guys are stupid. Alice and I would have shared the bed, no problem." I rolled up onto my elbow smiling. "However, I'm much more excited about sleeping with my new roomie, I have to admit." I smirked as I ran my fingers across his still bare chest.

"Bella...." I could tell from the tone in his voice it was a warning of sorts, that I was starting to push things like I had in the bathroom.

"Edward...." I used his same warning tone as I leaned over and kissed his chest.

"I am trying very hard to behave Bella, but you are not making it very easy..." I watched him twitch as I dragged my fingernails across his stomach.

One of his hands was gripping the sheet so tight, his knuckles were turning white.

"Oh, come on, Edward, I'm just having a little fun with you. Surely, you can take it..." I bit my lip to keep from laughing as I wrapped my thigh over his and laid my arm across his chest. I could hear his heart pounding, and felt the quickened rise and fall of his chest.

Edward's phone rang, making him jump up to answer it. "Hello? Hey, man ...no, I got everything. She is? Ha, Ok, no, we're good. Watching a movie. Ok, man, I'll talk to you in the morning. Bye." He put the phone back on the nightstand and chuckled. "Alice is out cold. James sent the same spread to their room, and she drank a glass of wine too many. Jasper says she's out cold, sound asleep. He just wanted to make sure I didn't need anything from in there."

Shit! Alice is asleep.....now I really do have to be good. Damn..."I think it was those drinks you made in the bar. She normally can drink like a fish for as tiny as she is. The 'screaming sex with the bartender' must have been too much for her." I laughed as I sat up, glancing at the desert tray that suddenly was calling my name.

I casually walked over to the cart and stabbed a spoon into the mousse before Edward had a chance to stop me. As soon as the spoon hit my lips, I heard him say my name and he came barreling over to the cart, and spun me away from the desserts, grabbing the remaining mousse and holding it high over his head.

"Come on, Edward....give it back." I tried jumping for it, but he was too damn tall.

"You little sneak. You knew I wanted to try this... and then, you tiptoe over here to eat it all? That's not a very nice thing for my wife to do," he scolded me as he lowered the mousse and took a huge spoonful of it, holding it up to his mouth like he was going to eat it all.

"Don't make me come after the mousse, Edward. I don't want to hurt you, but I will. I am a woman, and we really like our chocolate...." I slowly climbed up onto the bed.

He stood his ground, not believing I would jump at him.

"Last chance, hand over the dessert and no one gets hurt." I started bouncing gently on the bed, calculating how hard I had to jump to make it all the way over to him.

As I left the bed and started flying through the air, he realized I was serious and dropped the glass the dessert had been in onto the cart and took the smallest step backwards. Instead of landing in his arms, I crashed into his hand that was holding the spoon of mousse and flung it all over his cheek and neck. As I slid down his chest and onto the floor, I put my hand over my mouth to keep from laughing.

Edward stood there like a statue, mousse dripping off his chin and onto his chest for what seemed like an eternity.

Uh oh..... Now I did it. He's mad. Suddenly my little game didn't seem so funny anymore. "Edward, I am so sorry...." I scrambled onto my feet and walked over to him.

He remained silent and dropped the spoon onto the cart with a loud crash as it hit the tray.

"Are you mad?" I asked as I nervously bit my fingernail. His face was unreadable.

After what felt like an eternity, he took a large step toward me, causing me to stumble backward to get out of his way. The next thing I knew, his hands were on my shoulders and he gave me a shove backward.

My knees hit the edge of the mattress and I flopped back onto the bed as he towered over me, smiling. Okay, so maybe he isn't mad.....I thought to myself as he started leaning over me, his chocolaty face hovering over mine.

I reached up and scooped a bit of the mousse off his cheek with my finger and licked it. "Ummm tasty." He chuckled and while he was distracted, I flipped over, scrambling back to the headboard of the bed. When I turned around, he was crawling up the bed toward me like a cat.

"You know, Bella; I still haven't gotten to taste the mousse..." He stopped at my legs, lowering his head, he kissed my knee, making sure his cheek brushed my leg as he did, smearing the mousse all over it.

"Edward, what are you doing....." I gasped as I saw his tongue come out of his mouth and head toward my leg.

"I'm simply tasting the mousse. Relax, Bella...." The wink he gave me sent my body into overdrive. His fingers crept up my leg and held my calf firmly against his chest. His hot breath flowed over my skin as he lowered his head and started licking the side of my thigh.

It took every ounce of strength and focus I had to stay still. When I felt his lips sucking on the upper part of my knee, I moaned loudly, causing Edwards eyes to look up, a devilish grin on his face.

"You okay there, Bella?" He laughed as I fanned my face, refusing to look at his sparkling green eyes.

"Just fine Edward, finish your mousse please, I'll be watching the movie." I stubbornly

refused to look at him, staring at the TV instead, but out of the corner of my eye I saw his smile grow as he lowered his face back to my leg, working his way higher up my thigh. Z, Y.....W, V, U.....T....I started saying the alphabet backwards in my head to keep my focus anywhere other than on his tongue working its way up my thigh. That feels so amazing.....stop it Bella, now before it's too late...

"OK, dessert is over, Edward, time to clean up the mess." I jumped off the bed and ran into the bathroom, not daring to look back at him. I threw a washcloth under the running water, wrung out some of the excess water and put my foot on the edge of the tub to wipe the sticky mousse off my leg.

Edward strolled into the bathroom, laughing to himself as he leaned over the sink and splashed water all over his neck and face, removing all the remnants of chocolate off his body.

When I looked up at him, he still had a smear of mousse on his chest so I gently ran the washcloth over his chest, removing the last traces of dessert. I felt him watching my every move as I reached over and grabbed a towel off the shelf and dried the excess moisture off his chest and neck.

He took the towel from my hand, and used it to dry his face, then he surprised me, by dropping down on one knee and drying my thigh which was still wet from my earlier clean up.

"There you go, all clean and dry." He got up off the ground smiling. "I don't think I've ever enjoyed eating mousse so much before."

I rolled my eyes at him and said, "I love you." As I wrapped my arms around him, I could still smell the chocolate on his skin. "And you smell delicious too."

Since we were in the bathroom already, I grabbed my toothbrush and quickly brushed my teeth. While I was combing my hair out, Edward took a minute to brush his teeth at the adjacent sink. Suddenly, I became very sleepy and a yawn escaped my lips.

Edward laughed. "Let's go to bed." Hearing him say those words gave me butterflies. I took his hand as I turned out the bathroom light. Edward stopped at the door to make sure the latch was in place and we were safely locked in together. The only light remaining in the room was the flickering lights from the television.

"What side of the bed do you sleep on?" I asked, suddenly concerned about the sleeping arrangements for some reason.

"The right side..... Why?" he asked as he pulled the covers back.

I quickly crawled across to the left side. "Just checking. Because if you said left, I would have had to call off the wedding before you even proposed." I slid my legs under the fluffy blankets, laying on my side so I could watch him get into bed. He found the remote and clicked off the TV, putting the room into complete darkness before climbing into bed.

Under the covers, I slid my body right next to his, snuggling as close as possible to him. He wrapped his arms tightly around me and sighed. "I love you, Bella. More than you could possibly know." His lips brushed against my forehead and I smiled.

"I love you, too. Being with you, like this, just feels so right." I turned my face up to his and kissed him. His hand went to the back of my neck and pressed me tightly against his lips.

“Sleep, Bella.” He sighed in the darkness. I felt my body relaxing, perfectly comfortable in his arms. He tenderly stroked my hair, and occasionally I’d feel him gently kiss the top of my head. As I drifted off to sleep, I heard him whisper, “I will marry you someday, my love... I promise.”

oxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxo

Group - AAAXXXXXXXXXX

Ok there you go, two chapters. Vote in the new poll I am dying to see who you would set your friends up with....

Chapter: 30

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Hb1... thanks as always for your beta-ing brilliance

Shower

EPOV

The early morning sun peeked into the room from between the heavy curtains. Bella was asleep next to me, her dark, mahogany hair falling across her face. She was still curled up; the warmth of her body next to mine was the most glorious way to start my day.

My memory returned to just before I had fallen asleep and I chuckled quietly; Bella started talking about produce, possibly making a shopping list, in her dreams.

I gently brushed her brown locks off of her face, revealing a small smile on her lips as she slept. How I wished I could know what she was dreaming about. She truly looked like a sleeping angel; a more perfect creature could not possibly exist.

My thoughts drifted back to last night -- the Jacuzzi, dinner, dessert, and finally, crawling into bed with her -- and I found myself smiling. I also remembered the promise I had whispered to her as she fell asleep. Deep down in my heart I knew that I would marry her one day. I couldn't explain how, but I realized last night, that without her, I am nothing. She is my other half, my better half, and when I'm with her, I am the man I truly want to be.

I lifted my head and saw it was 7:00am, and I knew Jasper wanted to get an early start, so reluctantly I tried to wake my sleeping angel. "Bella? Bella love, it's time to wake up." I tenderly kissed her forehead as she stirred from under my lips.

"Five more minutes, Mom.....just five minutes," she mumbled as she buried her head further into the pillow, pulling the covers over her head.

"It's time to get up, Bella," I said a little louder, and at the sound of my voice, she stretched her hand out from under the comforter, toward my mouth and pushed on it, trying to silence me like an alarm clock.

"Shhhhhh, Eddie. I'm sleeping. Quiet," she mumbled without opening her eyes.

"Love, you need to get up so we have time to shower and get dressed. Jasper wants to get an early start." I peeked under the comforter and gently pulled it down from her face. My hand ran up and down her arm, giving her a gentle shake.

"Edward...." she whined, scooting her body closer to mine and wrapping her arms and legs around me. "Shhhhhh, let's go back to sleep. Hold me please... let's just stay here forever. Send Alice and Jasper back..." Her warm cheek pressed onto my chest, her breath tickled across my skin.

I sighed in defeat and hugged her tightly. "Five minutes, Bella, I'll give you five minutes." I ran my hands along the length of her arms and down her side. My t-shirt, she was wearing, was twisted around her, exposing the soft skin of her stomach and lower back. I couldn't resist the opportunity to touch her. My fingers slowly traced across, making her shiver.

"Edward...." she sighed, her voice still sounding half asleep. "I love you."

"I love you too, Bella." I kissed her head and we lay in each other's arms, five more minutes, before I tried to wake her again. "Bella love, it's time to get up. We need to leave soon." As much as I hated to do it, I started to pry her tiny arms and legs away from me.

"You shower first; I'll just lie in this big bed, all by myself...hmmmmm," she sighed as she batted her eyelashes at me, the corners of her mouth turned up in the sweetest grin.

My mind immediately flashed back to yesterday in the bathroom when I had her pressed up against the door, my shirt draped over her shoulders, hanging open, inviting me to touch her soft skin.

The phone rang loudly, snapping my out of my daydream.

"Come on....." Bella groaned as she threw the pillow over her head. "Can't a person get a little sleep...?"

"Hello?" I said sharply.

"Edward, it's Jasper. Alice is refusing to get out of bed. We're going to be a bit later than I thought." I could hear Alice in the background begging Jasper to close the curtains before she was permanently blinded.

"Well, seems like we're in the same situation because Bella has her head buried under her pillow as we speak. Give me ten minutes to shower and I'll meet you downstairs for breakfast," I suggested, and Jasper was very receptive to the idea. I hung up the phone and lifted the pillow off Bella's head.

"Sleeping, Edward.... Still sleeping," Bella mumbled as I kissed her cheek.

"I'm going to shower, and then grab some breakfast with Jasper, so you can sleep a little longer."

"See, I knew there was a reason I love you so much." She giggled as I tapped her on the head with the pillow. She puckered her lips out at me, asking for a kiss and I was more than happy to grant her request.

Feeling playful, instead of a small peck, I flipped her onto her back and allowed my chest to press onto hers as I kissed her with more enthusiasm than she was expecting. Her soft moan as she wrapped her arms around my neck let me know I had gotten her attention.

"I'm going to shower..." I said as I quickly hopped off the bed before I got carried away again. It was getting harder and harder to behave around her.

After a nice hot shower, I met Jasper downstairs at the hotel restaurant for breakfast. We quickly ate, checked road conditions to Portland and were pleased to find that road

crews had been out all night, making the highway drivable once again. We hurried back up to the girls, eager to get on the road. I wished Jasper luck at waking Alice, then went into my room.

Bella was lying in the middle of the bed. The sun was streaming through the curtains, illuminating her skin in a soft glow. Her right leg had slipped out from under the covers and I could see her creamy skin against the white sheet. The gentle curve of her hip was mesmerizing as I walked closer. Her arm was extended out and resting on my pillow as if she was reaching out to touch me in her sleep.

I sat on the edge of the bed and took in every inch of her body, allowing the vision before me to be burned into my memory. Glancing at my watch and doing some quick math in my head, I realized that the next 114 hours were going to be the longest of my life. I started to chuckle to myself and the light shaking of the mattress must have woke her.

"Edward?" she whispered, one eye still closed. She patted the pillow, wanting me to lie down next to her. Even though I was supposed to be getting her out of bed, I lay down next to her, for one last minute of bliss before we were trapped in a car with Jasper and Alice for the next 3 hours.

"Good morning ... again. The roads are clear. So unfortunately, it's time for you to crawl out of bed," I said as I stroked her cheek.

Her mouth opened to speak, and the words that I heard, threw my body into frenzy. "Oh, Edward.....Make love to me."

My body began responding immediately; my heart raced, my breathing increased, blood coursed through my veins, my fingers began unbuttoning my shirt at lightening speeds, and then my brain kicked in and put the brakes on everything.

"What did you just say?" I suddenly realized I must have misunderstood her because there is no way she would just blurt that out....

"You said it was time to get up," she put her hand over her mouth as she yawned "And I said...make me!" She opened her eyes and immediately her brow furrowed when she saw I had started unbuttoning my shirt. "Why are you stripping? Not that I'm complaining, it's just...unexpected."

Well, crap. Now what do I say? Sorry Bella, I thought you just invited me to have sex with you? Or, I was going to take advantage of you while you slept? Think Edward think!!! "Um, I thought you needed a shirt for today and I was going to offer you this one," I said, hoping the panic in my voice wasn't too obvious.

She smiled and ran her warm palm down my cheek. "That's sweet, Edward, thank you. But if we're going to be stuck in the car for a few hours, I think I'd be more comfortable in a t-shirt. So while I'm in the shower, can you find me one?" She rolled onto her stomach, resting up on her elbows and kissed my nose.

I nodded my head.

"OK, I will get up, but for the record, I am not a morning person, Edward.... I'm a grump until I have my morning...Coffee!" she squealed as she glanced over my shoulder and found the coffee and pancakes I bought at the restaurant for her.

I couldn't help but laugh as I rolled off the bed and fetched her coffee, pancakes and syrup from the table, placing them in her lap. She sat straight up and took a large swig of coffee, before cutting into the pancakes.

I spent the next ten minutes watching Bella devour her entire breakfast. When she popped the last bite of pancake into her mouth, I cleared away the trash for her as she headed to the shower.

"When you find a shirt, can you just bring it into the bathroom for me?" She giggled over her shoulder before disappearing into the bathroom.

My mouth hung open slightly as she closed the door. I closed my eyes and buried my face in my hands, trying to slow my thundering heart. You can do this Edward, just find her a shirt.....I told myself as I began rummaging through my suitcase. A green sleeve peeked out and I knew that was the shirt for her.

I pulled out one of my Oregon State track t-shirts from college, on the back was printed 'Masen'. I smirked. She had enjoyed pretending to be my wife last night, I figured the least I could do was make her a Masen for the day.

You can do this, Edward....Be a gentleman.....She wants to win the bet, it's important to her.....I reminded myself as I took a deep breath and tapped on the bathroom door. I could hear the shower running, but she didn't answer.

I opened the door a crack and saw the steam from the shower had covered the mirror. She wants the shoes, Edward. Why? I have no idea, but she wants them, so behave.... "Bella, I found you a shirt," I said loudly as I kept my eyes down on the floor.

I realized that was a mistake because there, on the floor, was my shirt along with the shorts she had borrowed. I groaned, knowing that meant she was approximately 7 feet away from me, completely naked. I took a deep breath and was laying the shirt on the counter when I heard her voice.

"Edward? Are you still in here?" she asked so sweetly, I was instantly suspicious.

Run Edward! Get out while you can, Edward...."Yes. I, um, just put your shirt on the counter, I'm leaving," I mumbled as I made my way back to the door, giving her back her privacy.

"No wait!" I reflexively turned at the sound of her voice and saw Bella's bare arm waving at me out the glass shower door.

I inhaled sharply and stumbled against the wall, trying to avert my glance away from her naked form behind the foggy glass.

"I need you..."

"What?" I gasped loudly.

She chuckled at my response. "I need you ... to hand me the little bottle of conditioner that's on the counter." Her dripping finger pointed over toward the vanity, where a tiny white bottle with a blue lid sat. "Do you see it?"

"Yes, I ...see it, Bella," I said as I closed my hand tightly around the small bottle, my eyes

remained down on the counter. "What do you want me to do with it?"

Bella's laughter rang through the bathroom. "Silly Edward, I need you to bring it over to me. I would get it myself, but I'm all wet and I'd probably slip and break my neck on the marble floor. Oh, and grab a washcloth on your way over here..."

"What?!" I shouted for the second time in a minute. Surely she didn't expect me to....

"I forgot a washcloth too. Can you just hand me one, please?" Her bare finger calling me toward the steam covered, glass, shower door.

With the bottle in my hand, I turned to the towel rack and snatched a washcloth and yelled, "Catch!" I don't know what possessed me to do it, other than the fact that I didn't know what I would do if I saw her through the glass, so like a coward, I chose to throw the tiny bottle of conditioner at the shower, trying to aim it in the gap of the door.

"Ouch!" Bella cried, and then she started cursing at me, "Damn it! Edward Masen, what the hell has gotten into you? Why are you throwing things at me?" The anger in her voice ringing through the room. "I think that's going to leave a bruise!"

I glanced apologetically toward the shower which was a big mistake.

Out from the gap in the door, Bella thrust her long, naked leg. The water was slowly trickling down her leg. I watched it drip off her heel, pooling underneath her foot. Her skin almost sparkled in the light.

"Look at this!" Her hand shot out, pointing to her knee, she indicated the point of impact for the conditioner bottle.

"Sorry, I just didn't think you would want me to come all the way over there.... And we really need to work on your catching skills. That was a pretty decent throw...you should have caught it," I mumbled nervously as my eyes refused to leave her toned, bare leg that was taunting me from the shower stall.

"I had no idea you were throwing it! You could have warned me." I could tell from the tone of her voice she was annoyed, and I instantly felt terrible.

"I'm sorry...I just....are you OK?" I could see a small welt forming on her knee as I fumbled with my words as I instinctively took a step towards her.

"I'm fine. Could you please hand me the washcloth now. I'd really like to wash myself. I'm still a bit sticky from the mousse..."

She had to mention the mousse....

Images of her, lying back on the bed as I crawled up her small body, licking her leg danced through my head, making me want her even more. I stopped dead in my tracks and closed my eyes for a second, begging God for the strength to respect her wishes and keep her in the bet.

"Edward? I really need to wash up. Don't make me come out there and take the washcloth from you...." she teased me in more ways than one. The playful tone in her voice made me think she might actually do it.

"Bella... don't you dare come out of that shower," I begged.

"I'm just kidding Edward, relax. Bring me the damn washcloth or throw it, whatever you are more comfortable with, but I'm turning into a prune in here!" Her hand stretched out further from the shower so I could see her bare shoulder now and just barely make out the outline of her breast on the glass door. My eyes shot to the ground, my heart raced.

I slowly walked toward her, careful to look anywhere but at the glass. When I could see the lower edge of the door, I extended my arm with the washcloth in hand and felt her slippery fingers, groping for the washcloth. Her skin was so warm from the hot water of the shower.

"Gotcha!" she laughed as she grabbed my wrist, the water streaming off of her body and onto mine.

"Bella...." I warned as I tried to shake free, but she had a pretty strong grip for a girl.

She released her grip and grabbed the washcloth from my fingertips. "Thank you, Edward!" Her sing song voice echoing through the shower stall. "You're a lifesaver."

"Anytime I can be of service." I laughed. As I turned to leave, I did what I swore I wouldn't do, I looked at the door and through the steam, I saw her. I could make out the silhouette of her tiny, naked body. I watched her profile bend over as she began lathering her one leg and then the other. She was washing her stomach before I realized I was still standing there, ogling her.

"Wow," I quietly sighed.

Either she heard me or felt my eyes on her body because she stood straight up and said, "Edward Masen, are you still out there?"

"Um, nope.... I left a minute ago." I turned my back in embarrassment and headed for the door. I shut the door tightly behind me and began pacing around the hotel room. Do not go back in there, Edward.... I told myself.

She was the most irresistible woman I had ever met and I yet had to keep away from her for another....110 hours. This is going to be impossible, stupid bet....With a groan I threw myself onto the bed.

I draped my arm across my eyes as I listened to the sound of the shower turning off. She's standing in there, naked, drying herself....

I had resorted to listing the states in alphabetical order when I heard the door to the bathroom open. Bella had dried her hair which cascaded over her shoulders beautifully. She wore her jeans from yesterday, which I had to say, fit her like a glove. I gasped when I saw her in my shirt; she had cinched the side of it to make it more form fitting on her small body.

She swept her hair over her shoulder, turned around and proudly pointed to her back. "Look! I'm a Masen today!" When she spun back around, she had the loveliest smile on her face

I got up off the bed and went to her. "You have no idea how utterly sexy you look right now," I whispered as I buried my face into her hair. Her skin was still warm from the shower as her body pressed against mine. My lips trailed down her neck, kissing and

tasting every inch of it.

"Sorry about in the bathroom. That wasn't very nice of me to tease you that way..." She bit her lip to keep from smiling. "But it was a lot of fun, I have to admit."

"Just be happy I was a respectful young man or you would be out of the bet right now...." I growled as I kissed her neck with as much passion as I dared.

"I think that's the problem, part of me was well, kind of hoping that maybe you wouldn't be so..... respectful in there," she sheepishly admitted, her eyes firmly planted on the ground.

For one of the few times in my life, I was completely at a loss for words. A million thoughts were running through my head all at once, most of them involving Bella and the bed that was only a few feet away from us.

She misunderstood my silence as a bad thing and started stammering herself, "I'm sorry, never mind Edward, let's just pack." She quickly brushed past me and started jamming things into her suitcase, her cheeks bright red with embarrassment.

I swiftly went to her and picked her up into my arms. "I love you and would thoroughly enjoy making you lose the bet. As a matter of fact, I have been thinking about nothing else for the last few days." I stepped closer to the bed and as I lowered her onto the sheets, it happened, again.

"Bella! Edward! Let's get a move on!" I heard Alice shriek from outside our door.

I looked down at an extremely exasperated Bella and grumbled, "Does she have built in radar or something?"

"If I didn't love her like a sister, I would kill her right now...." Bella said through a clenched jaw.

I had to laugh at how cute she was when she was frustrated and ran my fingers through my hair reflexively to calm down.

Bella went over and threw open the door, glaring at Alice. "Well, that look just answered my question; you're still in the bet. I love the shirt!" Alice giggled from the doorway. "Come on, Jasper's pacing a hole in the floor, he's ready to go."

"We'll meet you in the lobby," Bella said with a moan. She closed the door and flopped down on the bed beside me. "Back to reality...."

"Come on, let's go, Mrs. Masen." That got her to crack a smile. She rolled over and stroked my cheek, kissing me sweetly. "Thanks for being the best roomie I've ever had."

"Hey, you know, I do live alone. Anytime you want to be my roomie again, all you have to do is come over. You can stay as long as you like." A night, a week, a month...forever.

She threw her head back and laughed. "Oh, I'm sure you'd get sick of me pretty quick."

I stood up and offered my hand to help her off the bed. Holding her in my arms, I told her the truth, "I could never get sick of you, Bella."

We gathered up our bags and headed down to meet Alice and Jasper, who were huddled

together on the couch in the lobby. The line to check out was really long from all the stranded guests.

As Bella and I waited in line, James saw us from behind the counter. "Mr. & Mrs. Masen, please come here." He held his hands up and waved us over.

Bella buried her face in my arm when she heard Alice squeal from the couch.

"Mr. & Mrs. Masen, I hope everything was to your liking last night," James said as he printed up our receipt.

"Everything was lovely last night. Thank you so much," Bella said softly.

I reached over and gave her a hug. "Dessert was especially tasty," I snickered and Bella blushed.

"Our chocolate mousse is my favorite," James commented.

"Mine too," Bella and I answered together, laughing.

We settled our bill and packed all the bags back into the car, heading off to Portland. The snow had ended but roads were still pretty empty, so we made good time on the trip home. Bella let me drive home, thankfully, after a little persuading. She knew I drove faster than she does, and when I let her know we had a meeting this afternoon with the developer of the site we really wanted for the bar, she was happy to ride shotgun.

Portland was a winter wonderland, covered in a thick blanket of snow. The trees looked like something out of a story book, beautiful and pristine. I needed to find my car, and I knew my car would be with Emmett at the girl's apartment. I didn't even bother checking anywhere else. Sure enough my Volvo was sitting right out front, covered in snow. We parked nearby and unloaded the girls' bags and helped carry them up to the door.

"Maybe we should knock or call before we go in there..." Alice said apprehensively, sounding afraid of what may be behind the door. Jasper nodded in agreement.

"Oh, how bad could it be?" Bella laughed "It's 11:00 in the morning...." She pushed open the door and called, "Hi honey, we're ho-.....Oh my god! Emmett, what the hell are you wearing?? Where are your clothes?"

oxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

Emmett and Rose return!! Yeah- I love writing Emmett... So Jasper is the big winner of who you would set your friends up with. Jacob and Emmett are neck in neck for second. All I have to say is a few of you must hate your friends because the Vile One got quite a few votes... ICK

Hope you liked it.

New poll up....

Chapter: 31

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Previously on Boycotts and Barflies.....

"Maybe we should knock or call before we go in there..." Alice said apprehensively, sounding afraid of what may be behind the door. Jasper nodded in agreement.

"Oh, how bad could it be?" Bella laughed "It's 11:00 in the morning...." She pushed open the door and called, "Hi honey, we're ho-.....Oh my god! Emmett, what the hell are you wearing?? Where are your clothes?"

Eclipse

BPOV

Edward, Alice, Jasper and I all crowded in the doorway, too stunned to move. Inside the kitchen, with his back to us, stood Emmett, completely naked, except for the apron he had draped across his front. Like a hospital gown, it hung open in the back, giving us quite a view of his nice, round tush. He was happily making pancakes on the stovetop, a large pile of them stacked on the plate beside him.

"Hey guys! Want some pancakes?" he asked as he held out the plate.

"Emmett," I growled through clenched teeth, "What does the front of that apron say?"

Emmett stepped back from the cook top, looked down, and laughed. "It says 'Bella's Baking in the Kitchen'. How cute..." He smiled as he looked up at me; however, my glare wiped the smile from his face in record time. "What's wrong, Bella?"

"What's wrong? You're standing in our kitchen, naked, wearing my apron!! There is so much wrong with this... I don't even know where to begin..." Edward's hands came to rest on my shoulders as he tried to massage the stress from my body.

From the other side of the apartment, there was a rapid clicking of high heels on the hardwood floor that made all our heads whip to the right in unison.

"Hey Em, baby, I found the whipped cream, it was in my room... we must have left it next to the bed from last ni-.... Um, oops..... Hey, guys!" Rose giggled until she saw the four of us with our mouths hanging open in shock. She quickly hid the whipped cream behind her back, while holding her tiny, black silk robe shut with the other hand. On her feet, were a pair of shiny, red, Manolo Blahnik shoes.

"Rosalie Hale.... Why is Emmett naked in the kitchen...and wearing my apron? It's eleven o'clock in the morning, and we did call you from the road to let you know we were on our way..." I turned to Emmett "And would it have killed you to put on a pair of boxers?"

Behind me, Alice started laughing. "Nice butt, Emmett. A little hairy for my taste, but a

good waxing would do wonders.....”

Edward burst into laughter as Jasper clasped his hand protectively over Alice’s eyes, shielding her from the glare off Emmett’s ass.

A normal person would have been embarrassed. Emmett, however, grinned wide and shook his naked rear in our direction, sending us all into hysterics. Edward’s head was resting on my shoulder as his body quaked with laughter.

Rosalie stormed into the kitchen. “Emmett! You’re just standing there naked? Quit mooning them and go get some clothes on...” She pointed her finger toward her bedroom. Emmett sadly dropped his spatula, and sulked off.

With a smirk on my face, I looked Rosalie up and down. Her robe barely reached her upper thigh and at the bottom of her long, sexy legs rested a fabulous pair of shoes. “Nice shoes, Rose.”

Alice’s ripped Jasper’s hand from her eyes and stared at them. “Where did you get those?” she cried as she dropped to her knees to inspect them more closely.

Rose laughed and pointed her toe out toward Alice. “A Christmas present....from Emmett.”

Emmett emerged from Rose’s room, wearing only a pair of faded blue jeans, with a t-shirt in his hand. He strode over to Rose and wrapped his arms around her. “Anything for you, baby...” He kissed her cheek then put his shirt on right in front of us, like we weren’t even there.

“I’m going to put my bags in my room,” I mumbled while I started dragging the heavy suitcase past the kitchen. Edward quickly rushed to my side and took it from me. As we walked into my room, I heard Emmett offering pancakes to Jasper.

I reached out, turning on the lamp next to my bed, and let out a bloodcurdling scream. Edward dropped the suitcase on the floor with a loud thud and hurried to my side. “Bella, what’s the matter?”

I pointed my arm out toward my bed. Before I left for Forks, the bed had been neatly made, with all the throw pillows lined up across the headboard. But now, pillows were cast off onto the floor, the comforter was pulled down and tangled with the sheets. It had obviously been slept in.... or worse.

She wouldn’t dare.....

“Rosalie, you and your boyfriend better get your asses in here now!” I howled at the top of my lungs while I stomped my foot furiously. Not only did Rose and Emmett rush into the room, but Alice and Jasper came flying in behind them, curious about all the commotion. With my hands on my hips, I glared at them. “What did you two do in my bed? Wait, don’t answer that, and just tell me..... Do I need to buy a new mattress?”

Alice and Jasper’s mouths were slightly open, gaping at Rosalie and Emmett, shocked that they might have been so bold as to defile my bed in that way. Edward was biting his lip to keep from laughing. My eyes darted back and forth from Emmett to Rose and back again.

“Bella, relax. We did not have sex in your room....I swear.” She held her hand up and crossed her heart. “He was snoring one night and I slept in here for a few hours. That’s

it, I promise. Don't worry, the mattress can stay." She was grinning as she reached for Emmett's hand.

"Yep Bella, that's the truth. My penis has been nowhere near your bed." Rosalie smacked him. "Um, and it never will be.... That's Edward's territory...ouch!" Rose punched him in the shoulder for running his mouth. Edward brought his hands to his face and shook his head, Jasper let out a loud snort.

My cheeks turned bright red and again I found myself screaming, "Get out! All of you!" I threw my arm toward the door, motioning them to all leave. Alice and Jasper ran out, laughing. Rose and Emmett shrugged; they apparently thought I was overreacting. When I saw Edward turn to leave, I grabbed his arm. "You, stay."

He leaned against the dresser with a laugh. I walked around my bed and began stripping all the sheets off, including the pillowcases. I wadded it up into a big ball and threw it at Edward

"We're going to burn those," I said in a serious voice. "Along with the apron. Now come here and help me flip this mattress over..." I had a corner of it lifted a few inches off the box spring.

Edward rolled his eyes at me, but was beside me in a second, hiking the mattress up and over onto the floor. Together, we scooped it up and laid the freshly flipped mattress back into place on my bed.

I walked in the closet; got a clean set of sheets and in a matter of minutes, all traces of the possibly debauchery that may have occurred in my room had vanished. I lay down across the newly made bed and sighed.

Edward climbed up next to me chuckling at end of my little tirade. "Feel better?" He brushed my hair back off my face, kissing me gently.

"Not really, but at least I think I'll be able to sleep tonight....unless the vision of Emmett's ass eclipses all my dreams..." I shuddered at the memory of him in the kitchen, when it hit me. I jerked up on the bed and started clapping my hands together. "Edward..... Eclipse.....that's it!"

His brows furrowed together as I jumped of the bed and began jumping around the room. "You want Emmett's ass to eclipse your dreams?" He was completely confused. "Should I be jealous?"

I rushed over to him and pulled him off the bed with me. "No, God no. Listen, you said if I ever thought of a good name for your bar to tell you, so how about....Eclipse." He stood there silently; I could tell he was running it through his head a few times.

All of a sudden, my feet left the ground and he was spinning me around, his laughter filling the room. Without releasing his grasp, he carried me out the door and into the family room. "Emmett, Jasper! Come here a quick!" he yelled as he kissed my face repeatedly. "Do you have any idea how much I love you?"

"Yeah, I think I have a clue..." I laughed as my feet hit the ground.

Jasper emerged from Alice's room with his cell phone to his ear, holding a finger to his mouth, signaling us to be quiet. Emmett stayed stretched out on the couch, reading the newspaper, his head comfortably resting in Rosalie's lap.

Edward and I went over to the recliner; he sat down, pulling me onto his lap while we waited for Jasper to finish his call. "We have to go meet with the developer this afternoon, and see if we can work a deal to lease the location we want for the bar. It is down on North High near all those restaurants, perfect location, but that means it will cost a fortune. We're hoping that we can get him to negotiate his price and get lucky. I'm guessing that's what his call is about." Edward's brow furrowed in concern as he ran his fingers lazily across my back, watching Jasper pace back and forth across the kitchen.

Jasper said a quick goodbye and snapped the phone shut, walking to Alice's side. "Sorry, guys, that was the realtor."

"What does she want?" Emmett asked, lifting his head so he could see Jasper better.

"Well apparently, the building was just sold, yesterday." The look on Jasper's face was grim. Emmett cursed under his breath and I felt Edward tense up beneath me. "The good news is the new owner happens to be in town signing the papers and said he'd meet with us. But we need to be there in an hour with the paperwork from the bank approving us for the loan."

Edward glanced at his watch. "Ok, well we have to hurry. Does he know the bank hasn't approved us for enough to cover the cost of the space?" He shifted nervously in the chair with me. His fingers raked through his hair in frustration.

"I'm not sure," Jasper said quietly. The guys all looked very tense as they looked at one another.

Breaking the silence, Emmett boomed, "Well then, we just have to charm the hell out of him. First things first, let's get home and get changed." Emmett stood up, kissed Rose on the cheek and said, "Ladies... we love you, but we need to run."

I gave Edward a big hug and a kiss. "Good luck."

"Wait! Jasper, Emmett... real quick, Bella had a great idea of what to name the bar! Tell them ..." Edward blocked their exit, forcing Emmett and Jasper to turn their attention to me.

"Um, well, it's just a suggestion you know, but how about.... Eclipse." I nervously looked around the room at Jasper and Emmett's faces, trying to read them, but couldn't.

After what felt like an hour of silence, I looked at Edward who was grinning. He winked at me and nodded his head in Emmett's direction. I glanced over and saw a big smile on his face and when I looked back to Jasper, he was absolutely beaming.

"Eclipse it is!" Emmett boomed as he and Jasper ran over and wrapped their arms around me in a group hug. Alice and Rosalie clapped their approval as I laughed, gasping for air.

"Let me go, you guys have a meeting to get to..... Go charm this guy so you can open yourselves a bar." I made my way over to Edward and teased, "It might not hurt to show a little skin." I nimbly unbuttoned two buttons on his shirt revealing more of his chest. "Yep, I'd give you a really good deal on some property if you showed up like this."

As I stood back, appraising his heavenly form, he began snickering. "Would you do anything I asked, Bella, if I looked like this? Anything?" he whispered in my ear as his hand wrapped around my waist and came to rest very low on my hip.

"Wow, yeah....totally," I mumbled incoherently as I ran my finger down the newly exposed skin on his chest.

"I'll have to remember that," he whispered seductively in my ear.

"Sorry to break up the groping session you two, but Edward, we have 45 minutes to haul ass home, get pretty, and then get downtown. Even with you're driving, we are cutting it close. Kiss her and let's motor," Jasper said as he wrapped his arms around Alice and kissed her head.

"I have to go." Edward sighed. "I'll call you and let you know how it goes. I love you."

"I love you too. Go dazzle him. Take my car; yours is buried under five inches of snow. That way you have an excuse to come back over here when you're done." He gave me one last kiss before all three of them raced out the front door.

As the door clicked shut I said, "They are easily....."

"The three sexiest men on the planet?" Rosalie sighed as she fell back onto the couch.

"Without a doubt." Alice said, pulling me to the couch too. "Of course now that we are alone.....It's time for some girl talk!!" Alice began bouncing up and down on the couch. Her eyes went to Rosalie's foot again. "So Emmett got you the shoes? Before or after you slept with him?"

Rosalie's cheeks turned pink "Before...."

"And what did you give him for Christmas?" Alice asked suspiciously.

I rolled my eyes at Alice and said. "Do you really need to ask?" I turned to Rose, who was biting her lip, trying not to smile. "I'm guessing you, no clothes and a big red bow was involved..."

"Well, for your information, Miss Smarty-pants, you're wrong." Rosalie tried to act offended, but her dancing eyes gave her away. "I also wore the shoes..." Girly screams and squeals rang through the room.

Rose asked what Edward and I had exchanged for Christmas. I told her the story of the running shoes and what Edward said about his endurance. More giggles and squeals ensued.

I ran into my room and brought out the dress he bought me for our date, holding it up for her inspection. She complimented it repeatedly, impressed with Edward's taste and was already planning what shoes and accessories I should wear with it; Alice was thrilled because it meant another shopping trip.

"Alice got the most beautiful journals from Jasper for Christmas. He must have written something super sweet inside too because she burst into tears after reading it."

Rosalie's eyebrows perked up in curiosity as she looked at Alice. "Care to share with the class what he wrote? I bet it was a sappy poem, he looks like the poem type."

"It wasn't a poem," Alice said quietly. "He just made an entry in the journal..... Oh here, let me get it and read it to you. It's too beautiful for me to mess up." She scurried into

her room and came out clutching the leather bound journal in her arms. She opened it to the first page and cleared her throat.

December 24, 2007

Today, I am giving Alice, the love of my life, this journal. I've known from the moment that I laid eyes on her that she was the one I was meant to be with. My heart sang and my knees went weak at the sight of her. I still get butterflies in my stomach when she is near. I love her smile, her exuberance, her mind, her heart, her kindness, her loyalty, her friendship and her spirit. Without her, a piece of me is missing. Together, we are a perfect fit.

I give her this journal in the hopes that from this day forward, all her entries will be filled with the stories of our lives together. I hope that our names appear together a thousand times over on these pages, filled with memories to pass onto our children. The story of our love affair will be spelled out as an example to them of what true love looks like, feels like and acts like.

Finally, I hope she smiles when she opens her gift because nothing can compare to the beauty of her smile. My Alice, my love, my life. I will love you forever.

Jasper

When she closed the journal, she looked up and smiled when she saw that Rose and I also had tears streaming down our faces. We sprung off the couch and hugged her with all of our might.

"We are very lucky," I mumbled as we broke apart and wiped the tears from our eyes.

Trying to lighten things up, Alice asked the question she'd been dying to ask for hours now, "So Bella, would you like to explain why the guy at the front desk called you Mrs. Masen this morning when you checked out?" Alice snickered. "Is there something you'd like to announce to us?" Rosalie shot up; Alice's little comment catching her attention.

"Do tell Mrs. Masen, do tell.....I'd like to hear about everything that happened at the hotel last night!" Rosalie grinned evilly at me as she leaned back into the couch, making herself comfortable, ready to watch me blush.

"Oh wait, instead, why don't you start at the part where Edward was naked! She didn't hear about that..." Alice squealed. Rosalie's eyes bugged out of her head and I blushed eight shades of red.

"It's not as bad as it sounds Rose really....." I tried to downplay the whole naked thing, unsuccessfully. "He was in the Jacuzzi and with the bubbling water, I couldn't see.....much..." They both let out a scream as I buried my face in my hands.

"She didn't see much until he jumped out of the tub, and didn't you say something like he had you pinned against the door?" Alice asked innocently, while I blushed again, Rosalie's mouth hung open in surprise.

"Wait, wait, wait! He was naked, and kissing you and you resisted that?" Rose asked in wonder.

"Well, no.... I kind of....moaned his name, and was going to do whatever he wanted, but then Jasper showed up and screwed the whole thing up by busting into the room," I said

as I glanced at Alice.

"Wow, so he interrupted that moment. You can't tell me nothing else happened between you two all night...." Alice said, leaning in to not miss my embarrassing answer.

"Well, there might have been a little something before and after dinner..." I mumbled softly.

"What!" they screeched in unison. "Get to the Mrs. Masen thing!" Rose begged.

"Well.....Ok, so the manager called to apologize after then whole Mark incident." We quickly told Rose about the sleazy guy who bought us drinks and came to the room. "I answered because Edward was talking to Jasper, and the guy called me Mrs. Masen. So rather than explain I was Edward's girlfriend, I went along with it... and then Edward got on the phone and James said he had spoke with his 'wife'....So then Edward started referring to me as his wife, it was the biggest turn on, I can't even begin to tell you...." I shook my head back and forth to try and calm myself down. God, he was sexy though... I remembered the butterflies each time he called me his wife.

When I continued on and told them about the mousse incident, they both were stunned. Rose kept saying, "I can't believe you didn't crack. All for a pair of shoes..." She shook her head from side to side, impressed by my resolve.

"Don't forget eternal bragging rights..." I said smugly. "And then....he said something before I fell asleep...he said...well, he promised he would marry me someday." If I thought their prior screams had been loud, they were nothing compared to the sounds that came from them at that bit of news.

Rosalie's eyes were huge while Alice was on her feet, her hands clasped over her mouth as she said, "Oh my gosh, Oh my gosh" over and over.

"And if all that wasn't enough, I decided to have a little.... fun with him in the shower this morning." I grinned from ear to ear as I told them of how I'd teased Edward with my wet and naked limbs.

"Bella, I can't believe you were brave enough to do that. I'm thoroughly impressed. I love how he panicked and threw the conditioner at you. Poor guy...of course, it was pretty risky of you. What if he would've climbed into that shower with you? Then what you have done?" Rosalie gave my shoulder a playful shove.

I thought about it for a second, and blushed as I confessed, "Honestly, I would've said 'screw the shoes' and had the best sex of my life without a single regret. I think part of me was kind of hoping he would...of course, Alice if you hadn't banged on the door, and told us it was time to go.....we were about to....you know...."

Alice gasped. "Why didn't you tell me? Jasper and I would have gone shopping for an hour... well, maybe a few hours, you guys have been waiting a long time. However long you needed....we could have occupied ourselves." Alice felt terrible about interrupting our little interlude.

"It's all for the best Alice, besides, I'm in it to win. We only have 105 hours to go...piece of cake." I tried to sound confident, but I knew this was going to be a dog fight till the end with Alice.

Changing the subject, Alice turned to Rosalie. "So Rose, do we need to make an official

house rule about 'no naked men in the kitchen' or do you think can you keep Emmett under control?" Alice snickered.

"Oh, I can definitely keep him under control," Rose said with a wicked grin. "By the way, we need more whipped cream."

In the next few hours, we'd managed to unpack our suitcases, cleaned the apartment, showered, answered emails and paid the bills.

Alice sat on the couch, glancing out the window anytime she heard a car door close. Rose paced past the phone every few minutes, picking it up to make sure there was still a dial tone. I busied myself by reorganizing our DVD collection in the family room, but kept checking my cell phone to make sure I had a signal more times than I wanted to admit.

At 3:00pm, Rosalie burst. "What could possibly be taking so long....the waiting is driving me crazy!

The door flew open and a booming voice said "Did someone say crazy??" Emmett's large body filled the doorway.

"Move, you big oaf!" Jasper growled as he pushed Emmett aside, trying to make his way to Alice. Alice was off the couch and flying into his arms before he made it a step further. He picked her up and carried her to the kitchen counter.

"Sooooo tell us, tell us!" Alice squealed.

I peered around Jasper, trying to find Edward. "Where's Edward? You didn't have to sell him into slavery, did you? He isn't sleeping with some rich lady to make a quick million dollars, is he? Wait, did he wreck my car....I'll kill him...." I was craning my neck past Emmett when a flash of bronze hair came around the doorway, and two arms crushed me.

"We did it!" he whispered in my ear as he began kissing me enthusiastically.

"Edward, that's wonderful!" I screamed and hugged him.

In the distance, I heard Alice and Rose start screaming too as the guys shared the good news with them. When the joyful screams subsided, we all gathered in the family room to hear the whole story.

"So did you guys have to charm him? Was he a jerk or a nice guy?" I asked, unable to contain my excitement any longer. They started chuckling at my question and had the most peculiar looks on their faces.

"What?" Rosalie snapped. "Oh my gosh, was it a woman! Did she hit on you?" Rose wheeled around and glared at a now hysterical Emmett. "Did you flirt with her?" She was fuming as she grabbed him by the ear and led him into the corner where he defensively threw up his hands in front of his chest.

"No, no, no, Rose. It was a guy, not a girl. Calm down, baby.... Of course, it's a real turn on when you get all jealous like that..." He picked up a lock of her hair and began twirling it around his fingers.

"So, explain..... He met your price? Out of the kindness of his heart, this guy agreed to give you a discount?" Alice said skeptically.

“Actually yes, Alice. That’s exactly what happened.” Jasper smiled at Edward. “We pitched our idea to him and explained the financial situation we were in, and he agreed to it. By the way Bella, he loved the name!”

“And he wanted nothing in return?” I said to Edward, who still had a goofy grin on his face.

Edward shook his head side to side “He didn’t want anything. So we insisted he be our partner.

“You did what?” Rose shrieked “You don’t even know this guy! He could be a total sleaze. Please tell me you didn’t sign anything. You need a lawyer to go over everything with a fine-toothed comb and make sure you guys are protected.”

“We signed everything already; he was only in town for a few hours, so we went with our gut on this one.” Emmett put his arm around her shoulder, but Rose just shrugged it off.

“Um, I know it’s not really our business...but how can you be so trusting of someone you just met? Have you lost your minds?” I asked Edward.

He started laughing. “Don’t you trust my judgment?” When he saw my wariness, he reached in his pocket with a sigh and pulled out his phone. “I told him you wouldn’t just let this go.... Do you want to talk to him? He said to call him if you didn’t believe us.”

“Me? Why would he talk to me?” I watched Edward quickly punch the numbers into his phone. He started laughing. “It’s me....Yeah....I think you better because they think we’ve lost our minds....No, they think you’re a crook....and that we signed away our firstborn sons in the deal...Yeah, here she is...” He smiled as he held the phone out to me. “Here you go, ask him anything you want...”

“Hello?” I said apprehensively. Edward could hardly contain his laughter, so I shot him a dirty look. What the hell has gotten into him?My mental tirade was interrupted by a male voice on the phone.

“Isabella Marie Swan, do you really think I would steal that bar from Edward? You hurt me. Haven’t I been a good Uncle to you all these years? And wasn’t it Esme who got you those gold hoop earrings Renee said you couldn’t have when you turned 12? I think you can trust me....of all people,” The voice on the phone teased.

“Uncle Carlisle? You bought the building? Are you crazy?” I nearly dropped the phone in shock

Now he was laughing at me. “Actually Bella, I’m rather sane. Why are you questioning everyone’s mental faculties today?”

“But, then why did you do it?” I was flabbergasted.

“Because Bella, Edward and Jasper are wonderful young men. And five minutes after meeting Emmett, he impressed me not only with his wit, but with his intelligence. The three of them are very sharp, with great ideas. Edward and Jasper told me all about their plans for the bar at your mother’s house, the direction they wanted to take it in and they mentioned their financial predicament. That night, I spoke with Esme, and she agreed that we should do something to help them. To tell you the truth, I think Esme is a bit smitten with the two of them.” He chuckled. “So we decided to invest in a piece of property, that just happened to be the one they had their eye on. Of course, I wasn’t expecting them to insist I be their partner.....but that just goes to show you what kind of

men they are.”

“Uncle Carlisle, are you sure about this?” I still couldn’t believe this was happening.

“The only thing I’m more certain about is how much he loves you.”

I glanced up at Edward who was standing a few feet away from me, with an endearing look on his face. “Thank you Uncle Carlisle, you’re the best. I love you,” I said with tears in my eyes.

“Love you too, Bella. Have fun celebrating tonight. Oh...and have a Happy New Year.”

“I’m quite certain that I will.” I closed the phone and ran into Edward’s awaiting arms. “I’m so happy for you!”

Edward looked over at Jasper and Emmett “Let’s go celebrate! Would you ladies like to join us

“That depends.....where would we be going?” Rose giggled as Emmett tipped her back so he could kiss her neck as her hair fell behind her.

“Are you ladies any good at pool?”

Xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

Hope you enjoy it. For the poll, most of you would set your brothers up with Alice, personally I’d set my brother up with Rose...and a lot of you wanted your brothers to pay for some evil deed and set them up with Jane and Lauren....too funny!

New Poll upThanks to Tara’s Folly for the idea

Thanks to the Queen- Hb1 for her beta skills and for pulling herself away from her book to check the chapter for me...she has been a very dedicated reader lately. HA!

If you’re looking for AU human stories check out the C2 The Human in Them.

Chapter: 32

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks to Hb1 who beta'd this for me even though she was sick. No rest for the queen....

Emmett's Balls

BPOV

The guys left to give us a chance to get dressed. We rushed through the apartment, clothes flying between bedrooms. Alice and Rose, of course, spent twenty minutes on their outfits. I, however, threw on my favorite jeans, a pair of knee high black boots and my black 'Bite Me' shirt and waited on the couch for the fashion plates to finish dressing.

I breathed a sigh of relief when I saw they were dressed in a similar fashion, of course Rosalie's 'Nice Rack' shirt from the local barbeque restaurant that she tied in a knot at the waist made me laugh out loud.

Edward's horn sounded from out in front of the apartment, my heart skipped a beat and I called to Alice and Rose and grabbed my keys.

We piled into my car and followed the guys to the pool hall.

Bumpers wasn't too crowded on a Thursday night, only one of the seven pool tables was being used by two big, biker guys. Over at the bar, there was a group of four guys watching a hockey game on one of the plasma TV's. Off to the side, the banks of pool tables were surrounded by tall bar tables that sat four. We pushed two of them together and sat down while we waited for Emmett to get back with the beers.

Emmett brought back two pitchers and poured each of us a glass. Jasper strolled across the room to look at the pool cues, Alice at his side.

"So, you never answered the question, you ladies any good at pool?" Emmett asked. There was an air of challenge in his voice.

Rose gave him a coy smile, "We aren't too bad are we, Bella?"

"Nope, we aren't too bad at all. We take the sticks and hit the balls into the holes on the table. It's all algebra... Want us to show you our skills?" I laughed.

What I failed to mention was that we were actually quite good, real 'pool sharks'. Before we met these guys one of our favorite past times was going to a pool hall, playing dumb and letting guys challenge us to a game of pool only to school them. We got more free rounds of beer than I cared to admit.

"Please show us what you can do.... I'd love to see you bent over the table....with the cue stick in your hand that is," Edward whispered as my heart thundered in my chest.

"You are so bad, Edward," I said as I poked his rock hard chest with my finger. "Behave yourself or we'll never make it until New Years."

"Would that really be so bad?" he asked as he placed a lingering kiss on my neck, his warm breath skipping across my skin.

"No, it wouldn't, which is why you need to behave because I don't think I can do it much longer." I kissed his cheek and ran to the wall where the pool cues were hanging, trying to put some physical distance between us while I pulled myself together.

"Bella! Come here," Alice called across the room "Girls versus boys, losers buy the beer. Will you grab me one of those poles."

I bit my lip to try to keep from laughing because Alice was playing her part perfectly. By the time I got back to the tables, Jasper was very sweetly explaining the rules of the game to her like she had never played before.

If only he knew how deadly the little pixie was with a pool cue....

"Ok, so I hit the balls in the holes, but not the boring black or white one. Jasper, I don't want to be stripes, they make me look fat. I want the cute solid ones to be mine!" Alice clapped her hands excitedly and when the boys turned their backs to laugh, she shot Rose and me a wink.

"Alice dear, when you break, whatever ball you hit in the pocket first decides if you are stripes or solids," Jasper patiently explained, while Emmett puffed out his chest a little more, seeing an easy victory. Edward gave me a sly look out of the corner of his eyes.

Hook, line and sinker. I laughed in my head. This is going to be fun.

Emmett set up the balls and Edward broke. I, of course, shamelessly stared at Edward's ass as he leaned over the table. Alice had gotten her wish, the guys were stripes and we were solids.

"Emmett, you have high balls," Rose called over her shoulder.

Emmett immediately looked between his legs, grabbing his crotch. "Really? How can you tell from there?"

Rosalie rolled her eyes. "You have stripes Emmett, your balls are striped."

"Should I see the doctor about that?" he said with a grin.

Rose shook her head mumbling, "Smartass" and turned her attention back to the game.

My turn was after Edward. Calmly, I went to the table and banked the cue ball off the bumper, sinking the two ball with ease. I made a big deal to get excited and clap, claiming 'beginners luck'. On purpose, I missed my next shot, badly. The cue ball didn't even make it all the way across the table.

"It's all geometry, ladies.... Watch." Emmett strutted around the table, trying to decide which shot to take. He got fancy, trying to impress Rosalie, and missed his shot by a hair.

Rose stepped up to the table and we began to run our game. She missed her first shot by

a hair to make it look good. Alice, of course, made a spectacle of herself, trying to use the wrong end of the cue to hit the ball and missed her shot, nearly sinking the eight ball. The guys cleared a few more balls and were getting cocky.

“You guys suck!” Emmett teased. “I thought you’d at least make this interesting....”

Edward got his cue and examined the table. We had 6 balls still on the table to their 2 plus the eight ball. He and Jasper took a second to discuss strategy, gesturing with their arms what was the best way to make the shot he was considering.

Being rather experienced, I knew what shot he was going to take and casually stood nearby, within distracting distance. Rose smiled at me from across the table. I needed to make Edward miss his shot or this was going to be tricky to pull off.

After the conference with Jasper was over, Edward walked to the table and stood right in front of me. He leaned forward to line up his shot. Just as his cue stick came back, I stepped right behind him and when his elbow began to move forward, I put my hands on his ass, one per cheek, and gave him a squeeze.

Edward let out a yelp and jumped; his cue stick flew and nearly went through the felt on the table. He spun around and glared at me. “What was that?”

I bit my finger innocently. “Sorry Edward, you just looked too cute standing there, all bent over and sexy.” I glanced over his shoulder and saw Alice and Rose hysterically laughing. Even Jasper was gasping for breath. “I couldn’t help myself.”

Edward pulled me close; his velvet voice tickled my ear. “So, is that how you want to play this game, Bella? Because I’ve been behaving myself like you asked, but I can always stop, and make everything much harder for you as well.” His hands slid from my waist and landed snugly into the back pockets of my jeans. He pressed me tightly against his groin and I stopped breathing, suddenly understanding what his statement meant. He leaned closer, his nose running along my jaw as my heart sputtered “Your turn to shoot, Love...”

I cleared my throat and stepped away from him, flustered beyond all reason. I grabbed the first cue I saw and fumbled my way over to the table. I glanced quickly at the table, but then felt Edward come stand behind me and couldn’t focus on the game at all.

Trembling and wondering what he was going to do next, I leaned down to line up a shot when I felt the weight of Edward’s body covering mine. One of his arms snaked around the front of my waist, his thumb grazing the bottom of my breast and the other slowly came over my shoulder running down my arm, finally resting on my wrist.

“You do realize that you’re aiming at the wrong ball, right? Your team is solids.” I turned my face to look at him and felt his warm lips on my jaw. I nearly jumped out of my skin when his tongue ran down my neck. “And by the way, you really do look amazing bent over the table like this.” He chuckled when my body dropped because my knees gave out a bit. “I know what you ladies are doing, game on.”

He released his grasp on me, but my body continued to tingle after he walked away. I rested my forehead down on the pool table for a second, trying to remember how to breathe. When I looked up, Edward was across the table, drinking his beer and looking quite smug.

Damn you, Edward Masen....Suck it up Bella, time to hustle the hustlers.

Without looking away from him, I stood up, blew him a kiss, which got hoots and hollers from the gang, and returned my attention to the table, quickly finding my shot and taking it. The four ball sank into the pocket like a stone.

Rose and Alice cheered as I stalked around the table with new found determination and started to clear the table one ball at a time. With each ball that sank, Emmett's cursing increased. Jasper was dumbfounded especially when I was able to 'jump' the cue ball over one of theirs to sink the one ball. Even Edward looked impressed, but that damn smirk remained on his face.

Getting a bit too arrogant, I tried to make a really difficult shot, hitting the cue ball off the rail but missed and scratched. When I stood up from the table, the guys had two balls on the table, and so did we.

Emmett downed the rest of his beer and went to the table with his cue in hand and a smile on his face. He confidently cracked his knuckles before bending over the table, examining the situation. Ready to take his shot, he leaned over the table, pulled back on the cue stick and fired. The white cue ball rolled across the table, looking like it had missed its mark, until it bounced off the rail and with all the backspin Emmett put on it, rotated, clipping the edge of the 10 ball. In slow motion, it rolled slowly into the corner pocket.

"WooHoo! Eat that!" Emmett screamed as he hugged Jasper. Edward slapped his hand on Emmett's back in congratulations and winked at me. Being the mature woman I am, I stuck my tongue out at Edward, which only made him laugh out loud.

When Emmett settled himself, he looked down at the table and surveyed his options. He really didn't have a shot at the 13 ball which was their only ball left on the table. It was nestled up right next to the eight ball and he didn't want to risk sending that into the pocket. Instead, he took evasive measures and lightly tapped the cue ball into the corner leaving Rosalie absolutely no shot.

"Great, now I have no shot, you asshole. How am I supposed to show off my pool skills? Damn it, Emmett...." Rosalie fumed.

Emmett walked up to the other side of the table and started running his mouth, which was a bad idea when Rose has a cue stick in her hand. "Oh come on, Rosie..... Who are you trying to kid? Your aim is really off and you don't seem to know that you are doing with that stick..."

As he waved his arm across the table, Rose snapped. She picked up the stick, drew it back and shot the cue ball. It bounced once on the table, and then went airborne, hitting Emmett squarely in the crotch.

Emmett made a small yelp before crumbling into a heap on the floor.

"My aim is excellent, Emmett and I didn't get the nickname Ball Crusher for nothing. You better not forget that, my dear." She towered over his limp body on the floor. "Come on you big baby, let's get you some ice for your nuts."

"Note to self, don't cross Rose," Edward mumbled in awe as Jasper stood up to find the cue ball which had rolled under Alice's chair.

"I believe that counts as a scratch," Jasper proclaimed as he put the cue ball onto the

table, giving himself the easiest shot to sink their one remaining ball.

"Shit," I muttered as Jasper lined up the shot. I gave Alice a what-the-hell-are-you-going-to-do look.

She smiled and immediately hopped off her stool, stood across the table from Jasper, and began unbuttoning her blouse. Jasper's head started to shake from side to side as he tried to not look at her, but when she bent down so her semi exposed chest and red lace bra was hanging directly in his line of sight, little beads of sweat forming on his brow.

"Hit it right to mamma, Jazzy...." Alice said as she shook her chest his direction.

"You ladies, really are shameless, aren't you?" Edward asked, shaking his head in disgust at Jasper as the cue ball careened off course and missed their ball by a mile.

"Don't get your panties in a bunch Edward, it's just a game." I laughed.

Emmett hobbled back to the table, followed by Rosalie, who was carrying an ice pack rolling her eyes as Emmett rambled on. "All I'm saying, Rose, is if we ever do have kids some day and they aren't too smart just remember it's because you gave my little swimmers brain damage with that trick of yours." He gingerly cupped himself as he sat down on the stool.

Giving him no sympathy whatsoever, Rose slammed the icepack onto his crotch "Yeah, I gave them the brain damage, not the guy dumb enough to piss off a woman with a pool cue in her hand. It will be all my fault."

"You know the least you could do is..." Emmett started laughing to himself. "Kiss them and make them better..." Rosalie's hand flew up to the back of his head. "Ouch, I think I need more ice..."

"My shot!" Alice squealed as Jasper sulked away from the table, having let down his team.

"Nice focus, Jasper," Edward snarled. "They're just boobs."

"Yeah well, you did really well under pressure yourself there, Eddie," Jasper spat back as he watched Alice skip around the table and sink the first ball. Groans came from all the guys, cheers for Rose and me.

Alice pretended to yawn in boredom before she lowered her tiny body across the table and took her next shot, sinking our remaining solid ball into the far pocket. The only balls remaining on the table were the cue ball, the eight ball and a single striped ball. Alice grinned as she lined up her final shot.

Emmett started screaming to try and distract her, Edward coughed and Jasper tried tickling her, but nothing could break Alice's concentration. She closed her eyes, pulled back the cue and sank the eight ball with authority into the center pocket. Screams of victory erupted from Rose and me.

"Rematch!" Emmett whined as he jumped up, dropping his ice pack onto the floor. "Come on...." he pleaded with Rosalie, who simply shook her head no.

"You guys are buying the beer. Suddenly, I feel very thirsty, how about you, ladies?" Rosalie filled our glasses and we toasted our victory.

"Let's do a little couples tournament," Alice suggested.

"What does the winning team get?" Jasper asked with raised eyebrows.

"Another free kiss," Edward blurted out too quickly, and then blushed.

Um, that works for me! Wait, how about free sex... yeah, that'd be better. Damn it, think big, Edward...

"Awwwww, Edward wants to kiss our fair Bella again," Alice teased. She glanced over in my direction and saw that I was the same shade of red as Edward. "Ok fine. Winning team gets one no holds barred kiss. Only catch is that you have to do it right here, in front of us, so we can judge your kissing skills." Alice glanced over at Emmett and Rose. Just to rub in the fact they could do whatever they wanted win or lose, Emmett grabbed Rose in his arms and kissed her deeply.

"Agreed!" Edward and I said in unison.

First up, were Alice and Jasper versus Emmett and Rosalie. While they started their game, trading insults back and forth, I pulled Edward aside to work on our strategy.

"Ok, so listen.... First of all, drop the beer!" I snatched the glass from his hand. "I want to win this, so you need to be focused on the prize, namely me, and we don't need any beer messing with your aim."

"Oh, don't worry, I'm very focused on you, Bella..." He stepped closer and ran his hand down my cheek, brushing softly against my neck.

"No being all sexy, Edward.... Now is not the time! I need to be focused on the game. Distractions like butterflies and shaky hands won't win me that kiss, Edward.... I want that kiss." I grabbed his shirt and pulled him closer to me. "I needthat kiss," I whispered breathlessly at him.

With a big grin on his face he asked, "What can I do to help?"

I quickly told him Alice's strengths and weaknesses in pool and what shots she struggled with so he could make sure to take advantage of that when he played. He told me Jasper was probably the weakest player of the guys, which made me feel a bit better, but Alice was the strongest player of the three of us so they evened each other out. Edward just needed to outsmart Alice with his shooting and we'd be fine.

Alice and Jasper made short work of Emmett and Rose. They went and sat down while Edward and I took our shot and Emmett and Rose. When Emmett got cocky and miscalculated his angles, he sank the eight ball. I jumped into Edward's arms in celebration. Rose stuck her tongue out at us, having been eliminated, and then proceeded to stick her tongue down Emmett's throat just because she could.

When Emmett collected himself, he strode over to the table and racked the balls for us. A coin toss determined we got to break. "I want a clean game, ladies and gentlemen. No distracting, flashing or goosing the opposing team. You will remain silent while they shoot and the prize for the winner is a big fat smooch, with tongue, and I guess you could cop a feel if you were so inclined....in front of all of us. Do you understand the rules?" Emmett asked in his most official voice. We all nodded our heads in agreement. "Who from team

'Naughty Librarian' is going to break?" Emmett teased.

I decided to let Edward break that way his turn would be before Alice. Taking a deep breath, he leaned over the table and gave the cue ball a solid hit, sending the balls scattering in every direction. Luckily, he sank the four ball, making us solids which annoyed Alice right off the bat.

The game progressed like a chess match. Jasper flubbed more shots than he made while Edward and Alice were locked in a battle of the minds. He kept trying to predict her next shot before he even took his. Alice was getting so frustrated; it began to affect her play.

Sensing her weakness, I stepped up my game, and had a really good run, sinking two balls, which left Edward with one solid and the eight ball when his turn came around. Jasper conferred with Alice before he sank one of theirs, and then missed, leaving them two striped balls on the table.

"No pressure Edward, but it comes down to you.... Alice just might be able to run the table if you don't clear the balls so....please, I'm begging you, sink the balls, Edward." I stood back and held my breath as he considered his options. Alice crossed her fingers and pressed them nervously to her lips.

"Eight ball in the corner packet," Edward called as he took his position at the table. He looked away from the ball for a split second to give me a wink, and then took his shot. I nearly passed out as the black ball rolled to the pocket, bounced off one corner of the pocket, the other corner and then finally fell back into the pocket with a small thud.

"You did it!" I squealed as I flung myself at Edward, a huge smile on my face.

He lifted me up into the air and immediately sat me down on the pool table. He waited for me to part my knees, then stepped between them, his fingers leisurely trailing up my thighs. His hand slowly went to my face, caressing my cheek as his thumb ran across my lower lip.

"I'd like to claim my prize now, if you don't mind," he whispered as I looked into his smoldering green eyes. As his face moved closer to mine, I felt my heart explode to life in anticipation of the feeling of his lips on mine. My body burned as his chest made contact with mine, his hands grasping my face, and tilting my head slightly to the side.

"Edward..." I muttered as his lips met mine.

My mind vaguely registered the screams and clapping coming from our friends. Edward's breath on my skin caused my whole body to tingle. I forgot about everything but him once I felt his lips part and his tongue stroked passionately into my mouth. The heat from having his mouth on mine, erupted throughout my trembling body as I pulled myself closer into him, my legs locking around his back, our hips making forceful contact. I couldn't help but moan in pleasure as his tongue continued to caress mine, the taste of him, filling me. My hands locked around the nape of his neck, as I refused to let him go.

Edwards hands fell from my face and he began running them along my sides, his thumbs occasionally running across the edge of my breasts, sending waves of pleasure throughout my body. I felt one of his hands on my lower back as he leaned into me, tipping me backwards slightly from my sitting position on the table.

My hands fell back to support me as Edward pressed the full weight of his body into mine.

I don't know how long it had been since I took a breath and I didn't care. I was going to pass out before I would break this kiss. I would have kept kissing him all night if I hadn't heard a strange male clearing his throat right next to us.

"Um, excuse me there folks, sorry to interrupt, my name is Jason and I'm one of the bartenders here. Listen, I hate to break it to you, but she can't be up on the pool table like that, her weight will throw off the balance and we'll have to take the whole thing apart to get the table level again."

For the love of God, buddy, BACK OFF! I screamed in my head. Can't you see we're busy here

I decided to ignore the voice and keep right on kissing him until this Jason guy forcefully removed my lips from Edward's, but Edward had other ideas. I felt the corners of his mouth turn up in a smile, and a second later, I felt myself being lifted up off the table, my legs still clamped around his waist in a death grip.

Edward reluctantly broke our kiss to address this lunatic, "Sorry Jason, my bad." Edward laughed.

Actually, I thought you were good.... Really, really good.....Bad Bella, Bad.

I wasn't as amused as Edward by the situation and still breathless. "Jason, have you ever made a bet? A stupid bet you regret about two weeks into the flippin' thing and yet for some strange reason, you stay in the bet to win a stupid pair of shoes and eternal bragging rights, whatever the hell that even means? Of course, to win the shoes and bragging rights you can't go on a date or kiss the person you are madly in love with... Ever do something that stupid? Because I did, and that kiss you just interrupted for the sake of a pool table was the last kiss I'm going to get until New Year's, damn it! And that was a really good kiss you interrupted....right judges?" I looked over my shoulders at our friends, who were all hysterical.

Alice held up a napkin with a large number ten boldly written on it. Rose held up ten fingers and waved them at me. Emmett and Jasper were on their feet, applauding. I looked at Jason with a raised eyebrow, waiting for his score.

"Um, it looked pretty good. I'd give it a nine...." Jason's evaluation irritated Edward.

"Why'd we only get a nine?" He asked slightly offended.

"Because you didn't lay her down on the pool table man, now that would have been hotter. Her sprawled out up there, with her hair spread out around her head. That's what I would have done if it was my girlfriend...." he said nonchalantly. "Anyway, stay off the table or I gotta throw you guys out. Next round is on me for cutting short your kiss, OK?" Jason held his hand out to Edward, who shook it with his free hand, holding me around the waist with the other.

As Jason left, I leaned my head on Edward's chest. "If you kiss that well, I can only imagine how good you are at other things...." I thought out loud, fanning myself.

Having heard me, he lifted my chin up to his face. "I'll be happy to show you, just say when....and it doesn't matter where..." he whispered, his green eyes looking as mischievous as the grin on his face. "Just not on the pool table or Jason will throw us out."

"Bella, are you going to hang onto Edward like that all night?" Emmett boomed from the

table as the free pitcher of beer arrived just as Jason had promised. "And if you are, I'd suggest losing the clothes; it would be much more fun that way..."

An image of Edward and I naked on the pool table flashed briefly in my head, making me gasp out loud.

"Are you alright?" Edward asked as he watched my face turn red with embarrassment.

"Yeah, I'm just fine. Just counting down the hours....Hey, do you realize we only have 97 hours to go?" They were going to be the longest 97 hours of my life, but the end was in sight... I just had to behave a little longer. I grabbed the nearest glass of beer and chugged it, suddenly feeling very hot.

We played a few more games, but then it was time for us to head home. Edward followed us to make sure we made it home safely and then left to drop Jasper and Emmett off at their place. He had even invited me for a 'sleepover' if I wanted, but I told him I thought that would be a very bad idea after that not so little kiss, my heart was still fluttering wildly in my chest and my self control was very low.

I washed my face and was sitting on my bed in my pajamas when I heard a small knock on my door.

Rose came in, dressed for bed. "Hey, Bella."

"Missing your bed warmer, Rose?" I teased until I saw how sad she really looked. "Oh, what's wrong?" I held my arms out to her.

She crawled into bed with me, laying her head on the pillow next to me. "I just got used to having him around these last few days, you know...I miss him. I even miss his obnoxious snoring. God, I know I sound lame...and I hate feeling this way, but I need him. It actually hurts that he isn't here right now, do you know what I mean?" A single tear fell from the corner of her eye.

I sighed, understanding completely. Last night, I had been curled up in Edward's warm arms, and tonight, I would be in this big bed, all alone. "I know exactly what you mean Rose, you love him and never want to let him go. Why don't you just call Emmett and ask him to come over, I'm sure he'd be here in less than five minutes."

"No, I don't want to sound like some helpless, lovesick girl....I'm a grown woman, damn it and I can spend one night alone." She gave a small sigh then asked, "Actually, would you mind if I stayed in here with you?"

"Not at all." I laughed. "As long as you don't mind me mumbling about Edward in my sleep." As I reached to turn off the light, my hand brushed along the picture frame Liz had given me.

"Is that the picture, Bella?" Rose leaned over and held out her arm, wanting to get a better look at it. "Oh Bella, look how sweet you two are! And his hair has always been messy, hasn't it?" She giggled, and then got very quiet. "You two were meant to be together, Bella. I'm so happy for you." Rose leaned over me, placing the picture back on my nightstand. She gave me a kiss on the cheek and laughed. "And by the way, that kiss on the pool table tonight, was so hot!!! I can only imagine the night you two are going to have on New Year's. And I expect details...lots and lots of details...."

oxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

Hope you all liked it.... I am going to start the last chapter (s) not sure yet if it will be one or two.... It just depends on how much I write. I am going to take my time, I need to tie up a lot of things so I will post it when I can, but I want it to be right so it might take some time.

Thanks for all the reviews! You guys are amazing.

New Poll up, for the last one, I would say I was Rosalie and Bella with a sprinkle of Emmett in there.... Now that's quite the combo huh?

Chapter: 33

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

The beginning of the end...

Thanks for Hb1 for her beta skills and to ShC for her help fine tuning some things. And to all of you who took a look and said it works! I appreciate all your support.

Black Lace

BPOV

"Alice, I know there are dresses in this store with more fabric on them," I called from behind the dressing room door. "Go find me one of those please.... These are bordering on obscene!"

We were at the mall once again, bright and early in the morning, searching for the perfect dresses to wear to the New Year's Eve party at the Downunder. The theme this year was black and white, so we were scouring the mall for our ideal ensembles for the evening. So far, all the dresses Alice picked barely covered my body and I didn't think it was wise to wear something that short around Edward during the final hours of the boycott.

We had hardly seen them since our night at Bumpers. The guys were diligently working at the Downunder every night until close so they could have New Year's Eve off. Not to mention how busy they were making all the preliminary arrangements to help get Eclipse up and running.

Alice and Rose had spent the better part of the weekend returning phone calls, while I had to get ready for the new semester which was starting a few days after New Year's. Before we knew it, New Year's Eve had arrived and there were only hours left in this agonizing bet.

I heard Alice mumble from outside my dressing room, "Oh Bella, quit your complaining. Here.... Try this one on. I think it will be perfect." A black and white dress flew over the door, landing on my head. "Rose, this is the dress for you, trust me." Rose swore from a nearby dressing room, as Alice threw her dress at her as well. "Show me when you have them on," Alice ordered from her position near the triple mirror.

I quickly stepped out of the spandex nightmare Alice had given me previously and took a moment to look at the dress she just threw at me. It was a bit bolder than what I might normally choose for myself, but if I was ever going to be bold, this was the night to do it. Whatever dress I found I was going to wear to the party, and then change into the dress Edward gave me for our date. I didn't want to risk getting anything on it; I wanted everything about tonight to be perfect....

"Let's shake a leg, ladies.... We still need to get shoes for these dresses, accessories, purses and we have manicure appointments in two hours. Move it, move it!" Alice barked out her mental shopping list.

I swiftly stepped into the dress, secured the zipper, and when I looked up into the mirror, there stood a beautiful, sexy woman with a giant grin on her face. I barely recognized myself in the reflection. "Alice, this is the one!" I squealed as I thrust open the door to make a dramatic exit.

"Let me see.... Oh Bella, that is perfect on you. Come here!" She grabbed my hand and pulled me to the mirror. "Your ass looks fantastic with the way this dress is cut...." She admired me from behind. "And look at your curves, girl!" She ran her hands over my hips and gave them a little shake. "Edward will love you in this..."

The dress was spectacular. It was a short, mid thigh, sleeveless, sequined dress. The sequins made a cool geometric black and white print of squares and triangles on the entire dress. It was cute and sexy, exactly what I wanted. It was amazing how a simple piece of fabric could make me feel so confident and almost powerful.

"Are you ready for tonight, Bella? Or do you still think he will disappear at the stroke of midnight?" Alice joked as she leaned against one of the mirrors, waiting for my reaction.

"Honestly, before Christmas, I would have put money on him vanishing. But now, after spending this last week together, I can't explain it, I just know that nothing is going to be able to keep me from him and he would never leave me.... Does that make sense or do I sound like a crazed stalker?" Alice and I started laughing together at my lame explanation.

"Well, I want you to know that I am so happy for you, Bella, and very proud of you for putting yourself out there and trusting Edward with your heart. I think you finally see how amazing you are. Edward has helped you see that, he's a great guy." She gave me a big hug when we heard grumbling from behind us.

Rose came out of her dressing room in the most form fitting black dress I had seen her in all day. The dress had thin, adjustable spaghetti straps, and hugged every one of her glorious curves. She was fidgeting with a bow that hung from the sweetheart neckline, cursing its existence.

"Alice, we can snip off this stupid bow, right?" She bent over and let Alice examine the stitching that held it in place.

"Yeah, three snips and it'll be gone. God, you two look amazing! So, do you like the dresses?" Rose and I both nodded our heads vigorously.

Alice had, immediately upon arrival, found a beautiful white sleeveless dress with the most spectacular bead work along the bottom hem of the dress and around the neckline. It was the first and only dress she tried on and she looked like an angel in it.

"Good, now take them off and meet me at the cashier. It's on to the shoe department!" As Alice went to grab her purse and her phone started singing, I'll keep you my dirty little secret, dirty little secret.... She quickly opened it. "Hey there..." she purred into the phone.

"Who was that?" I asked Rose as we walked back to the dressing room.

"Jasper...." She giggled.

"When did he make his ringtone the All American Rejects? She never told me he changed it. "

Rose glanced over her shoulder at Alice, smirking. "Well, I just found out the other day. Apparently, they did it quite a while ago...." She gave me a gentle push toward the door. "Come on, let's get changed. We have a lot to get done before tonight....."

I gave her a small salute before slipping obediently into my dressing room.

Rosalie's voice carried over the wall dividing our dressing rooms. "And we're making one more stop after the shoe department to get you something sexy, black and lacy to wear under that little number, Bella, so be prepared...and no complaining. If I have to wrestle you into it myself, you will wear it."

APOV

When we returned from our trip to the mall, I managed to sneak out of the house without Rose or Bella figuring out what I was up to. My love of shopping had paid off in more ways than one. They both bought my story about going to give Jasper a shirt to wear tonight.

As I pulled in front of his apartment, I suddenly got very nervous. I knew the reasons for my actions, and I only hoped that he would understand why I did, what I did. For all I knew, I was about to get my head bitten off, and in all honesty, he would have every right to be angry. Of course if he got mad, I could only assume she would probably kill me with her bare hands.

For the last few weeks, I'd been struggling with what the right decision was. Just when I was ready to come clean, Christmas happened and the whole Rosalie and Emmett situation went public.

She wasn't ready for it then. But now, after seeing her over the last few days, and the conversation we had yesterday, I knew that finally, after all this time, she saw what we'd been seeing all along. Even with as hard as these last few weeks had been for all of us, I know, personally, I wouldn't have traded them for anything in the world.

I took a deep breath, fine tuning my little speech in my head as I unclashed my seatbelt and got out of the car. As I trudged through the snow up to his door, I made one last prayer in my head and then knocked on the door. After a few seconds, I could hear the thud of footsteps just before the door swung open.

"Alice?" he said, peering down on me from the raised doorway. He was dressed, but his hair was still wet like he had recently gotten out of the shower.

"Hi, Edward. Do you mind if I come in? I need to talk to you about something..."

He stepped out of the doorway and ushered me into his apartment. I navigated my way to the kitchen, slipped out of my jacket and took a seat on one of the stools at the counter. Nervously I traced the veins of color in the granite with my fingers.

"Can I get you something to drink, Alice?" Edward asked, still completely in the dark about the reason for my mysterious visit. I shook my head no. "So, what do you need to talk to me about? Is it Bella?" I could hear the concern and panic growing in his voice.

Oh gosh, he thinks I'm here to tell him Bella doesn't want to see him. Look at him panicking...Fix it, Alice...

I waved my hands in the air. "Edward, no. This has nothing to do with Bella, please relax. Well, I guess it does have something to do with her, but nothing bad. Trust me....gosh, this is much harder than I thought I would be" My well planned speech was simply turning into a pile of crap as it tumbled awkwardly out of my mouth.

"Ok, why don't you just spit it out then, Alice, if it's nothing bad...?" Edward pleaded, still refusing to believe I wasn't sent there to break his heart. "..because you are making me really nervous."

"Fine, what I need to tell you is...." And with that, I spilled my guts. I told him everything, definitely more than he probably wanted to know, but once I started, I found that I couldn't stop.

He sat there silently and listened until I finished baring my soul to him.

"Well?" I asked hesitantly, waiting for the yelling to begin.

Instead of yelling, he walked over to me and scooped me up into his arms, smiling like a fool. "Alice, I love you!" He laughed as he kissed me on the top of my head.

"Well, I won't tell Bella you're in love with me; she tends to get a little possessive where you're concerned." I laughed back at him. When I looked up, I saw the mischievous look in his eyes. "Edward, what do you plan to do with this little tidbit of information I just gave you?"

"I plan to have a little fun this evening. Care to help?" he asked, his face beaming with excitement.

"Of course. How can I help you?" I listened in on his plans, infinitely relieved at his reaction.

I felt much better after talking to Edward and so did he. As a matter of fact, when I left his apartment he was downright giddy. With a giant weight having been lifted off my shoulders, I happily sped down the road, back to our apartment to help Bella and Rose get ready for our New Year's Eve celebration with the men we love.

Tonight is going to be fun..... I laughed to myself as I turned up the radio and started singing along.

BPOV

With freshly painted nails and a brand new outfit for the party, I was trying to keep myself occupied the rest of the afternoon by watching a movie; however, Edward had started text messaging me every hour on the hour with his countdown.

Alice went to drop off Jasper's shirt for the party, so Rose and I were alone when Edward's next message arrived.

Seven hours until I get to have to all to myself..... I can hardly wait.

You have no idea.

I love you,

E

"So, how are you holding up, Bella?" Rose asked as she watched me blush at his latest messa

"I'm really excited, but I guess a little nervous too....I've wanted this date for so long. I just hope I don't do anything to embarrass myself.....like hyperventilate or pass out when he touches me."

Rose laughed out loud. "Just remember to breathe Bella, and I think we have some smelling salts in the first aid kit in the kitchen if you want to slip those into your overnight bag...

"Wait, overnight bag?!" I panicked.

"Um, well... I was just assuming you would be out all night with him.... and sleep there. I'm sorry, my mistake." Rose looked very apologetic. "You do whatever you're comfortable with, Bella...I shouldn't have opened my big mouth."

"What? No, it's not that.... I mean, I hope he wants me to spend the night. I want to spend the night.... I just Don't have anything to wear. And what should I pack??" I jumped up in a panic and started racing off to my room to rummage through my drawers. Flannel pants and boxers tumbled onto the floor at my feet as I searched for something suitable for the occasion.

Rosalie calmly walked up behind me with a small, pink bag in her hand. "Did you really think we'd let you go off on this date unprepared and inappropriately dressed?" She extended her hand with the bag dangling from her index finger.

Relieved, I took the bag and emptied the contents onto my bed. There was a brand new, white lace bra and panty set for the following day I was sure, a short green nightgown and a toothbrush. I spun around and hugged Rosalie with all my might. "Thank you, Rose. I love you!"

"And what am I chopped liver?" a whiney voice said from the doorway behind us. Alice had just returned and wanted a little love for her part in the purchases. She stuck out a pouty lip until I burst out laughing.

"I love you too, Alice. Now.... I need a bag to pack this stuff and a change of clothes in. Any suggestions?" I gave her a knowing look, quite certain that she had the perfect bag sitting over in her room with all the tags still attached.

"As a matter of fact....." Alice grinned and skipped off to her room only to return a second later with a small, black suitcase a bit bigger than a briefcase, but very subtle so I didn't look like I was moving in or anything. She ran to my closet, picked out my clothes for the following day, folded them and pressed them into the bottom of the suitcase. She carefully laid the lacey garments on top, tucking my toiletries and toothbrush off to the side. With the straps clasped tightly, holding everything in place, she zipped the case closed and set it on my bed.

"There, you are all ready for your hot date with Edward. I threw in an extra shirt in case you make it an extended stay. Do you even know where he's taking you?" Alice asked as she bounced up and down with excitement.

"I have no idea. He won't tell me anything. All I know is I'm supposed to wear my dress....and that's it. I feel like a bunch of butterflies have taken up permanent residence in my stomach and he keeps sending me these messages, each more sexy than the last. I just hope I can control myself at the club." I had to sit down as my pulse sky rocketed just

thinking about Edward and how tempting he was going to look tonight, especially knowing that at midnight, the bet ended.

"How are you holding up, Alice?" I was a trembling, sputtering mess, while she sat there perfectly composed, looking like she didn't have a care in the world.

"Me? Oh... I'm getting rather excited. I can't wait for tonight. It's going to be amazing....." She looked over to Rose. "Full of fun surprises, I think."

"You've been so quiet about things.... What do you and Jasper have planned? For ... you know, after midnight?" I asked suggestively.

Alice blushed. "Well, I assume pretty much the same thing as you and Edward.... Rose, is Emmett spending the night over here with you?" She nodded her head, grinning. "Then I guess we will go over to Jasper's for some... um, privacy..." She giggled, refusing to make eye contact with me.

In the middle of our laughter I heard my phone beep with Edward's latest message.

Six more hours until Midnight.

Are you ready to come with me?

On our date

I Love you,

E

"ARGH! He is killing me, totally and completely killing me. Hide my keys please so I don't go over to his place right now..." I went to the wicker basket in the kitchen and tossed the set of keys that were inside over to Rosalie. She promptly stuffed them down the front of her blouse. Leaning against the granite countertop, I took a deep breath. "Ok, I'm better. Come on, I need to eat a little something and feed this flock of butterflies..."

About an hour later, I was in the shower, letting the hot water work its magic and soothe my overly tense muscles. It did absolutely nothing to kill the butterflies or to slow my thundering heart, but when I stepped out, I did find myself significantly relaxed. During my shower, the smell of the strawberry shampoo made me smile, mainly because I got lost in a few naughty thoughts about Edward that involved feeding him strawberries, in bed, naked....of course the image faded instantly when in my daze, I let some of the shampoo trickle into my eye causing a horrible, burning pain. I turned into the water jet and rinsed my eyes clean of all traces of soap before I was permanently blinded. I climbed out of the shower and started to dry off.

I'd barely wrapped the towel around my body when the phone rang. I dashed out of the bathroom and grabbed the phone off my bed. "Edward, if you are calling to leave me some sexy or suggestive message about all the things that we are going to be doing in..." I glanced at my watch. "Four hours and twenty nine minutes, I will scream....I can only resist 'Sexy Eddie' for so long. Keep it up much longer and I'm going to come over to your place and..."

"Bella?"

No, No, No. This isn't happening.....

"Um, hi, Mom.... wow. What I just said... yeah, it was....um, a joke... ha...ha....Shit..... What do you want?" I buried my face into my hands and wished I could suck that little rant back onto my mouth.

"Well... no need to curse at me, dear. We were just calling to say Happy New Year. I figured you and Edward had plans, so we wanted to catch you before you went out for the evening....." I heard giggling on the other end of the phone and Renee's muffled laughter.

"Tell me I'm not on speaker phone, mother... for the love of all that is holy! You know I hate being on speakerphone!" I growled into the phone.

"Happy New Year, Bella!" I heard the other laughing female voices say in the background.

"Mother.... Who else is there? No. Please don't tell me you're spending New Years Eve with....

"Liz and Esme, dear....."

".Now!" I covered the phone and a string of profanities flew from my lips.

"Oh dear, now stop.... We were all young and in love once. Weren't we, ladies?" I heard a chorus of yes's in the background. "We remember what it was like. Just make sure that you two are... you know, careful and well.... use protection, dear. You do have condoms, right? Or wait, Liz, do you know if Edward has some condoms at his place?"

"STOP!" I screamed into the phone, causing the women on the other end to laugh hysterically. "I'm going to hang up now, Mother and we will never speak of this conversation again. Liz, Esme... I love you both...Happy New Year. "

I heard Renee sing, "You kids have fun...." into the phone as I hung up. Again, I buried my face into my pillow and screamed as loud as I could.

Get them out of your head, Bella. Tonight is about you and Edward. Not Renee, not Esme or Liz.... Think about Edward. Hunky, sexy Edward....My mind, of course, went right into the gutter which didn't help my already flustered state.

"Bella? Why are you screaming in here? Did Edward send you another message?" Alice asked as she cautiously opened my bedroom door. "Oh my gosh, why aren't you ready? They'll be here soon!" Alice screamed as she ran to the bed and grabbed my arm, flinging me into the bathroom, frantically working on my hair.

"Sorry, I got sidetracked humiliating myself on the phone with my mother, Liz and Esme." Alice froze with the brush hanging in mid air, a confused look on her face. I held up my hand to stop her question. "Don't even ask. If I tell you, I might burst into tears... all I can say is the word condom came up in the conversation." Alice's mouth fell open in stunned silence for a second and then she went back to work, drying my hair.

Twenty minutes later, my hair cascaded beautifully over my shoulders, with big, brown curls and a stunning shine to it. Rose had helped get my makeup perfect before she rushed back to her room to put her dress on and touch up her own makeup. Alice had cranked up the music in the apartment and was apparently dancing around the family room to pass the time. While I was applying one last coat of mascara, I heard my phone beep with Edward's latest message. With a trembling hand, I picked it up and took a deep

breath before reading it.

Four more hours until you are all MINE

Are you bringing the condoms or do you just want to use the ones I have here?

Yes, they called me too.

I Love you!

E

Laughing, I rolled my eyes and started searching my room for the shoes we had bought earlier at the store. My eyes lingered on the dress Edward bought me which was hanging on my closet door, waiting for me. I could hardly wait to come back and slip into that dress for our date. Just a few more hours, I told myself as I crouched on my hands and knees to look under my bed for the shoebox. Out of nowhere, I heard a husky voice behind me.

"Nice view...." he said, followed by a whistle.

"Edward!" I squeaked. Oh God, was my butt hanging out?"You're early." Was all I was able to sputter out of my mouth as I scrambled to my feet, nearly tripping myself.

His stunning form filled the doorway as I turned around. Edward pushed himself off the door jamb he had been leaning against and walked over to me, his eyes taking in every inch of my body. The more he looked, the wider his smile grew. By the time I was in his arms, his eyes were on fire.

"You look spectacular, Bella. You are downright irresistible in his dress; I don't know how I am going to control myself around you tonight." He ran a single finger slowly along my jaw line as my mouth hung open.

"Edward....four hours...please..." I was barely able to whisper as he brushed my hair over my shoulder and began kissing my newly exposed section of my neck. "240 minutes.....just a little bit longer..."

Goosebumps covered my body, and when I felt him start gently sucking on my neck, my legs buckled, but he quickly wrapped his arms around my waist, holding me in place. I felt his warm laughter against my skin. "Bella, you're trembling..."

"Hey you two...Oops. Never mind, I was never here..." The sound of Rosalie's voice snapped me out of my Edward induced haze.

I gave a small shove and looked around his chest to see her. "What do you need, Rose?" I leaned forward so Edward couldn't see my face and mouthed the word 'Help' behind his back.

Being the good friend she is, all she did was laugh. "I thought you might be looking for these." In her hand was the box with my new shoes in it.

I escaped from Edward and scooted to the door to take them from her. "Thanks, Rose," I said loudly, grabbing her wrist so she couldn't leave. Then I whispered, "Help, he's being super sexy....don't leave me alone with him, Rose... help me resist him," I pleaded with her, but when she rolled her eyes at me I knew I was on my own. "Traitor," I hissed as she wrenched her wrist free and left the room, giggling.

"Let me see the shoes you picked out." Edward had sat down on the edge of my bed and was holding out his hand.

Instead of walking over to him, I tossed the box, trying to keep myself a safe distance away. I bit my lip when he let out a whistle as he opened the box. "Nice..." He patted the bed next to him. "Sit down and put them on."

I cautiously approached the bed, keeping a suspicious eye on him at all times. He handed me the right shoe which I slid onto my foot. I bent over to fasten the strap around my ankle and after a few minutes of wrestling with it, I was successful. As I reached for the other shoe, Edward tightened his grip on it.

"Here, let me help you with this one, love..." He slid off the edge of the bed and knelt down on the floor in front of me. He gently lifted my foot off the ground and placed it into the shoe. I thought he was going to return my foot to the floor to fasten the strap around my ankle, but instead, he surprised me by hoisting my foot higher, onto his upper chest.

I let out a small yelp as my foot went so high up into the air. I felt his fingertips linger on my calf, before sliding down to my ankle and begin working on the strap. He took his time, glancing from the buckle up to my face and back again.

I started losing my balance, so I tilted back and braced myself back on my arms, waiting for him to finish. I thought about telling him to hurry up, but I was afraid that all that would come out of my mouth was a moan, so I pressed my lips together tightly and tried to focus my attention on bedroom door over his shoulder rather than how delicious he looked kneeling between my legs.

"There you go. Perfect." I tried to move my foot, but he was holding it in place, the tip of my shoe just under his chin. His green eyes ran up the length of my bare leg before finally meeting my brown ones. He paused, and then let out a huge sigh. "Black lace?"

I slid my foot off his shoulder "What are you talking about?"

"Your panties, they're black lace, right?" He ran his fingers slowly through his hair as he slid his body further between my legs. His hands settled on my knees before they started to make their way up my thighs. His fingertips had just dipped under the hem of my dress, when we were summoned.

"Edward, Bella, let's get a move on!" Emmett hollered from the other room.

I sprang to my feet, desperate to put some small distance between us before things got out of hand, but couldn't move because Edward was still on his knees, at my feet, blocking the exit.

"And where do you think you are running off to?" Edward asked as he stood up. "I'm not quite finished with you yet..." He clasped his hands behind my back and started kissing my neck, carefully working his way toward my lips. His pace was agonizingly slow, each touch of his lips setting a new section of my skin on fire.

I needed to put a stop to all this temptation Edward was literally throwing at me. He'd started with the text messages earlier and now this.... I knew I wasn't going to make it much longer if I didn't put the brakes on.

I decided to try and bluff by pretending that his advances weren't affecting me. "Listen here, 'Sexy Eddie', I only have 234 minutes left in this stupid bet and I am not about to lose now. So you can try and seduce me as many ways as you want, but I'm winning those damn shoes tonight." I made every effort to look self assured and slightly annoyed, but he saw right through me and smirked.

"So I can try to seduce you as many ways as I want?" he asked exuding sensuality with every word. "I accept your challenge." He took my hand and slowly lifted it to his lips, kissing the top of my hand, his green eyes twinkling.

Well that backfired. How stupid am I? I just dared Edward to entice me into his bed before midnight, what the hell was I thinking?

Xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

Part 1 of 3 I have two already written, but am starting part 3 which is the hardest part for me to write.

New poll upon my profile..... My personal vote in it is for Bella...HA! The rest of the end, is coming soon. Thanks ;)

Chapter: 34

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

All hail hb1 my beta, my Queen.

On a random note, I heard a story that made me laugh: I dedicate this chapter to a very special reader who shared his knowledge of Boycotts at a bar and was given a few phone numbers for his efforts. He knows who he is and so do I! FYI the score is now VJGM...5 & Jas...0. Kenz, I hope that made you laugh, is he red?

Everyone else, read on!

Screw the Shoes

BPOV

We pulled up to the Downunder where we found a long line of people waiting outside. Edward parked the car around back so we could go in through the employee's entrance, avoiding the long wait and the crowd. Jasper and Emmett were pulling into the lot as I climbed out of the car. Edward held out his hand to me and I quickly took it, my teeth already chattering in the cold December air.

"I knew I should have worn more clothes," I grumbled as Edward led me toward the building, my free hand buried deep inside my coat pocket.

"I think you still have a few too many clothes on for my liking..." Edward said as he pulled me closer while we walked through the doorway.

"Yeah, I had a feeling you were going to say that." I laughed as I threw my coat at him. "I'm watching you, mister..." We piled all of our coats on the couch in the break room before heading out to the bar hand in hand.

The club had truly been transformed for the evening. Black and white fabric was draped everywhere, along the bar, across the ceiling, and down the walls. Even the napkins were all black and white. The every table had been removed from the upstairs section, and instead, black and white leather couches and chairs created cozy sitting areas, away from the crowds on the dance floor. The music was so loud you could feel it pulsing throughout the place.

"Wow." Rosalie stopped in her tracks to admire all the decorations. "This must have taken you guys forever." She and I were both staring up at the ceiling, trying to figure out exactly how they got the yards of fabric draped so elegantly in a perfect checkerboard pattern.

"You don't even want to know..." Emmett shuddered at the memory. "It took us until 6:15 this morning. Jasper nearly broke his neck somewhere around 4am, didn't you?" Emmett smirk

"Yeah, I did. And as I recall, it might have had something to do with the fact that you

were snoring instead of holding the ladder steady, there Emmett.” Jasper glared at him as he took a generous sip of his gin and tonic which the bartender had just set on the bar next to him.

“Ladies!!!” We heard someone scream from behind us. Out of nowhere, Vicki came marching over, dragging a huge, burly, tattooed man behind her, who I instantly knew had to be Steve.

“Vicki!” We squealed and ran over, wrapping her up in our arms. We were all so excited to see her that without thinking, we stood on our tip toes and kissed Steve on the cheek, which took him completely by surprise. Vicki laughed at seeing her big, strong man, flustered by a flock of girls.

“Oh, by the way, I’m Alice. The blonde that just kissed you, her name is Rosalie, and the brunette is Bella. We probably should have introduced ourselves before we slobbered on you...sorry!” Her eyes fixated on his arms. “So how many tattoos do you have, Steve?” Alice asked as she grabbed one of his arms and began counting. “I bet this one hurt like a mother.....” She cringed pointing to the snake tattoo that ran along his elbow.

“I see what you mean about them, Vic. I like them. And they are perfect for those guys; they’ll definitely keep them on their toes.” Steve winked at Vicki before heading over to the bar to join Edward and the guys. He shook hands with them and whatever he said, had all of them cracking up.

Vicki looked great tonight. She was wearing a black tube top and white jeans that were neatly tucked into the black leather boots we’d given her for Christmas.

Steve was in a white button-down shirt with the sleeves cut off, and a pair of black jeans with a giant silver Jack Daniels belt buckle. Both of his arms were covered with colorful tattoos, but the most prominent one was Vicki’s name in big black letters on his right forearm.

“So your boycott ends tonight, huh, ladies? Any exciting plans?” Vicki asked, a big smirk on her face. “I hope you’re able to find some decent guys in town now...” She looked from us, over to the bar where the boys and Steve were deep in conversation, an occasional laugh coming from one of them.

“Hey, don’t look at me, I already found my man..... and that girl better stop looking at his ass or I will be knocking her down on hers.” Rosalie glared at a tall, raven-haired girl who was chewing on her straw while batting her fake eyelashes in Emmett’s direction.

Feeling the need to mark her territory, Rose marched straight over to the unaware Emmett, spun him around, and planted one hell of a kiss on him before looking over her shoulder to make sure the other girl caught the show.

She rolled her eyes at Rose and headed onto the dance floor. Emmett, not caring what the reason for the kiss was, gave Rose a playful swat on the rear in thanks and wrapped his arm around her shoulder.

“I knew they would be perfect together,” Vicki laughed as she watched Emmett and Rose together. She nudged me in my side and tilted her head in Alice’s direction. “And those two fell in love the first night she was here...” We watched as Alice stood next to us, completely lost in Jasper, who was leaning back against the bar, smiling at her. “The idiot forgot how to speak when he saw her.” After another minute, he held out his hand and Alice rushed to his side.

"They do make cute couples, don't they?" I laughed.

"And look at you, Bella. This dress is very sexy, my dear. You wouldn't be trying to get the attention of anyone in particular this evening. Say a hunky guy with unbelievable green eyes?" Vicki grinned as my cheeks instantly turned red. "Yeah, from the looks of it, I'd say you definitely got his attention."

I turned around and peeked over my shoulder to the bar to find Edward standing a few feet away with his arms folded across his chest, his hair slightly in his eye and a gorgeous smile on his face. When our eyes met, he winked and I immediately spun back to face Vicki, who was simply shaking her head from side to side.

"Yeah, I hope you slept in this morning, because from the look on his face, he's got big plans for the two of you tonight," Vicki teased, making my heart beat faster in anticipation of my night with Edward. "And I doubt you'll be doing much sleeping..."

I felt a hand settle on the small of my back as Vicki quipped, "Speak of the devil. Hello there, Edward. I was just telling Bella how cute she looks tonight."

"I think she looks more than cute, Vicki. I think she looks absolutely delicious. And did you know that she gave me permission to try and seduce her as many ways as I wanted this evening? Speaking of which, I think I need to get busy." Before I knew it, he was gathering my hair into a ponytail that he held in place with one of his hands as he started gently kissing the sensitive skin along the back of my neck. His free hand slid down my back and settled on my rear.

Vicki's eyes got huge as we stared at each other in disbelief. Instead of helping me, all she did was stand there and mouth, "Oh my God..." Then fanned herself as she walked back to Steve and the rest of our friends at the bar.

"Edward?" I said breathlessly, feeling his hand make its way up my side.

"Um hum?" he mumbled as he continued kissing me.

"I think I'm going to have a heart attack if you don't stop that..." His lips were skimming up the side of my neck and moved near my ear. "I said you could try to seduce me, not stop my heart."

"Aren't you enjoying yourself?" he said softly into my ear as he took a small break from nuzzling himself against my cheek.

"Oh, I'm enjoying this, more than you can imagine." I grabbed his hand and placed it over my heart so he could feel the thundering in my chest. "But this is what it's doing to me.... I really need to breathe for a second there, lover boy." Having his hand half on my breast of course, made my heart race even faster.

"You are rather excited right now, aren't you?" He laughed.

"You have no idea..." I mumbled.

"Well, I think you better sit down. Come with me, love. I know just the place for us." He slowly slid his hand down from the center of my chest and started to lead me upstairs.

With our fingers laced together, we climbed the staircase that led right to the table Vicki had always reserved for us. In place of the tables and chairs was a black, leather loveseat and two oversized white chairs. The reserved sign was sitting on the small table in the middle.

"I guess it pays to have connections here tonight, doesn't it?" I glanced around the rest of the area to see wall to wall people packing the other sofas and chairs. And in the middle of all of that was a tiny section all for us, set away from the crowds. I noticed there were even long black panels of fabric hanging from the ceiling on either side of our seats to give us more privacy. "You guys really thought of everything..."

"I assure you, we have been planning this evening for a very long time now..." Edward teased, pulling me onto the loveseat with him.

During the first few moments we sat there alone, I felt my body being drawn to him as if by some sort of magnetic attraction. In no time at all, my body was pressed against his chest, and I was playing with the little black buttons down the front of his shirt. His hand was skimming up my side, his thumb barely grazing the side of my breast, making me jump.

"Have I told you just how handsome you look tonight?" His snug black button-down hugged his chest in all the right places. I could even feel the outlines of his muscles through the thin fabric of his shirt as I eagerly ran my hands over his body.

"No, you haven't, but come a little closer and you can show me just how attractive you find me." He reached his hands around my waist and pulled me on top of him. My legs instinctively spread, and I found myself straddling his lap.

I let out a loud gasp when I realized the precarious position I had gotten myself into with him. "Edward this is such a bad idea," I said, trying to pull the sides of my dress down lower on my thighs before my underwear was on display for the entire upper level of the club, not to mention Edward.

He leaned forward, pressing his chest to mine and talking into my ear, "I'm sorry, I couldn't hear you over the music, you're going to have to get really close to me tonight so I can hear you." His hot breath swept across my cheek as his hands came to rest very, very low on my back.

"I said, I think sitting like this is a very bad idea." I was nearly gasping for breath as the words came out. That's the understatement of the century....

He raised an eyebrow at me and pulled his face right next to mine. "Actually, I think having you straddle me like this is a very good idea and I wouldn't mind doing this again, a little later tonight, without so many clo-..."

Not wanting to hear him actually utter the words that were about to come across his lips, for fear of undressing him right there on the couch, I tried to move off his lap, but he wouldn't let me, his strong hands held me in place with no chance of escape.

"If you keep wiggling around like that, we might have little situation on our hands soon..." he whispered to me as his hands moved a few inches lower down my back. He slid me farther up his lap, our chests now touching. There was no missing the way his pants began to tent out against my body.

If that's the 'situation' he's referring to there is nothing little about it, I thought to myself,

blushing. I tried to settle down, but then he moved his hands to my upper back and pulled me towards his face and began working on my neck. My head tipped to the side in delight, allowing him better access to my neck. "Edward...." I sighed, gripping onto his shoulders for dear life.

I don't know how much more of this I can take...

"Hey guys, do you mind if we join you or do you want to some 'alone time'?" Emmett suddenly laughed from behind me. I felt Edward's hands slide to my rear, to block any view my hiked up dress might be flashing our friends at the moment.

"Sit down," I said loudly, happy for any distraction. Save me....from myself.

"Go away," Edward said at the same time, grinning.

"Don't listen to him; he's just mad he hasn't been able to seduce me yet." I gave Edward a playful swat on the chest as I carefully detached myself from his lap, trying not to completely expose myself.

"Yet..." he said as he ran his hand up the curve of my thigh, inching higher, making me jump. "The night is still young, Bella, don't forget that." A round of cat calls came from the gang as Edward continued to caress my upper thigh.

Thankfully over the next few minutes, the conversation moved away from me and onto Alice and Rose; more specifically, the crazy the clients they have dealt with. Some of their stories were so farfetched that if I hadn't been there when they came home, I might not have believed them.

After about twenty minutes of stories, Alice got antsy. "I love this song!" she squealed. "Come on girls, let's go dance." She grabbed our hands and we scurried down the stairs to the dance floor while the guys stayed behind.

Hundreds of people were packed onto the floor, the heat from all the bodies made the temperature at least fifteen degrees higher than the rest of the club. Alice led us through the tight crowd, looking for a less congested area to dance. We found a small haven close to the bar and began dancing to the music, laughing and having a great time. Vicki even came and joined us for a while, Steve however, just watched from his position at the bar.

I looked up to the second floor and saw Edward, Jasper and Emmett watching us from the railing above. When Rosalie tried to wave them down, they shook their heads no and laughed, preferring instead, to enjoy the view from up there. We even got a good laugh when a couple of pathetic barflies planted themselves next to the guys, flipping their hair and giggling, desperately trying to get their attention, only to be ignored. When their more subtle attempts failed, they decided to try and buzz over to talk to them, which a minute later, resulted in the guys abruptly walking away.

Vicki grinned. "Wow. I guess they don't need my fly-swatting duties any more. They did just fine on their own. Maybe my boys are finally growing up..." She wiped a pretend tear away from the corner of her eye. She glanced over to the bar where Steve waved his thumb towards the door, so she decided it was time to go rejoin her man. "You ladies have fun; Steve and I are going to split. Happy New Year." Vicki threw her arms around us to say goodbye, and then we all turned to wave furiously at Steve. He returned our silliness with a smile and salute.

As Vicki walked away, I noticed Alice was craning her neck around the crowd. "Now where did those boys run off to?" She was looking toward the section of the bar that Vicki and Steve had just abandoned when she was lifted high into the air. "Jasper!" she screamed as her little legs sailed upwards.

"You looked like you were having fun, so I decided to join you." Jasper wrapped his arms around Alice and the two of them began dancing away. It was comical at times to watch Alice put her arms around Jasper's neck and get lifted two feet into the air as they moved together on the dance floor.

With Alice occupied, Rose and I partnered up and began dancing together. A couple of cheesy 'club' guys tried to cut in and dance with us, but we managed to run them off by completely ignoring them. As the guys sulked away, Jasper pointed to the bar where Emmett and Edward were proudly applauding our efforts.

The DJ was playing a great mix of dance songs tonight and the crowd loved every second of it. People swarmed to the floor as the music and lights picked up. The room was wall to wall bodies, all moving together in unison to the rapid beat of the music. Even more and more people rushed onto the dance floor when Low by T-Pain blasted over the sound system, the red lights flashing over the crowd.

"Alice, it's your song!" I teased because we called Alice 'Shorty' all the time. She stuck her tongue out at us and then flung herself into Jasper's waiting arms.

As I started dancing, I felt two strong arms wrap around me from behind, crushing me into a warm chest. "Mind if I join you?" Edward said in my ear as he planted his hands firmly onto my hips and began to move them with his, without missing a beat.

I immediately flashed back to that first night when I unknowingly danced with him and remembered just how good he felt. "Um, nope. Not at all," I mumbled as I tried to keep my heart in check having him that close to me. I leaned my head back onto his chest and let him take the lead, moving my body with his, however he wanted. I chuckled when I saw Emmett all over Rosalie as the song played, admiring her sexy movements.

"You do know how to get 'Low', right Edward?" I teased as that part of the song came on, and he definitely did. Together, we swiveled our hips down to the ground and back up again, keeping in constant contact with one another. I was acutely aware of everything about his body, each muscle I felt moving, and every curve to his body, every ripple and just how well we fit together. He couldn't have held me any closer if he tried, making our two bodies move as one under the flashing lights of the dance floor.

"How did I do?" he asked in my ear as hands drifted upwards, hiking my dress up slightly, giving me chills. As the tempo of the song increased so did the speed of our movements together.

I spun around to face him and pulled his head down toward me so he could hear, "Oh, you certainly know how to use your hips." I gently bit his earlobe which made him grind his hips harder into mine. "But I will show you how I like to get low....I'm very good at it."

When I pulled my cheek away from his, I saw his green eyes were smoldering. "Then you'll definitely have to show me." He licked his lips and continued gracefully rocking our bodies together to the beat.

Every few minutes in the song when we heard the words 'Next thing you know, Shorty got

low, low, low, low....'Alice, Rosalie and I would slither our bodies down to the floor, keeping contact with the guys the whole time. Our hips swiveled and swayed all the way down, and then we slowly made our way back up. They stood in stunned silence and watched, as we seductively crawled back up their bodies, with the sole goal of driving them crazy.

"Wow..." Was all Edward was managed to say before pressing his lips to mine as I grinned proudly.

The way we moved together became more erotic with each passing minute. Every time we were pressed together, I could feel him moving with me, in perfect unison. If I closed my eyes, I could imagine how it would feel to move this way with him, later tonight, minus the clothes. My cheeks flushed at the naughty images and my head fell back in pleasure. I couldn't breathe when I felt the incredible sensation of his tongue running along my neck.

With each touch, each caress, I wanted him more. His hands felt like velvet as they glided over my skin, his lips were begging to be kissed. I remembered how sweet he tasted at the pool hall when we kissed and I wanted nothing more than to feel the warmth of his mouth on mine again. I wanted his hands all over me. I wanted him naked. I wanted him. Now!

Screw the shoes.

I raised my head and quickly checked over my shoulder to see Rose and Emmett with their hands all over each other while Alice and Jasper were off dancing in their own little world. No one would miss us if we left before midnight, hell, they might even thank us.

I am OUT, my head screamed.

As the song started coming to an end, and with my confidence soaring, I decided to play a little dirty and get Edward's undivided attention. I put my hands on the front of Edward's chest and when it was time to 'get low' I slid not only my body down his, but my hands. They trailed down his chest, his abdomen, and then carefully slid them all the way down the front of his thighs, doing my best to tease him as my thumbs slid over the zipper of his pants.

He froze when I crouched at his feet, looking up at him through my eyelashes for a few seconds, waiting for me to begin my graceful climb back.

Instead, I grabbed onto his belt buckle, my fingers reaching partway into his pants and pulled myself up in one swift motion. With my hand still on the buckle, I stood on my tip toes and as the music lulled for a second I said, "Don't move an inch...." I ran my free hand down his cheek, my finger slowly grazing over his lower lip.

All he could do was nod his head as his eyes smoldered with desire.

Without releasing him, I turned to Alice and got her attention. She leaned her head into mine and I simply said, "I am out."

She pulled back her face, a look of shock all over it, and then leaned in again and asked, "Are you sure, Bella?"

"Oh yeah, I'm sure. I'm done waiting... I want him. Screw the shoes, I'm out!" I kissed her cheek and caught the brilliant smile that came across it as she realized her victory. I spun

around and turned my attention back to Edward, who was still standing there, stunned. "You, come with me." I put both of my hands on his chest and pushed him backwards until he bumped into a nearby wall.

"What's wrong, Bella?" He was still trying to figure out my odd behavior, but a tiny smile had started to creep onto his face.

"I'm out."

"Out of what?" He smirked.

I didn't even bother to answer him. I put my hands on his face and quickly pulled him to me. My lips crashed into his and he responded with enthusiasm. My mouth opened, allowing his tongue entrance and sensation igniting a fire deep inside of me. With a surge of emotion, I pressed my hips into his, our bodies melted together. My hands slid from his face to his chest, gripping his shirt, as one of his hands knotted in my hair and the other grasped my waist.

He pushed himself forward from the wall and spun me around so that my back was now flush with the brick wall. I felt the weight of his body as he sank into me, and I arched into him, pulling him closer to me, trying to erase any distance between our bodies. His hand left my waist and gently cupped my breast, making me gasp in pleasure.

"Edward.....let's get out of here please. Take me somewhere, anywhere," I said breathlessly as he devoured my neck, making every hair on my arms stand on end.

Grinning, Edward pushed back from me and started rummaging in his pocket. His phone flew up to his ear and it sounded like he said, "She's ready." And then he hung up.

"Who were you calling?" I asked as I straightened out my dress and tousled hair. Now was not exactly the time for phone calls, now was the time for taking the extremely aroused girl back to your place for a long night of wild sex.

He saw the frustration in my face and pulled me into his arms, kissing me once more. "Do you trust me, Bella?" he purred in my ear.

How could I say no when he said it like that? I nodded my head and stared at his glistening lips, wanting nothing more than to feel those lips all over my body.

"You won."

"What did I win? Most sexually frustrated girl in the room contest? Most likely to beg for sex? What exactly did I win, Edward?" I scoffed, completely confused at this point.

"You won the bet, love. We both did... Go with them now, and I'll come get you in a bit. Then we can be alone, finally. God, you have no idea how badly I want to be with you..." He grabbed me and kissed me deeply, letting me get a taste the desire burning in him at that moment.

Alice and Rose appeared out of nowhere and scooped me up, directing me to the door. I went with them reluctantly, but glanced back over my shoulder in time to see Emmett and Jasper patting Edward on the back and shaking his hand. As we ran into the break room, Rose grabbed our coats and got me into the car in record time.

Flying down the road in Emmett's Jeep, I turned to Alice and said, "Would one of you like to tell me what the hell is going on?"

xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

OK so that is another part of The End....there might actually be two more parts, it went a little long HA!

New poll up, Jacob won the last one... which kind of surprised me so now I want to see why so many of you want to slap him. Think about it...

Chapter: 35

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

As always a huge thanks to heartbroken1 for her beta-ing genius, she is the Queen... And yes the title was supposed to be Confession, but I forgot I already had a chapter with that title, so I changed it, oops!

Spill!

BPOV

We pulled up to our place, without a speaking a single word to each other since I had asked for an explanation a few minutes ago. Alice and Rosalie just occasionally exchanged nervous glances during the ride home, but gave no further information about how I won the bet.

As soon as we walked through the door of the apartment, I felt Alice grab my wrist and drag me to the very couch where we had spent countless hours sharing the stories of our dates, our hopes and dreams. I landed on the couch with a thud and looked at her, my face begging for an explanation.

"Bella, before I say a word, I want you to know that I love you and whatever I did was because I love you."

Well this must be bad for her to start like that.....

"Fine Alice, you love me....I get that. Now, explain one thing to me. How did I win the bet? Edward said I won. Was he right or was he just trying to make me feel better for attacking him back there in the club?" I asked, hoping for a straight answer from one of them.

"You won," Alice said very softly. Behind her, I saw Rosalie's face, beaming.

"How?" I muttered looking from Rose to Alice and back again. "Oh my God, did you and Jasper have sex at the club? In the break room?" I gasped, my hand instinctively covering my gaping mouth. Ewww! Our poor coats...

"No!" Alice said, insulted.

I wracked my brain trying to figure where they might have been able to sneak off to tonight. My nose crinkled as I continued my guessing, "In his car?" It would be a little chilly but this is Alice we're talking about so you never know...

"Bella, it's 20 degrees outside! Do you think I'm crazy or that the prospect of hypothermia is somehow appealing to me?" Alice was visibly dismayed at my insinuation; Rosalie, however, was doubled over in laughter.

I put my fingers to my temples, thinking.... Where could they have had sex at the club.....Where?When all of a sudden, it hit me. Right away, my eyes flew to Alice's in horror.

"Oh my God, please, please don't tell me you and Jasper had sex in the bathroom of the club? Alice that is just revolting," I shrieked, trying not to gag.

"Isabella Marie Swan," Alice snapped, "I most certainly did not have sex with Jasper in the bathroom of the club. What do you take me for, a twenty dollar hooker?" Alice was visibly offended at my speculation; her eyes were slits as she glared at me. "You know I don't even sit on public toilet seats to pee... I hover because they are so disgusting."

"Then where did you and Jasper have sex?" I felt utterly lost as I threw up my hands in frustration. It wasn't on the dance floor...was it? How could I have missed it? That might be worse than the bathroom...

"Thefirsttimewehadsexwasatahotel," Alice blurted out in frustration.

I slowed down the sentence in my head a few times, trying to separate the jumble of words...the first time... "What do you mean the first time?" I growled, my jaw tightly clenched. Alice's eyes grew wide with alarm. Rose instantly stopped laughing, letting me know I had caught the most important phrase in Alice's rambling sentence. "Spill!" I commanded.

"Well," Alice started, "I went out of the bet... a while ago."

"Define a while ago..."

Her words were barely above a whisper, "Before Rosalie...."

"What? You went out of the bet before Rose?? Are you kidding me? You are, aren't you... you're just trying to make me feel better, right?" My head was throbbing as I tried to understand what she was saying. I watched Alice fidget in her seat nervously. Then Rosalie sat down, rubbing her back to try and help settle her nerves.

Oh my God it's true...

Alice took a deep breath and began explaining, "OK, here's the truth. I slept with Jasper.....the night of the bar show. Remember when I was late coming home...." She was nervously wringing her hands together in her lap.

I thought back to that night, remembering how Rose and I got ready together, and then Alice came flying in the door at the last minute, complaining about her 'blabbering clients'. "So you didn't spend the day with a client?" I asked waiting for her to look up at me; however, her eyes remained firmly planted on her hands as she shook her head no.

"So you and Jasper....."

"We met at a hotel." I watched her bite her lip in a desperate attempt to hold in the goofy grin that was threatening to spread across her face before she finally looked up at me. "Are you going to yell at me?" She cringed slightly as she asked the question.

"No, I mean I don't think so....but why on Earth didn't you tell me? Rose, how long have you known for?" I tried very hard to keep my voice calm, but there was an accusing undertone as I spoke.

Rose immediately threw her hands up in front of herself. "Hey, I swear, I just found out two days ago. I had no idea, but after we talked about it, I agreed that we should wait

until tonight to tell you.”

I opened my mouth to say something, but shut it without uttering a word. After pausing for another second, I tried again, “But why wait? You both know how hard the last few days have been on me. I don’t understand. Was it a joke? Did you enjoy seeing me blush and hurling myself into cold shower after cold shower?” I didn’t bother to hide the anger in my voice this time.

“Bella, I would never do that to you! I swear.... No, ugh, this isn’t coming out right again. I did the same thing when I talked to Edward today...” Alice mumbled and then slapped her hand over her mouth when she realized what she just let slip.

I jumped to my feet. “You told Edward! So basically everyone knew except for me? Did you all have a good laugh at my expense?” I was starting to put the pieces together. “So that’s why he was so seductive all day, touching me and the things he was saying. He was trying to get me to cave, wasn’t he? I saw him shaking hands with the guys as we left.... They must have had a bet on how long it would take Edward to break me.” Tears were streaming down my cheeks now. “I wonder who won...” I hissed as I turned and stormed to my room, slamming the door.

“Bella!” I heard Alice cry from the family room. I could hear her running over to my door as I fell onto my bed, sobbing.

She and Rosalie didn’t even bother to knock, they walked right into my room and sat down on the bed beside me and stayed there silently for a few minutes, unsure of how to proceed.

“Bella? There was no bet, I promise,” Alice said quietly as she coaxed me into lifting my head up to look at her. She reached her tiny hand out and softly wiped away my tears. “May I please explain?”

With a little snuffle, I nodded my head, ready to listen to her reasons. I saw Rosalie give Alice an encouraging smile before she started speaking.

“It all goes back to the beginning of the boycott. You need to understand that the Bella who agreed to the bet is not the same woman that is sitting here right now. Back then, you would go on all of those disastrous dates with men who were the dullest, most uninteresting people on the planet because that’s the kind of guy you thought you deserved, the only kind of guy you thought would be interested in you. And how many times did we have to call and save you from the boredom on one of those dates? Rose and I knew you were so much more than what you saw when you looked in the mirror. We saw the amazing woman inside, who is funny, smart, beautiful and witty, but you didn’t even realize she existed. You were just so unsure of yourself.” She reached over and swept my hair back over my shoulder so she could see my face.

“Then one day, we made this silly bet. And when you had absolutely nothing to lose, you started putting yourself out there more. You began talking to guys you otherwise wouldn’t have dared to, you flirted, you..... How did we put it? You tasted the different flavors of the buffet. And slowly your confidence grew....” Alice grinned.

“And then, one day, an amazing guy walked into your life.” Rose took my hand in hers. “And you haven’t been the same since. You are a different person when you are with him; confident, self assured, funny, playful, sexy....really sexy, Bella.” She gave my hand a tight squeeze as she winked at Alice.

"But at Christmas, you were still insecure. I found you crying in the kitchen, again, wondering what Edward could possibly see in you, and even after he walked into the room and told you exactly why he loved you, part of you still thought he would disappear, that you weren't worth his time." Alice left my side and walked over to the nightstand and brought over the picture Liz had given to me. "Then little by little and day by day, you realized that this," She tapped her finger on the glass of the frame, "was meant to be."

I looked down at our sweet sleeping faces, and started to absorb all that they had just told me. I was insecure and lacked confidence that was a fact. My self esteem was embarrassingly low, but all of that was before Edward. I remembered crying in my room, thinking I wasn't good enough for him, that he deserved someone better, and then I recalled how certain I was that this all was a dream, vanishing at the stroke of midnight. It was only over the last week, since after Christmas that I knew...that I felt it. Edward and I were truly meant to be together, and that if something happened, I wouldn't give up on us, something I never would have done before. I looked up into Alice and Rosalie's loving eyes and offered them a smile, letting them know I was slowly beginning to understand.

Alice spoke first, "You said it today, Bella. You finally said that you wouldn't just let him walk away. It wasn't at all stalkerish like you worried. The things you said, those were the words of a confident woman who knows exactly what she wants and is willing to fight for it. You let him in, you finally trusted him with your heart. I simply wanted you to have time to get to that place...." Alice's face was hopeful, waiting for me to say something.

As I glanced back down at the picture in my hands, I could hear my cell phone beeping in my purse. Rose picked the small, black leather clutch up off the floor and took out the phone, glancing to see who it was. "You might want to look at this..." She smiled.

B-

Don't be mad at Alice. Whatever her reasons, everything that happened over the last few weeks led me to you. I thank God every day that I have you in my life. Her choices gave us the time to get where we are today and I am extremely grateful to her. She loves you almost as much as I do....

I will be there soon, beautiful.

E

I hid the smile that was wanted to break out across my face. My eyes met Alice's "The last few weeks have been really hard, almost hell on Earth for me, and you both know that," I said, watching their faces fall slightly, "but I also can't say that I didn't enjoy every second of it. I love Edward, and he loves me. And getting to know him has been an amazing experience. I don't doubt his love in any way, I feel it in my heart and you're right Alice, if I had known earlier, I just might have tried to push him away to let him find someone better, someone I thought he deserved. But now," I let out a dark laugh, "anyone who tries to get between us, will be in for the fight of their life." I smirked confidently up at my dearest friends in the world and watched them both let out a sigh of relief.

I winked at Rose, and then turned my attention to Alice, "So, tell me about Jasper and this hotel"

Alice's face immediately turned bright red. "Well, it was actually your fault, you know....."

My surprised look made her laugh. "That night Rosalie and I were out of town and you let the guys rummage through our rooms. Jasper found my journals, but he didn't read through them or anything like that. He simply opened the most current one up, and on the first blank page wrote me a letter...."

"And we know that boy can write!" Rosalie interrupted her, remembering the romantic message Jasper had put in Alice's Christmas present that had us all bawling.

"Yes, he certainly can. In the note, he told me that he loved me from the moment that we met and he didn't care about the bet anymore. He said that I was worth far more to him than \$200, and then he asked me to meet him at the hotel on that Wednesday. There were also a bunch of very sweet and personal things that I am not going to share with you either. I made up a 'meeting' so you wouldn't wonder why I was so dressed up, and was going to play off my nerves on meeting a new client, but neither of you asked. I think you were a little distracted yourselves..." She looked up to see us nodding in agreement.

"When I got to the hotel, he was waiting in the lobby with a huge bouquet of roses. He came over to me, kissed my hand, then took my arm in his and led me to the elevators. I don't think we said a word to each other, we just looked into each other's eyes, and I'm pretty sure I blushed through the entire elevator ride. When the doors opened, he led me down the hall to the most amazing suite I had ever seen. There were flowers everywhere, and a steaming bubble bath waiting in the bathroom with rose petals floating on the bubbles. ..." Alice got lost in a dreamy haze as she recalled the day. Rosalie and I exchanged smiles while she blushed.

In a hushed voice she continued her story, "And I don't even know what happened, I mean obviously I do, but he just led me into the bathroom and started undressing me, telling me how much he loved me the whole time. He untucked my blouse and before I knew it, his fingers were slowly unbuttoning the front of my shirt. I just remember staring up into his eyes as he bent over me, and nearly passing out when I felt his warm hands on my bare skin...and then the way he kissed me as he slipped my bra straps off my shoulders... and before I knew it, my skirt dropped down to the floor. Eventually, I was standing there in my panties, breathing like I had just run a 100 yard dash or something, just waiting for him to reach out and touch me.....I remember I was trembling when he finally.....Oh my gosh.... I'm stopping right there..." Alice was fanning herself furiously; I think Rosalie and I blushed right alongside her. "That is far more than I ever planned on telling you guys!" she squealed as she buried her face in her hands.

I cleared my throat before I even attempted to speak, "Well, it sounds like you two had...um...fun!" We all burst into laughter. As the giggles subsided I asked, "So is there anything else you feel the need to confess?"

Alice bit her lip. "Well, I also might have 'arranged' a few of the times we just bumped into the guys....like that time at the movies...and I might have suggested to Jasper that Edward and Emmett should send you the text messages about the gym that one day, so I could go to the mall with Jazz...." Our mouths hung open in shock as Alice's crimes against the boycott grew and grew.

"Mary Alice Brandon! You little sneak....." Rosalie shrieked in mock horror, but the smile on her face gave her away. She leaned over and hugged Alice. "Thank you."

I climbed up onto my knees and joined in the hug too. "For someone so tiny, you sure do cause a lot of trouble you know..." I teased. "But thanks to you and all your scheming, we have three wonderful men in our lives. Speaking of which, oh my gosh, I better get

dressed!" I glanced down at my watch and saw it was already 10:50pm, Edward would be here soon.

Alice and Rose squealed when I jumped off the bed and started running around my room, flapping my arms in a panic. "He'll be here soon.... Oh my God! I have so much to do...." I ran into the bathroom and saw how my tears had made my eye makeup streak down my cheeks. "Rosalie!" I screamed, and a second later she was standing in the doorway, her makeup bag in her hand.

"Breathe, Bella..... We'll get you cleaned up and ready to go." She sat me down on the toilet in my bathroom and got to work, getting me ready for my big date with Edward.

Fifteen minutes later, I was standing in front of the full length mirror in the hallway, admiring the way my dress flared out as I spun in circles. My hair was twisted up off my shoulders, into a clip, with small wisps of hair softly framing my face. All signs of the tears I had shed were erased by Rosalie's skilled hands.

Alice placed my overnight bag on the kitchen table alongside the much larger one she was planning on taking over to Jasper's tonight. I was digging the hall closet for my black, wool trench coat when I heard the clicking of heels behind me.

Alice and Rosalie stood there, grinning, with a box, neatly wrapped in shiny silver paper with a red bow on top in their hands. "Congratulations," Rosalie said as she handed me the beautiful box.

I quickly tore into the wrapping paper like a child at Christmas and gasped when I saw the pristine white box that had been hidden underneath the paper and the black print that said 'Manolo Blahnik' across the top. My eyes darted up only to see my smile reflected on their faces. I dropped the paper onto the floor and gently lifted the lid off to reveal the shoes inside.

"Oh my God. They are magnificent..." I gingerly lifted out a beautiful black ankle tie pump. The suede shoe had cutouts on the sides and heels with a silver tie in the front of the ankle. "Are these the Carmine's?" I barely croaked out I was so shocked. The limited edition shoe in my hand was the one I had been fantasizing about for weeks.

"The very ones," Rosalie said proudly. "You don't even want to know how many favors I called in to find this in your size, in two days." She laughed as she took the box from my hand and stooped down to slide the shoe onto my foot.

I held onto Alice's shoulder to steady myself as Rose tied the ankle straps tightly for me. "They are a perfect fit," I mumbled as I stared down at my feet, tears welling into my eyes. "Thank you both for finding them." I was overwhelmed that they would go to the trouble to find the exact shoe I had dreamt of.

"The deal was a fabulous pair of shoes to be worn on your first date of the New Year, Bella...." Alice said as she hugged me. "Would we let you down?"

I glanced at myself in the mirror one more time and just let it all sink in, the last few weeks, the fun, finding Edward, and falling in love. It was all culminating in this evening and I found myself suddenly flustered.

"How do I look?" I asked as I spun around to face my friends. "Is my hair OK or is it too much? Do I need a necklace? What about a bracelet?"

"You look beautiful Bella, absolutely beautiful." The awe in their voices made me blush. "Are you ready? He will be here soon."

"I'm not sure.....I think I might throw up.... That would be bad.....oh god.....look at my hands." I held out my hand so they could see the tremors that were raging through my body. My nerves taking over completely, I started pacing back and forth through the family room like one of the tigers at the zoo.

"Bella, you are going to wear a hole in the floor.... Sit down," Rose said sharply as she patted the empty seat next to her on the couch.

I wandered over, sat down for thirty seconds and then was back on my feet pacing.

"Bella! You are making me nervous, now sit down!!" Alice yelled from her chair. She watched me sit, then pace. Sit, then pace, two more times before she finally jumped out of her chair and grabbed the phone. "Where the hell are you? She's about to have a stroke! You know you shouldn't keep a lady waiting.... Well, hurry up..." She snapped into the phone before setting it down on the table. "Jackasses..."

"You didn't....." I hissed.

"I did. And for your information, they just pulled onto the street, give him five minutes." Alice quickly ran her fingers through her hair, smoothing it down as she looked at her reflection in the window. Rosalie got herself comfortable on the couch and flipped through a stack of DVDs since she and Emmett were staying in for the rest of the evening.

"I'm going to throw up..." I mumbled as my stomach flipped over violently. "Do we have a bucket?"

"Don't you dare!" Rosalie said sternly from the couch, waving her finger at me. "Then I have to fix your makeup all over again... Suck it up, Bella... Please don't make me slap you...." She picked up an issue of Cosmo off the coffee table and flung it directly at my head.

Clutching the magazine, I fell into the nearest chair and began flipping through the 100 plus page issue at lightning speed until I got to the monthly quiz which was titled 'Are you good in bed?' I had grabbed a pencil off the table and was about to gain some very important insight about myself before Edward arrived, when a loud knock on the door made me fly out of my seat in a full blown panic. My heart nearly jumped from my chest as Alice ran to answer the door. The magazine fell to the floor with a loud thud as I glanced over nervously at Rosalie and stood up, visibly trembling.

"Well, it certainly took you guys long enough. Ohhhhhh, Ok, I guess you're forgiven." Alice giggled from the front door. "Come in..."

Jasper was the first one in the door, he handed Alice a huge bouquet of roses that she immediately buried her nose into before kissing him. She led him into the kitchen and began rummaging for a vase.

A laughing Emmett, burst through the door next, with a pizza in one hand and a bottle of wine in the other. He walked right past me, setting the pizza down on the coffee table before sweeping Rosalie up into his arms. They shared a tender kiss, getting lost in each other's eyes for a moment.

I was still smiling as I watched Rose and Emmett start arguing over what movie they were going to watch when I felt someone standing right next to me. I closed my eyes and waited for the silky sound of his voice.

"Hello beautiful," Edward said softly, making the butterflies spring to life in my stomach. He held my arms out and took a moment to soak in the sight of me in my dress. "I knew that would look spectacular.... You truly take my breath away, Bella. I've never seen you look more beautiful." He leaned even closer and whispered, "I can't wait to get you out of here..."

"Hi," I said shyly as I blushed furiously at his compliment. I suddenly felt like a teenager being picked up for a first date. "You look pretty amazing yourself...."

Edward looked stunning. He was wearing a black leather blazer with a white button down shirt underneath. The first three or four buttons of the shirt remained open, showing a tantalizing sliver of his chest. The scent of his spicy cologne reached my nose, making me want to throw myself at him right then and there.

My eyes moved from his chest back to his face, more precisely, the perfect curve of his lips. I felt him move closer. "Hi...." I purred as he wrapped his arms around my waist and kissed me, really kissed me. At first the kiss was gentle, but the longer our lips stayed connected, the more urgent the kiss became until I felt my legs wobble and I pulled away knowing that we were being watched.

"Are you ready to go?" Edward asked as his fingers softly swept a stray hair out of my face. When I nodded, he walked over to the table, picked up my coat, and held it out so I could slip my arms into the sleeves. He lifted the coat up and over my shoulders, then spun me around to make it easier for him to button my coat. His fingers slowly brushed against my neck as he wrapped the green, cashmere scarf around my neck before kissing my cheek.

"Are you bringing anything with you?" he asked hopefully, eyeing the bags on the table.

My face immediately turned crimson, knowing that by grabbing one of these bags, Edward would understand that I was planning on spending the night with him, but I didn't care. With him, all night, was exactly where I wanted to be. As my fingers wrapped around the handle of the bag, I felt Edward's eyes on me, his face beaming as I gently set it down at my feet.

When he crouched to pick up the bag, I was taken by surprise, suddenly feeling his fingers skimming over my ankle, examining my new shoes. With a smirk on his face, he stood up and held his arm out to me. "Your shoes are beautiful."

"Thank you." I beamed, returning his smile with a kiss on the cheek. With a twinkle in my eye, I added, "Now, let's get out of here...."

I didn't have to repeat myself. The moment the words crossed my lips, Edward squeezed my hand and started briskly walking me over to the front door, oblivious to Alice and Rosalie screaming 'Wait' from the family room, until they nearly tackled him.

"Where are you two rushing off to, without saying goodbye?" Rosalie asked smugly. "Got a hot date or something?"

"Don't do anything I wouldn't do!" Emmett called from the couch, earning himself a dirty

look not only from Edward, but Rosalie as well.

“Have fun,” Alice whispered in my ear as she kissed my cheek.

“Details.... ” Rose reminded, as she wrapped me up into a big hug.

Waving over my shoulder, “I’ll call you....” I yelled, as Edward coaxed me out the door.

We walked in comfortable silence past the wall of mailboxes to the front door. “So are you ever going to tell me where we’re going?”

Edward smiled smugly, holding the door open as a blast of cold air hit my face. “Nope.”

oxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxo

Well, one more to go...I am hoping to post it tomorrow in this amazingly cool Leap Day..so my story will be dated as 'complete' on Feburary 29th which just think is cool. Hope this cleared things up for those of you that were furious at little Alice... be nice to her...I love her. As for the poll... interesting results... not surprising at all, but interesting.

Hope you liked it!

Chapter: 36

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

A huge thanks to the wonderful and seriously overworked Queen beta, hb1. Another huge thanks to Alice Laughed for her help fine tuning the romantic parts!

Hope you like the end of Boycotts and Barflies.... oh by the way it is rated M right...yeah...Ok carry on

xoxoxoxoxoxox

Midnight

BPOV

I took two steps outside and stopped dead in my tracks. In front of the building, parked at the curb was a shiny, black stretch limo. The driver was bundled up in a winter coat and scarf, holding the door open wide for us. "Good evening, Bella. Let's get you out of the cold." He extended a hand to make it easier for me to navigate myself into the car from the snowy sidewalk.

I glanced up at Edward, who was absolutely beaming. He placed his hand on the small of my back and led me to the limo. "Edward, what did you do?" I hissed in shock as I reached for the driver's outstretched hand. He simply shrugged his shoulders in response. As I slid onto the leather seat, I heard the door close behind me and the sounds of two muffled voices speaking softly then laughing as the trunk closed.

Having only been in a limo once for my cousin's wedding a few years ago I was awestruck at the interior. Light brown leather covered the seats, while the dark tint of the windows made it nearly impossible to see outside this late in the evening. There was a bottle of Champaign chilling in a bucket of ice that was built in to a recess on the side of the car with two fluted glasses waiting next to it. I looked up at the ceiling and saw strip lights wrapping around the ceiling of the interior and an elaborate sound system console there as well. A television was wedged into the corner along with a stock of DVDs. I was still fiddling with all the different buttons on the ceiling when I felt a sudden chill and Edward climbed into the limo.

"A limo?" I asked, waving at our astounding accommodations. "Edward, you didn't have to..."

His finger came up and pressed to my lips, stopping any further discussion of the topic. "Bella, I plan on spoiling you every chance I get, you need to understand that. And I just recently came into some money..." He lowered his finger, but when I opened my mouth and tried to protest, his lips took the place of his finger, again silencing me.

Our kiss was interrupted by the buzzing of the opaque divider being lowered. "Mr. Masen, Miss Bella?" the driver called over his shoulder. "Are we ready to head out?" He glanced at Edward and me, smiling warmly.

"Yes George, thank you," Edward replied.

"If you need anything just lower the divider." George pointed into the backseat. "It's the blue button on the consul."

"Thanks George, I think we'll be fine." As the divider went back up, Edward slid closer to me across the leather seat. His fingers rapidly unbuttoned my jacket, revealing the gorgeous dress underneath. He mumbled something under his breath that I missed.

As he fiddled with the temperature controls, I slipped out of my jacket, laying it neatly on the seat next to me. Edward took off his jacket as well, tossing it on top of mine, before reaching for the bottle of champagne. I watched as he peeled the foil back off the cork and began loosening the tiny lacing of wires that held the cork in place. He pressed a button and the sunroof open as he aimed the top of the bottle upwards, wiggling the cork back and forth until it exploded, flying out into the night sky. I burst into laughter as a tiny trickle of bubbles spilled onto Edward's hand, while he quickly tried to fill our glasses.

"Here, let me help." I grabbed the glasses and held them steady as he filled them with the sweet celebratory drink. I handed him one of the glasses, keeping the other for myself. I looked into his deep green eyes and raised my glass. "To our first date."

"To the beginning of forever," he replied as he clinked his glass into mine, never taking his eyes off of mine. My heart melted at his words.

I took a small sip of the champagne and then set the glass into a nearby cup holder. Edward leaned back into the seat, looking very relaxed and content, so I crawled over and curled up next to him, resting my head on his chest. "I love you." I murmured as my fingers began to explore the section of his chest that was exposed by the unbuttoned portion of his shirt. He jumped slightly as I made contact with his skin. "I'm sorry, are my fingers cold?" I asked, pulling them away.

"No, God no, Bella. That just feels so good, you have no idea...." He moved my hand back to his chest and relaxed when I went back to my exploration of his body. His hand ran up and down my back, soothing away my nerves. "Come here, you." He put his hands on my hips and repositioned me so that I was once again in the very pleasant position of straddling his lap.

As he looked lovingly into my eyes, his hand moved up to my hair and touched the clip that was holding my hair up. "May I?" His normally silky voice had turned low and husky as he spoke, making me feel a tingle down my spine.

"Whatever you want," I said, biting my lower lip.

There was a gentle tug to the clip, and then my hair fell down, cascading across my shoulders.

"Exquisite..." he whispered as he ran his fingers through my newly freed locks. "I'm sorry, I just had to touch your hair.....you have no idea how sexy you look right now."

He took my face in his hands and pulled me to him. Our lips gently brushed once, twice, and then no longer able to stand it, Edward's lips collided with mine.

A moan escaped me as I felt the warmth of his tongue on mine. I could still taste the sweetness of the champagne in his mouth. A fire erupted in me when his kisses became more passionate, more urgent. I could feel just how much he wanted me with every stroke

of his tongue, every touch of his lips.

"I love you, Bella....so much." He dropped his hands from my face to my bare shoulders and arms, ending at my fingertips. Teasing me almost to the point of madness, I felt both of Edward's hands shift and begin creeping up my thighs, finally slipping under the hem of dress

I gasped when I felt his fingertips meet the edge of my lace panties, my legs tightening on either side of him. As his fingers moved over my bottom, tracing the delicate pattern of the lace, I whispered his name "Edward..." as I clutched his chest. "What are you doing?"

"I've been imagining how this lace felt all night; I couldn't wait any longer to find out. Do you want me to stop?" he asked as he looked into my eyes that most certainly revealed the raging desire I was feeling at that moment.

"No, don't stop. Don't ever stop." I threw my body into his, wrapping my hands into his hair and kissing him as a wild current of excitement poured out of me. My breathing grew erratic as I became more and more caught up in Edward and how good he felt in my hands, on my lips and on my skin. I forgot we were in a car, I forgot there was another person a few feet away, only Edward filled my every thought, the rest of the world disappeared.

He reached up to my shoulder and I felt one side of my dress glide effortlessly off my shoulder, coming to rest near my elbow. His eager kisses covered the newly exposed skin of my collarbone, and trailed his down to the lace curve of my bra. The heat of his breath on my chest set everything in its path aflame. The tingling in my chest immediately spread out to my arms and down to the rest of my body.

Edward moved to the edge of the seat and without separating our lips, rolling me onto my back. The slight chill of the leather sent goose bumps up my arms, making Edward laugh. "Cold, love?"

"No." I kissed his neck. "Actually, I feel incredibly warm. It's the leather that's cold." I smiled as I felt him hike up my skirt higher, his hand now running along the smooth skin of my abdomen.

"Then we better do something to warm it up." He lowered his body onto mine, pushing me deeper into the seat, and I gasped in pleasure. "Do you have any idea how badly I want you right now?" he asked, as he slid his tongue slowly down the center of my chest.

My hands frantically started tugging on his shirt, pulling it from his pants and allowing me better access to his chest. The smooth muscles of his abdomen were so soft yet, solid underneath. As my hands moved over his skin, I heard him moan my name.

Once I heard that, I couldn't get the buttons on the front of his shirt freed fast enough. My fingers fluttered over the tiny plastic circles and as the last one popped open, I paused to drink in the sight of his bare chest that was only inches away. Just as my lips made contact with his now heaving chest, I felt the limo come to a stop.

Edward must have felt it too, because he gave me a quick kiss, and then sat up before the divider lowered a crack.

"We're here, Mr. Masen, and they're just about to start," George said, then immediately raised the divider back up to give us our privacy.

I let out a small groan of frustration, but Edward easily kissed my irritation away before he paused to button his shirt. He reached over to our coats which had been knocked onto the floor in our haste and helped me back into my jacket and pulled a blanket from a hidden shelf before opening the sunroof.

"What are we doing now?" I asked as Edward popped his head out for the sunroof, holding his hand out for me to join him. I squeezed out through the hole in the ceiling to find us parked along the river downtown, with a perfect view of the cityscape before us. We were the only car in the parking lot as I looked up at the starry sky.

Edward wrapped the blanket around my shoulders and pulled me to his chest. "It's almost midnight..." he murmured against my cheek as he glanced at his watch. "5, 4, 3, 2, 1. Happy New Year, Bella." He ran his fingers through my hair, sweeping his fingers under my chin, drawing me closer to him. "I love you."

"Happy New Year. I love you too Edward, more than you could possibly know," I mumbled seconds before his lips found mine in the frigid, now January, air. As we kissed, I heard loud booming noises near us. My head snapped around to see Portland's annual New Year's fireworks exploding directly overhead. "You are amazing..."

We spent the next fifteen minutes watching the fireworks explode over head, the colors swirling to the ground around us. Even in the freezing temperatures, I felt warm and protected in Edward's strong arms. As the finale of the fireworks began exploding above us, Edward and I dipped back into the car. He gave a quick tap on the divider and told George to take us to our next destination, giving me no clue as to where we were going. However, when he didn't help me out of my coat this time, I assumed the destination was nearby.

Edward pulled me into his lap, his hands rubbing up and down my back vigorously, trying to warm me up from the chill in the air. I pressed my cheek to his chest and let out a content sigh as my fingers twirled the buttons on his jacket. His warm lips pressed against my forehead and whispered "Just a few more minutes, love."

A comfortable silence fell over us as we rode through town in the limo. Edward held me snugly to his chest, the blanket still wrapped around my shoulders making sure I was warm enough. We held hands, our fingers tightly interlocked, and occasionally he would pull my hand to his lips, placing a soft kiss across my knuckles.

When the car came to a stop, George lowered the divider for the last time. Edward climbed out of the car, asking me to wait inside until he settled things with George, insisting he didn't want me to get cold standing outside.

I took the brief separation to check my makeup in the small compact Alice shoved into my purse at the last second. I was happy to see most of my makeup was safely in place, except for my lipstick, which Edward's incredible kisses had easily removed. I pulled out a tube of lip gloss and had just finished lightly brushing it against my lips when the door opened and Edward's hand reached into the car for me.

"Ready, Bella?" he asked as his head dipped down into the car, his smile making my pulse quicken.

"Absolutely," I said as I grabbed his hand, and slid my way across the leather and into his awaiting arms.

George was standing at the door, smiling. He handed Edward my overnight bag as he passed. "Thank you, George," I said as I gave him a quick hug, my giddiness getting the better of me. "Happy New Year!" I waved as Edward led me up the snowy steps to his apartment.

"Happy New Year to you too, Miss Bella. Enjoy your evening." George slammed the door shut, then headed to the front of the car and climbed into the driver's seat. I heard the engine of the limo start up as Edward opened the door and ushered me inside.

His apartment was dark when we came through the door, but I immediately smelled something delicious, tomatoes and garlic wafted through the air. There was music softly playing in the background as we moved down the hallway. Edward turned on the light and helped me out of my coat, hanging it in the closet before taking my hand and leading me into the dimly lit kitchen. He carried my bag into the other room, setting it on a nearby chair.

"Now what did you do?" I asked in astonishment while I watched him peek into the oven and check on whatever was cooking inside. In the other room, I noticed that the table was beautifully set, with two plates, wine glasses, linen napkins and a huge bouquet of flowers in the center with two candlesticks, one on either side of the flowers. A bottle of wine was chilling in an ice-filled bucket on the corner of the table.

"I thought you might be hungry so I made you dinner." He laughed as he saw my stunned face staring at the beautiful table in the other room. "It's almost ready, but in the meantime, come here...I have something I want to give you." He came up behind me and wrapped his arms around my waist, leading me toward the couch.

As we passed the table, I paused to get a closer look at the flowers, and then froze. "Those flowers...." I gasped, "those are the same flowers you sent me that day, after the gym...." I mumbled as I went over to the table and ran my fingers over the soft, satiny petals.

"When I first started falling in love with you...." he whispered as he pulled me into a warm embrace, and then finished leading me to the couch. When I sat down he took a long, rectangular box off of the end table and set it on my knee. "This is for you."

I stared at the tiny white bow on top of the box for a minute before slowly unwrapping the paper, wondering what could possibly be inside. I paused before I removed the lid. "Edward, you didn't have to get me anything..."

"Actually, someone gave this to me a long time ago, and I only bought one tiny thing for it. So please, just open the box." No one could resist his pleading green eyes, least of all me. "Open it..." he urged one final time before I listened.

My trembling hand clutched the lid, working it back and forth as I lifted it up. A flash of silver immediately caught my eye as the dim light hit the chain. Inside was a charm bracelet, with five charms already hanging from the sturdy chain that Edward was wrapping around my wrist.

"My mom started this the day I was born. The sun charm is for my birthday being in summer, the E is obviously for my name. Those two charms were on there for the longest time." He rotated my wrist to show the tiny black piano charm hanging from the side of my wrist. "This one she added when I was 16. And this one, she added very recently." Right next to the piano was a tiny silver book charm, for my Degree in Literature, "And this one, I added." Beside the slightly aged 'E' was a shiny, new, silver 'B'.

I was speechless. With tears threatening to spill out of my eyes at any second, I looked up to his face to find nothing but pure love looking back at me. My eyes went back to the bracelet and I began playing with the tiny charms, still unable to believe that he gave me something so precious.

“My grandmother started a bracelet just like this one, for my dad when he was a little boy. She gave it to him on his eighteenth birthday and asked him to give it to the woman he wanted to spend the rest of his life with someday. My mother has worn it every day for the last thirty years. When I was getting ready to leave her house, I asked her for my bracelet so I could give it to you.” He took my hand with the bracelet and put it to his chest and smiled. “Of course, imagine my surprise to find out she had not only slipped it into my suitcase, but attached a new charm to it. I hope that you will accept it and wear it, always.”

I began stammering, trying to keep my emotions under control, but failing miserably. “I don’t know what to say. You are absolutely amazing and this means so much to me, I can’t even begin to put it into words. All I can say is I love you, with every fiber of my being, I love you, Edward.” I leaned over to him and sighed “Thank you.” As I tenderly raised my hand to the side of his face, the charms of the bracelet tinkled together, making him smile wider.

“That noise reminds me of home. You are my home now, Bella...” As he kissed me, I couldn’t contain the tears anymore. They glided down my cheeks and Edward sweetly kissed them away. “I love you,” he whispered as he wiped the final tear from my face.

From the kitchen, I heard a timer start beeping. “Sounds like dinner’s ready!” I laughed, trying to pull myself together. Taking one last glance at my wrist and a deep breath, I followed him to the kitchen, and suspiciously asked, “So did you really make this or did Liz make it and put it in the freezer last time she was in town?”

My skepticism only made him laugh. “I made it, thank you very much, with my own two hands this afternoon. Just wait until you taste it, you’ll see, breakfast isn’t the only thing I can cook.” He laughed as he slid the hot tray from the oven and placed it on the countertop to cool for a few minutes. “Can you open the wine?” he asked, holding out a corkscrew. “And light the candles?”

“No problem.” With a click of the lighter, the candles began to glow brilliantly, accentuating the colors in the flower arrangement. In no time at all, I had opened the wine and poured us each a glass of Merlot. I took a generous sip, hoping to calm the stammering of my heart. The dry red wine, slid smoothly down my throat, warming a trail down into my chest. “This is really good,” I said as I joined Edward in the kitchen and handed him his glass as he dried his hands on a towel next to the sink. “You have good taste in wine.”

“And other things...” He smirked as he too took a sip of the wine, his eyes fixed on mine. “Would you like to taste the lasagna?” He rummaged through a nearby drawer for a fork. He carefully dug the fork into the bubbling tray of pasta and pulled a small bite onto the fork. He blew on it for a second before offering it to me. “Please?”

I leaned over and slowly put my mouth around the fork, watching Edward’s eyes twitch when I looked up seductively at him through my eyelashes. I pulled my lips off of the fork and smiled when I saw his hands remained frozen in mid air as his eyes lingered on mine for another second before he cleared his head.

"So, how is it?" he asked smugly, already knowing it was perfection.

I had to admit, the lasagna was downright delicious. He really was an excellent cook, I couldn't even pretend he wasn't, it was just yet another reason to love the guy. I let a small moan escape my lips as I enjoyed the flavors on my taste buds, and the next thing I knew there was a loud clink as the fork Edward had been holding fell sharply onto the countertop.

"Do you like that?" he purred, making me swallow the lasagna in one gulp and take another huge sip of wine. The intense desire in his eyes sent shivers down my spine.

"It's delicious," I mumbled into my wine, taking another sip before Edward stole the glass from my now trembling hand.

"Would you like to sit down and eat?" As he posed the question, he took a step closer and wrapped his hand around the back of my neck, tangling a few of his fingers in the hair at the nape of my neck, and bringing my face within inches of his.

No, dinner can wait....I don't even need to eat again....food... What's that?

I knew what I wanted at that moment and it had nothing to do with the mouthwatering lasagna on the counter. "There is something I would really like to do, but it doesn't really involve food, at least not right now." I stifled a laugh when I saw him light up, the excitement plainly written all over his gorgeous face. "Would you mind terribly if we put dinner on hold for now?" I asked as I started kissing his chest and neck.

His breath became more ragged as my trail of kisses crept higher up his neck. He leaned away from me just long enough to look over his shoulder, making sure the oven and stove were both off so the apartment wouldn't burn to the ground, and said, "Screw dinner" as a crooked smile broke across his face.

He turned off the kitchen lights so all that illuminated the room was the soft glow of candlelight from the table. Edward started kissing me with increased vigor in the darkness, my body started to tingle with excitement. As we stumbled out of the kitchen, our lips still locked together in a passionate kiss, I heard it.

Cuz' we are living in a material world

And I am a material girl...

"Alice..." I muttered against Edward's lips.

"Alice who?" Edward replied as I pulled the tail of his shirt out of his pants, but the damn song kept playing. "We don't know anyone named Alice...not right now..."

"I have to get it or she will be at the door next....and that would be far worse..." Growling, I snatched my purse off the counter and flipped the phone open. Edward came up behind me and wrapped his arms around my stomach.

"Do you have a death wish, Alice?" I snarled into the phone rather than saying hello, but my anger was immediately diffused when Edward leaned in and began sucking on my neck. "What.....what do youwant?" I wasn't paying attention to the phone anymore, all my focus on his lips on my neck.

"Well..... You've been on your date for an hour so, Rose and I were making the customary call to see if you needed to be rescued? So....How's it going?" Alice giggled into the phone.

I could hear Rosalie laughing in the background, and had my brain been functioning properly, I would have started screaming at them, instead, I continued stammering, "Amazing... good... no rescue needed... but thanks foroh my godasking." I gasped and nearly dropped the phone as Edward's hands slid from my stomach down to the front of my thighs.

"What's going on?" Rose asked when she heard my breathy response.

"Um....nothing ...well, that's not true...He's ...wow....his hands are..... and he's kissing my neck...oh, now, he's doing that thing with his tongue....the thing Emmett did Rose.....Oh....GOD." I was trying to concentrate on the conversation, but Edward was doing everything in his power to take my mind other places.

He laughed when I became even more flustered, unable to remember how to hang up the phone.

"Ewww. We don't need the play by play, Bella..." Rosalie whined.

I could hear Emmett laughing in the background yelling, "yes we do".

"Hey, you called me.....oh man....." I moaned as I felt Edward's hips grind into mine.

"Are you sure you don't need any rescuing, Bella?" Alice teased. "Because we'd be happy to come over there and get you..."

"No.... just stop. No, no....not you, Edward....Alice.....oh, forget it....you talk to her. I can't think straight when you do that." I shoved the phone at Edward's head as my body collapsed into his.

"Ladies, I promise to make sure she.....um, enjoys herself..... all night." Giggles poured out of the receiver. "She will be well taken care of....And just so you know; I am keeping her for a few days, so I don't want you to worry..." He nuzzled his cheek to mine so I could hear their reaction.

"But Edward," Alice started so seriously, "She didn't pack enough clothes... I can run some more over in the morning."

"I have a feeling she'll be rather busy in the morning. And actually Alice, what I'm planning to do for the next few days with her, really doesn't require any clothing, so she'll be fine. Say bye Bella....." He held the phone out and I could hear Alice and Rosalie squealing on the other end.

"Bye, Bella....." I laughed, running my hands down Edward's chest.

"Goodnight, ladies," Edward said sweetly as he turned off the phone and shoved it deep into a nearby drawer. "Now.....where were we?"

Holding his intense gaze, I held his hand and led us to the table, where he blew out the candles, darkness suddenly surrounding us. A hint of light from outside streamed into the room through the front windows, allowing us to safely navigate our way down the hall

toward his bedroom.

After a few steps, Edward gave my arm a quick tug, stopping me in my tracks and bringing my body to his. I looked up to his face and felt his lips crush into mine, taking my breath away as he pulled me closer. I felt the smooth coolness of the wall against my back as he pressed himself further into me.

Edward wrapped one arm around my waist and lifted me off the ground. With his other hand at the back of my neck, he walked me down the hall in his arms, his heated kisses making my head start to spin. His hand slid from my hair just long enough to push open his door, then returned to gently stroke my silky curls as they swayed across my back. He kicked the door shut, and lowered my feet onto the ground.

Once inside his bedroom, our bodies brushed together in the dark as I nimbly unbuttoned the rest of his shirt. When it hung open, the moonlight which poured in through the window created subtle shadows that danced across his skin.

My body ached to reach out and touch him, to feel the warmth of his body surround mine. I pressed my lips to the center of his chest and tasted the sweetness of his skin on my tongue as I pulled him tightly to me. My arms found their way to his back and lightly stroked his well defined muscles, feeling each ridge and dip of his body. I giggled against his skin when I felt a twitch and heard a low moan escape him at my soft caress.

In a powerful rush of emotion, I gave his shirt a tug and it slid off his shoulders and onto the floor. My eyes lingered on his bare chest, taking in the perfect shape of his shoulders and the sexy way his pants hung low on his waist accentuating the 'v' shaped muscles of his lower abdomen that dipped down below his belt. When my eyes finally flickered back up to his face, I saw the desire and hunger I was feeling, reflected back in his eyes.

"You are so beautiful." He sighed as he stood in front of me, his hand slowly sliding up my back, eventually reaching for the zipper of my dress. At a snail's pace he lowered the zipper down my back, which only served to prolong the sensation of him undressing me until I didn't think I could stand it another second.

With the back of the dress hanging wide open, I realized all that kept it from falling were the two thin straps of fabric over my shoulders, both of which, were dangerously close to falling down. Edward's fingers lightly ran up and down my partially exposed back. His touch was so gentle and smooth, barely a whisper across my skin as he took his time, investigating every supple curve of my body.

By the time his hands crept up over my shoulders, I was trembling with excitement. He slipped a single finger under the straps on either side of my dress and gave them a gentle tug, allowing my dress to spill onto the floor and pool at our feet. I felt a rush of cool air on my legs as the fabric rushed to the ground.

"Exquisite," he whispered as he looked down and admired my body. He gently ran his fingers down the lace of my bra straps, his fingers lightly brushing over the swells of my chest as I moved closer to him, needing to feel his skin on mine. "Bella, you are so beautiful.....I love you."

My feet left the floor again as Edward scooped me up into his arms in one fluid movement, sending my heart into overdrive. I lay comfortably in his arms, wearing nothing more than my black lace panties and bra, my new shoes still dangling from my feet. As he took the few steps separating us from the bed, our eyes locked, the love and

passion flowing freely between us in our stares.

Being with Edward felt so right, so comfortable. Even in a moment as intimate as the one between us now, I felt like we had been together for years, the familiarity I felt around him was staggering. I knew him in ways I didn't know another soul on earth, and could tell it was the same for him.

He was able to make me feel things I never thought possible, and for the first time, I felt truly alive. From the top of my head, to the tip of my toes, everything that I had wanted Edward, needed Edward and I knew I was exactly where I belonged.

A fluffy pillow slipped under my head as Edward eased me down onto his bed. He leaned over my quivering body and whispered words of love and adoration in my ear as his hands moved skillfully across my torso. My stomach twitched as his lips tickled against the sensitive skin below my belly button, my fingers snaked deeply into his hair at the back of his head. I found myself writhing around at his every touch, unable to hold still, constantly wanting to be closer to him.

Edward showered my body with kisses, trailing down my arms, my legs, over my stomach and across my breasts. The smooth, warm feel of his lips made me wild with desire. He sat up and took my foot in his hand and with his teeth, tugged on the tie holding my shoe in place. The silver bow came undone, the shoe dangling off the tips of my toes. He cupped the shoe in his hands and with a thud, I heard the shoe fall onto the floor next to the bed. The other shoe left my body in much the same fashion; however this time, when I heard the thud, I sat up and crawled to Edward at the foot of the bed.

My legs wrapped loosely around him as I started unbuckling his belt, wanting to see more of his perfect body. I slid the belt from the loops on his pants and let it fall to the floor into the ever growing pile of clothes beside the bed.

When my fingers went for the button of his pants, a low growl escaped his chest, turning me on more, and making me work faster. Adrenaline coursed through my veins as my breathing went off the charts, passion completely taking over my body, my cells craving Edward's touch. A hiss escaped his lips as I lowered his zipper, grazing over his obviously aroused groin.

He pushed me back onto the bed and as he inched his way up my body, he worked himself free from his pants, revealing his long muscular legs which immediately became intertwined with mine. His rock hard body pressed deeply into mine, letting his presence be felt by every inch of my skin. His hands found their way to my chest, sinking between my breasts. With a gentle tug, I felt my bra open and gasped as Edward's masterful hands began to work it off my body, his mouth eagerly kissing my newly exposed flesh.

Our bodies drew together as we shed the remainder of our clothes, and we found ourselves naked, intertwined in each other's arms. His skin was warm and smooth as it slid across mine, causing my body to respond to the slightest touch. My back arched and my lips covered his, tasting him again, unable to get enough of his kisses, each one sending me further over the edge than the kiss before.

"Edward..." I mumbled as he hovered over me, his lips turned up into a smile at the husky sound of my voice. "Make love to me..." I begged, "Please..."

Without hesitating, Edward answered my request. Our hips rocked together, the resulting sensation more than anything I ever imagined it to be, all my fantasies about him

paled in comparison to being with him now. I couldn't believe all the things I was feeling as we made love. He made me feel sexy, beautiful and loved with every touch, every motion of our bodies.

I didn't feel inhibited or embarrassed in any way with him. Instead, I found myself feeling bold and positively daring. Everything felt right, I could say or do anything, completely confident in my own skin when I was with Edward.

Each time I heard my name cross his lips, my skin would tingle and my heart would soar. He needed me, he wanted me, just as much as I wanted him and that knowledge empowered me, washing away any lingering fear or insecurities.

The intense and erotic movements we had shared together on the dance floor were nothing compared to the ways we moved while we were making love. The brush of his skin on mine, his undulating hips, and the feel of him between my legs was so electric; the current between us was palpable.

Together, our emotions continued to grow as our kisses became more passionate, the sensations taking us closer to our limits until finally we were unable to hold back any longer and climaxed together, both of us crying out at the peak of our ecstasy.

I knew in that moment, that Edward was the only man who could ever make me feel this way, the only one to make me feel this high, this fulfilled, this complete. When we made love, I had given him every part of me, my mind, body, and soul. They were now Edward's, forever. I had been waiting my whole life for him to find me, and now, there he was, his piercing green eyes looking lovingly down on mine. I vowed to myself that I would never let him go.

Edward collapsed onto me, the weight of his body calming the tremors that were still surging through me. Both of our chests were heaving as we tried to catch our breath. A sexy sheen of sweat covered Edward's body, the evidence of our enthusiastic love making.

I wrapped my arms and legs tightly around him, never wanting this moment to end.

He leaned closer and began whispering how much he loved me as he tenderly caressed my cheek, his eyes remaining locked on mine, full of love and adoration. "You ...are...amazing," Edward mumbled as his exhausted body finally rolled off of mine, a satisfied grin on his face. He held his arms out and I happily crawled next to him, resting my head on his chest, my naked body pressed against the side of his warm, glistening torso.

"Well, that was definitely worth the wait." I giggled as Edward's fingers tickled my side.

We spent the rest of the night making love, unable to get enough of each other. Every time with Edward was pure bliss, my joy and love growing with every experience we shared. When our lovemaking ended, I glanced out the window and saw the first hint of sunrise breaking over the horizon. A pink tinge crept up in the distance, making the snow sparkle outside.

Edward took my hand and raised it to his lips, the charm bracelet tinkling in front of his face. He tugged on my arm, coaxing me over onto his chest. He sighed contently as I lay on top of him, my face nuzzled in his neck, his arms tightly wrapped around my fatigued body. "Let's stay here all day..." Edward sighed as he stroked my hair.

"I am not going anywhere...I'm right where I want to be...forever."

Utterly exhausted, I drifted off to sleep in Edward's protective arms. Sweet dreams filled my mind, making it the most peaceful night's sleep I'd had in a while. I wasn't quite sure how long I had been asleep, but I woke up to the sound of Edward hissing into the phone at someone.

"I am not talking to you about that! No, I will not do that either..." Edward glanced my way, and noticed my raised head. He threw me a quick apologetic smile, and then a devilish grin when I sat up, revealing my still naked body to him.

I stuck my tongue out at him and quickly pulled up the sheet, motioning to the phone with a confused look on my face as I tried to figure out who it was.

Shaking his head, Edward rolled his eyes in response and let out a loud sigh.

"Emmett?" I asked softly and Edward nodded his head yes.

He was becoming more visibly irritated until suddenly, an evil grin danced across his face. "Hang on Emmett, let me ask her..." Edward covered the receiver of the phone with his hand and smiled. "Bella love, how many times have you... um... seen the movie Titanic?"

I made a small frown as I tried to do the mental math. "Gosh, I don't know Edward, a lot! At least twenty times...and I think that's being conservative."

Edward nearly burst out laughing at my response, and I noticed he had uncovered the receiver. "Are you happy? You heard her. Fine..." Edward held the phone out toward me. "Emmett doesn't believe you, love."

From the bed I yelled, "Emmett, I swear, it was at least twenty times. I suppose it could have been more, but I didn't keep a list and write down every time. I was kind of busy..." What a weird question...I thought as I lay back in bed and stretched. When I heard Edward telling Emmett to pay Jasper, it hit me and I sat up straight in bed. "Edward!" I yelled, "Emmett wasn't asking about Titanic was he?" My face turned beet red. Of course not, Emmett called to get details, about...us having sex. Oh God I will never live this one down.

"Um. I gotta go. No, don't call us, we'll call you... No, Jasper won, quit whining. Bye, Emmett." Edward snapped the phone shut and sheepishly made his way back to bed. He slipped under the covers and tried to cuddle up with me, but I refused.

"That call, with Emmett...I just made it sound like we had sex 20 times last night, didn't I?" I hissed. Edward's body shook violently with laughter beside me. "You are so bad, Edward Masen."

He rolled on top of me and kissed my neck. "That's not what you said last night... You said I was actually quite ...what was the word you used... oh yes, magnificent?" He continued kissing my neck as his hands dipped under the covers and ran along my thighs.

"All right, Mr. Magnificent, don't let it go to your head...it just means I have very high expectations now." I tried to laugh, but all the air flew out of my lungs as I felt him slip out of his pajama bottoms and settle between my legs again. "What do you think you are doing?"

"I'm keeping you in bed all day, just like I planned," he murmured, his lips brushing against my chest.

"You sound so sure of yourself...." I laughed, wrapping my legs around his waist.

"I am....quite confident in my abilities." He grinned mischievously.

"Really? Care to make a bet?" I asked with a twinkle in my eye.

"No, never ever again...."

The end

Xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxoxo

I hope you liked it. I had a great time writing it and cannot believe all the reviews you guys have given me. THANK YOU very much!

Yes I have another story idea...and it will be a vampire story, a sequel of sorts to another one of my stories and I am excited about it. I will be taking some down time to clear my head but if I'm on your author alert you will know when I post it.

New poll..... entertain me by voting, this one is close to my heart HA! You'll just have to go look --

And to my dear gmail friends who have kept me laughing all day and into the wee hours of night, I thank you for your brilliance and support. My husband truly thinks I have lost my mind most evenings as I laugh.

Feel free to drop me a review...you know I love them.

Chapter: 37

Stephenie Meyer owns any Twilight characters that may appear in this story. The remainder is my original work. Copyright 2007 by vjgm. No copying or reproduction of this work is permitted without my express written authorization.

Thanks to hb1 she is the best.

Ok so.... Yeah, the story was over and then I got a funny idea and had to write it out because I am as hooked on this story as you are. This is the last post for this story I promise, but I couldn't resist writing it. And it is my longest chapter ever... so enjoy :)

BPOV

Feb. 21st 2008 - Opening night of Eclipse

"Are they out of their flipping minds?" I heard Alice shriek from her room across the hall.

"Whose brilliant idea was this, BELLA?" Rosalie banged on the shared wall between our rooms while loudly damning me to the depths of hell.

It was the opening night of Eclipse, and we were all on edge. When the guys realized there was going to be a full lunar eclipse in February, they had worked their butts off to get everything up and running for the club in eight short weeks.

Alice and Rosalie used all their connections with vendors to get the equipment and furniture shipped there three days before the club opened. The last couple days we had slept maybe a total of four hours a night trying to get everything perfect for the grand opening.

In all the hurry, they hadn't had time to finish interviewing staff, and some of the people they'd hired, had jobs where they had to give two weeks' notice before starting at Eclipse. So for the first few nights, the guys were going to tend bar while training one of the new bartenders who was able to start immediately.

They were desperate for waitresses, so I tried to be a supportive girlfriend and volunteered the girls and myself for the first few nights until the new employees could start.

As I stood holding the brown bag in my hands, the sick feeling in my stomach made me begin to regret that decision. Well, shit. How bad could it be? I mean really, it's just a uniform.

I took a deep breath and gingerly dipped my hand into the bag, recoiling when I touched something that felt surprisingly like..... Spandex and sequins.

My brain didn't even have time to process the sensory information from my fingertips because at that exact instant, my bedroom door flew open, and I saw my two friends, looking more pissed off than I had ever seen them before. And being the good friend I am, I burst out laughing.

"Don't laugh... just wait, Bella....put those shorts on, and your ass will look like a friggin' disco ball too!" Rosalie screeched as she stood two feet in front of me, her hands planted firmly on her hips, laser beams coming from her eyes.

I tried to stop laughing, but every time my eyes went to her rear, it was impossible because she was absolutely right. It looked exactly like a disco ball. The bottoms for our new 'uniform' were super tiny boy shorts, and every inch on them was covered in sparkly silver sequins. The small amount of light from the lamp on my nightstand reflected off their butts, splattering my walls with thousands of tiny rainbows.

"I bet they'll be able to see our asses from space!" Alice whined as she stormed over to the full length mirror in my room and stuck her tiny butt out toward her reflection. "What were they thinking?" She sighed as she tried, unsuccessfully, to tug the black spandex half shirt lower to cover her bare mid-drift. Unfortunately, all that happened was it snapped back up into her breasts, making her curse almost as colorfully as Rosalie.

Still studying the tiny pile of clothes wadded up at the bottom of the bag, I reached into the pocket of my jeans and pulled out the phone, quickly sending Edward a message.

E-

Who is the jackass that picked out these outfits?

We are going to hang them by their balls from the balcony of Eclipse.

Love you!

B

I looked at my friends, trying to figure out what to do to make these hoochie mama outfits a bit more respectable, but finally resigned, and went into the bathroom to don my lycra-induced nightmare of a uniform.

"Those guys are out of their minds if they think we are going to let the waitresses parade around in these things every night...over my dead body," I was muttering under my breath as I took the semi elastic shirt that was no bigger than a washcloth in its relaxed form and wrestled it over my head completely messing up my hair. The glare off my ass blinded me momentarily in the mirror before I staggered back into my bedroom.

The phone beeped loudly, signaling Edward's reply had arrived. Rosalie lunged across the bed for the phone, looked at the message and threw it back onto the pillow her arms folded tightly across her chest. "Stupid, moronic, sexy fool...."

B-

Emmett.

Need I say more?

E

"Why do you get the sweet and sexy one, and I get thewell.... I get the retarded and sexy one?" Rose huffed as she flopped back on my bed in disgust. "God damn it, these sequins are chafing my thighs!" she screamed furiously at the ceiling as she tried to get comfortable now laying spread eagle across my bed.

I sighed, and sat sympathetically next to her, wondering how the hell we were going to

last the next seven hours in these getups. I glanced over at my reflection in the mirror, to see the bold ECLIPSE logo emblazoned across my chest in silver glitter letters like a blinking neon sign. "They may as well have written 'look at my boobs' on this shirt," I mumbled to Rose who humphed her agreement and mumbled something that sounded like 'Stupid no good, Emmett' under her breath.

"That's it! They are dead..." Alice stomped over to the bed and flashed her phone at us. "When you texted Edward, I texted Jazz to find out who picked the outfits, here is his reply..."

Alli-

We all plead the fifth.

Jazz

"So they all knew?" I hissed, jumping to my feet. "This is their idea of a joke? They want us parading around their bar like this?" I threw my arms over my head in frustration, the elastic top making my boobs fly into my chin. "Note to self, don't do that again tonight..."

Alice got that evil glint I usually feared in her eye, but tonight, it was a welcomed sight. "Oh, then we will have to make them pay....."

EPOV

"Where the hell are they?" Emmett growled as he looked over his shoulder for the sixth time in five minutes, anxiously awaiting the girl's arrival. He had a list of things to go over with them, like the drink special of the night, the rules he wanted to follow for serving totally shit-faced patrons, and most importantly, he wanted to see Rose in the skimpy shorts. He had been talking about nothing else since he ordered them. "They do know we open at 8:00, right?" He turned and glared at Jasper, who was taking inventory behind the bar.

Looking like he was about to throw his pen at Emmett, Jasper snapped, "Yes Emmett, they are well aware of what time we open. Alice just called and said they were on their way so please relax."

Jasper set the clipboard down on the bar top and was about to start lecturing him on creating a pleasant work environment when the back door flew open, and in the archway, stood three of the most beautiful, and most pissed off women I had ever laid eyes on.

Uh-oh, I thought as I shuffled some papers in my hand.

"We're dead," Jasper muttered, his eyes locked on Alice's angry face.

"Damn.....I thought she'd be wearing it," Emmett mumbled, not hiding his disappointment.

Rosalie stormed down the hall first, Bella and Alice a few steps behind her, with furious looks on their faces. Much to our dismay, all three of them were dressed in velour sweat suits rather than their skimpy waitress uniforms that we so lovingly picked out for them and had been patiently waiting to see them in for the first time.

Raising a finger to Emmett's chest, Rosalie gave him a hard poke in the sternum. "Fuck

you....” She turned in Jasper’s direction. “Fuck you.....” And then her black eyes scorched a path to mine. “And fuck you!” she spat before turning on her heel and marching back to the office, slamming the door.

“Rosie, baby.....” Emmett hustled over to the office and banged on the door trying to talk to her, but when Rose started throwing things on the other side, Emmett knew to back off. He sulked over to the bar, stopping dead in his tracks when Alice and Bella cut off his route. “What? Why are you looking at me like that? What did I do? And why aren’t you dressed for work?”

As soon as the last question left him mouth, and I saw Bella’s eyes glowing in fury, I knew we were all in big trouble for their “uniforms”. I glanced nervously at Jasper who had buried his face under the bar, refusing to face the wrath of Alice and Bella.

I’ll try and charm her... “Have I properly thanked you for helping us out by working here for the next few nights?” I wrapped my arms around Bella’s waist and bent down to give her a kiss when her tiny hand shot up, her fingers spread wide across me face, and stopped me inches away from hers.

“How stupid are you?” my angel seethed, her fingernails digging into my scalp and temples. I watched Alice walk around the bar and heard a loud slap, followed by a small yelp from Jasper.

Screw the charm; it’s time to beg for mercy.... “Honey, listen...” I began as I took a defensive step away from her, my face liberated from the claw-like grasp of her hand.

“Don’t you honey me!” she roared.

For someone so small she sure is loud..... “But...”

“Edward!” she fumed.

“I didn’t....”

“Yes, you did!” she snarled.

“But Emmett and Jasper....”

“Were you sitting with them when the decision was made?” She took a step toward me, and I quickly stepped back again, not wanting to be within striking distance.

From behind the bar I heard Jasper chime in, “He was there, Bella...and he said something about the top making your boobs look spectacular.”

Again, Alice smacked him, and I smirked victoriously in his direction until I too, got the evil eye from Alice.

“I never....” I put my hands up in self defense, but Bella continued stalking towards me, and I continued my very cowardly retreat until I found myself trapped against the wall.

“You never what? Used your brain? Thought with your head and not your....”

Thankfully, Alice interrupted before she could finish her tirade. “Bella come on, there will be plenty of time to kill them later. We need to get changed for work.”

I looked over at Jasper, who smiled sheepishly in my direction. Emmett was walking back, shaking his head at us after having a ten minute conversation with the office door, looking like his dog died. "So I'm thinking the outfits might not have been the best idea we've ever had..." Emmett sighed as he plopped onto the nearest barstool and laid his head on the bar with a small thud.

"Ya think?" I said incredulously

"Hey, I didn't hear you object Mr. 'Spectacular boobs'," Emmett quipped.

"And who was the one who suggested the sequin hot pants??" I turned my accusatory finger in Jasper's direction and gave it a wave. "Great job, Jazz....." I sneered.

"The final decision was all Emmett's; so he should be taking most of the heat, not us..." Jasper whined, sitting down next to Emmett.

"Come on guys, this is the opening night of the club, our dream come true! Seriously, the girls have a sense of humor. So we will grovel for a few days...well, probably more like weeks from the looks on their faces, but that's fine...we can dazzle them with our charms later. For now, we need to focus. I want tonight to go off without a hitch." I patted both of them on the back as I concluded my little motivational speech, like a warrior leading his men into battle. Maybetheall the girls need is a little pep talk too....

In my head, I was busy planning an inspirational oration for the girls when it happened. It looked like something out of a big budget movie. The door to the office flew open, and in what appeared to be slow motion, the girls started walking down the hallway wearing their work uniforms. The glittering bottoms sparkled like a thousand tiny stars with each sway of their hips while their exposed stomachs and half shirts accentuated the curves of their figures perfectly.

The air left my lungs, and I stood motionless, as they glided closer. With each step, I realized we were in big trouble tonight.

"Holy....." Emmett gaped, his mouth dangling open.

"Shit," Jasper finished as his jaw snapped shut.

I was still unable to speak. The girls looked unbelievably sexy. Black fishnet stockings made a provocative pattern from their delicate ankles all the way up to their firm, curvy thighs before disappearing underneath their shimmering bottoms. Each of them wore a pair of black patent leather stilettos making their legs the most tantalizing things in the greater Portland area.

My eyes roamed unabashedly over Bella's body. She had a rather devilish smile on her face, thoroughly enjoying the stunned silence their entrance had created. She had pulled her hair up into a high ponytail that swayed almost as much as her hips with every step she took. The outfit was finished with huge, silver crescent moon earrings that gently grazed the top of her shoulders when she turned her head from side to the side. Her makeup was sultry, her eyes heavily shadowed and seductive, her lips red as rubies, more kissable than ever. The sharp clicking sound of her heels on the floor was so arousing I had to drop my hands to cover the front of my jeans, worried someone might notice my 'excitement' at her appearance.

Being ever observant, I saw Bella's eyes flicker from my eyes down to my hands and then back, a triumphant grin plastered on her face. She confidently strode over to my now paralyzed body and pressed her small, luscious body into mine. "Hi, Edward," she purred into my ear, making my situation even more....pressing, her teeth sensually gliding over my ear

When her fingers began slowly dancing their way across my chest, I couldn't stand it a second longer and wrapped my arms around her, securing her body to mine. Her curves, brushed against me in all the right places. The squeal of delight that escaped her lips sent a warm surge through my body. "Bella, you look...."

"Hot? Sexy? Stunningly beautiful? Irresistible orjust completely Naughty?" Her brown eyes were dark and seductive as she waited for my answer.

"Um.... yeah, all of the above. I especially like the naughty thing...." I mumbled as she traced my bottom lip with her fingers, making my heart pound wildly.

"Good because if you like it, then I'm fairly certain that every guy in the bar will feel the same way tonight. In which case, tonight should be a lot offun," she said with a giggle, her warm breath against my chest.

"Hell no!" I heard Emmett shout while Rose stood in front of him and smiled like the cat that swallowed the canary. "Go back there and put some clothes on right now!" Emmett said in a booming voice, the large vein in his forehead looking like it was about to burst as Rosalie stood there defiantly shaking her head no.

"Never thought I'd hear him say those words..." Alice giggled.

"I have to say I agree with Emmett.... I think you should just wear what you had on before to work. We were way out of line choosing these get ups. You were right to be mad." Jasper took off the hooded sweatshirt he was wearing and gently laid it across Alice's shoulders.

"Sweat suits? You want us to wear pastel sweat suits to work here tonight?" Alice shrugged out of his sweatshirt, wadded it up and threw it back in his face. "No, we will wear the uniforms that you guys picked out for us. And I'm sure the other guys in the club tonight will like them just as much as you do."

"That's exactly what I'm afraid of...." I muttered as Bella pulled away from me and went to stand with her rebellious 'sisters in spandex'. "Can't we discuss this?" I pleaded, looking to both Emmett and Jasper for help.

With his arms clamped across his puffed up chest, Emmett was busy trying to look intimidating and Jasper was massaging his temples, taking a few deep breaths, trying to remain calm.

"The time for discussing this was before you ordered these ridiculous get ups, gentlemen, but 30 minutes before we open is way too late. So we'll just go with what we have." Rosalie marched over to Emmett and stood nose to nose with the furious man and hissed, "And first thing tomorrow morning you are going to order more appropriate outfits for your staff. Do you understand me?"

They stood there a few seconds longer, neither wanting to be the one to break the angry silence that surrounded them, before finally Emmett dropped his arms in surrender. "Fine. But can you at least put on an apron or something?" he pleaded, desperate to have

them covered by a few extra yards of fabric.

"No," they answered in unison, smirking amongst themselves. They knew they had us... and we knew we deserved whatever came next.

"You guys go do whatever you need to do. We're going to get our stuff ready, we open in 20 minutes!" Bella winked at me, and I was just about to drag her off to a secluded room in the back so I could show her how beautiful I thought she was when the backdoor opened and Henry, one of our new bartenders walked in.

"Hey guys, are we all ready? What do we need to....Wow....." he stopped mid sentence when he caught sight of the girls, his eyes wide. "Well hello, ladies."

"Hi, Henry..." They again responded in unison, like a set of sexy triplets out of a men's magazine. Their flirty giggles made my blood boil, and from the tremors I saw running through Emmett and Jasper, I knew I wasn't alone.

"Henry!" Jasper snapped, "I have something I need to talk to you about so if you could please stop undressing our girlfriends with your eyes.... I need a few minutes of your time." He grabbed him by the arm and dragged him back behind the bar, Henry's head swiveling so he could get one last look at the girls, who continued to bat their eyes shamelessly

Emmett walked over to me. "We are totally screwed tonight, my friend, totally screwed." He couldn't tear his eyes away from Rose, who must have felt him staring at her because out of nowhere, she hiked her long leg up onto a chair and started running her fingers lightly along her thigh, straightening her stocking and making Emmett break out into a sweat. "Is there a lock on the office door?" he mumbled as he took a step toward her.

"Yeah... I made sure there was..." I mumbled, my eyes now fixed on Bella, who was casually wiping something off the toe of her patent leather shoe, giving me a stunning view of her ass.

Emmett went to Rose and tried to talk her into 'testing the lock' on the office door, however he was shot down and quickly came sulking back to the stool next to mine. "So screwed....."

Jasper broke us out of our sulking with a few last minute things that needed to be done before the doors officially opened. We ran around talking to the DJ, who also felt the need to comment on the girls, and just how much of business they would bring in for us when word got out about how hot they were.

This is going to be the longest night of my life..... I thought when I noticed Henry and the DJ both staring at Bella as she laughed at some joke Alice made.

Emmett's voice broke me from my jealous daze, "Ok guys, so listen. Tonight is going to be the greatest and worst night of our entire lives so be prepared. The girls look... well... there's no other way to say it, totally hot...but, we cannot go killing guys and throwing them out of Eclipse for doing... well, what guys do....and God, it is going to be hard, but we can't run our patrons out of here tonight because they are looking at our girlfriends. So unless they get way out of line, let them be. Got it? The girls can take care of themselves." He glanced over his shoulder and saw them gathered around the DJ, bouncing to the music he had just started playing. "Yeah, they know exactly what they're doing..."

By 10:30, Eclipse was getting really packed. We were so swamped with drink orders that I lost track of the girls for a time. Emmett and Jasper were taking turns being on 'Girl patrol' as they called it, making sure no one crossed the line or laid a hand on any of them. The girls, of course, flirted with every guy, making sure we noticed as they threw back their heads and giggled.

After a particularly busy stretch, I glanced up and couldn't find Bella anywhere. "Guys, have you seen Bella lately?" When Emmett and Jasper shook their heads no, I started to get worried. I climbed out from behind the bar and began scouring the place, seconds away from panicking when I finally saw her.

Bella was standing next to a table that was nestled in the far corner of the bar. There were four young guys at it, one of whom must have been celebrating his 21st birthday because he was flashing his license around like it was a picture of a naked lady, showing everyone who would look at it. As she started to take their drink order, the guy on her right, gently patted her arm which earned him a dirty look from Bella and made me laugh.

The birthday boy got to his feet, standing way too close to her for my liking, and from the look on Bella's face, too close for her as well. She took a step away from him, but then found herself stuck in the corner. When the guy put his arm on the wall next to her head and leaned in, I started walking toward them, ready to kill.

Bella glanced over the guys shoulder, saw me coming and let out a small sigh of relief. Before turning her attention back to the birthday boy, she gave her eyes a small roll at whatever he was saying to her then looked much more relaxed as she stood there, knowing I was only a few steps away.

I walked up behind the guy, and paused. It was just the three of us now; all of his friends had left the table to chase after a group of sorority girls in short skirts that just walked into the place. I had to try not to laugh when I heard the horrible lines he was laying on Bella.

"Do you like blueberries or strawberries?" he asked.

Her eyes flickering to mine as she tried not to laugh. "Why?" she asked, sounding bored.

"Because I want to know what kind of pancakes to make you when you wake up." His throaty chuckle sounded more like a dog vomiting than anything remotely attractive. I laughed to myself when I saw Bella bite her lip to keep from giggling at his stupidity. Being a complete idiot, the guy took her lip biting as encouragement and dipped his head closer to her before saying softly, "How about a birthday kiss?"

I was about to clamp my hand on his shoulder and introduce his eye to my fist when Bella's laughter barked through the air around me.

"Not gonna happen my friend, not even in your dreams, trust me. Now, we can do this the easy way or the hard way. Easy way is you step away from me, apologize for being an asshole, and go scurrying off with your little friends for the rest of the eveningor I'm going to dig the heel of my stiletto into your foot as hard as I can, you'll probably have to go to the hospital and get some stitches when I'm through, which would be a rotten way to spend your birthday." She smiled broadly and glanced in my direction before looking back at the birthday boy. "And I won't even mention the third option to you, but it involves my very jealous boyfriend, who is standing right behind you, probably giving you a black eye for your birthday. So.... The choice is yours..." she said smugly. "You have ten seconds."

"Make it three," I growled over the guys shoulder.

He wheeled around with a look of genuine terror in his eyes and threw up his hands defensively "Hey gosh, I'm sorry man.... I didn't She just looked.... Wow.....I mean, I am very sorry, miss. I was extremely rude and inconsiderate, and I apologize. Um, I better go...." He looked at me, his eyes begging permission to leave which I granted with a small nod of my head. In his haste, he jumped over a chair, tripped and stumbled into a table before finally making his way back to his friends.

I turned my attention to Bella who was grinning sheepishly. "Are you alright?" I asked as she came over and hugged me tightly. I felt her tiny body melt into mine, awakening those lusty urges I'd been feeling earlier all over again. "You know, if you need a minute, we could go back in the office and...."

"Test the lock on the door?" She laughed. "Nice try, Sexy Eddie. Thanks for the rescue, but I had everything under control until you decided to do your Batman impersonation and save me."

When I tried to open my mouth to answer her, she hiked her foot up onto the chair in front of me, the sensual line of her leg impossible to ignore. "With these shoes, option two would have hurt like a bitch." She smiled proudly showing off the spiked heel of her shoe.

"I have no doubt that these shoes would have hurt, love." I let my fingertips brush over the exposed skin on the top of her foot and then ran them leisurely up the side of her calf, enjoying the sensation of her soft, silky skin. My fingers followed the path up her leg, to her knee before finally allowing my whole palm to caress her supple thigh. I felt her jump as I leaned in. "However, I was not about to watch that guy undress you with his eyes for one more second." My lips ached for her skin until I finally lowered them to her neck. "Besides, undressing you, that's my job." I chuckled when I heard her let out a loud gasp and felt her fingers clinging to my shoulder.

"So what were you saying about your office...." she said breathlessly, her brown eyes burning into mine.

Cupping her thigh, I lowered her foot off the chair and back onto the floor. Her lush, pouty lips were begging to be kissed and I was happy to oblige. I felt her hands weave their way into my hair, only encouraging me to do more. As her warm lips parted and our kisses deepened, I forgot where we were, completely spellbound by Bella and her amazing body that I couldn't seem keep my hands off of. My hands skimmed along the skin of her bare stomach, goose bumps appearing under my gentle touch. Her moans sent a rush of excitement through me, my instincts started taking over, and I had to get her alone, now.

"Edward..." she whispered against my lips as she pressed her hips into mine.

My hands dropped below her waist, and I could feel the tiny sequins that adorned the womanly curves of her rear. "I need to be with you.....now." I growled as she kissed my neck, seductively running her tongue along my collarbone.

"Edward Masen! Stop molesting the staff. That is a sexual harassment suit just waiting to happen!"

"Go away, Alice," I hissed without even looking over my shoulder to acknowledge her. I

felt Bella giggling in my arms, trying to squirm away but I wouldn't let her.

"Edward, get your hands off her ass. People are staring you know."

Immediately, Bella froze, a sudden panic washing over her beautiful face.

Slowly, I turned around and saw a few tables of people, all with their hands over their mouths, hiding their laughter. Behind the bar, Emmett and Jasper flashed cheesy grins and gave me the thumbs up, making my cheeks turn red. "Well, I guess I should let you get back to work," I said sheepishly, thrusting my hands nervously into my pockets, realizing the spectacle we must have created.

Bella's fingers lifted my chin until my eyes met hers to see the love and mischief dancing in them. "Feel free to harass me anytime Boss," she purred as her long lashes seductively beckoned me. Standing on her tiptoes, she whispered in my ear, "We are soooo testing the lock on that office door tonight after we close."

I watched the intoxicating sway of her hips as she walked back over to Alice, the shimmering shorts accentuating every movement she made. She glanced over her shoulder briefly, winked, and then continued on her way.

My mind was fixated on one thing now, me and Bella in the office. Impatiently, I looked at my watch to see how long until we closed, before heading back over to the bar to face the wrath of Emmett.

"Grove any employees lately, Edward?" Emmett snickered, hardly able to get the words out before he cracked himself up.

"You know in these litigious times, Edward, that kind of activity opens us all up to a whole slew of legal issues....." Jasper teased. He obviously helped Alice prepare her line when she interrupted us.

"Bite me!" I replied sharply, glaring.

"I think Bella just did...." Emmett gasped between laughs. "At least that's what it looked like from here. I can't be sure though, I could probably ask some of the people at those tables over there..." He pointed toward the corner. "They had the best view of all the action."

"Are you done yet?" I wondered how much more of this I would have to endure. Not waiting for his answer, I began filling the drink order Rosalie slid onto the counter.

"Ignore him, Edward, he's just jealous. So, did Emmett tell you he almost punched some guy?" Rose laughed as I shook up a margarita for her order. My eyes went immediately to Emmett, who stopped laughing and rolled his eyes at Rosalie.

"No, he failed to mention that detail....so what happened?" Rose had my full and undivided attention while Emmett fidgeted beside me.

"It really was nothing, until Emmett went all caveman on the guy," Rose sneered in his direction

"He had you on his lap!" Emmett roared.

"He was seventy-five years old, Emmett, seriously..." She twirled a piece of her long blonde hair around her fingers casually, shaking her head at Emmett's overreaction. "And

he asked me to dance, big deal. He reminds me of my grandpa... thank goodness Emmett was there to save me from that vishous predator," she said sarcastically.

Rose took something out for her top and slid it across the bar to Emmett. "Here, if you want to hit someone, why don't you take this?" She grinned while Emmett flipped the small piece of plastic around curiously in his fingers.

"What's this?" Emmett started reading the text printed on the card, "Marriott Suites..." He looked up, horrified. "Is this a room key?"

"Yeah, to some smarmy lawyer's room. Now if you really want to hit someone.... He would be a much more deserving target than the old guy.... This lawyer was a complete jerk and all hands.... But you didn't see him, did you?" The rage in her voice was growing. "That's right you were busy with all those sorority girls, feeling your muscles..." She shot him one final parting glare, and then took the drinks I had assembled on her tray out into the crowd.

"Real smooth, Emmett...." I laughed as he stood dumbfounded, looking at the room key in his hands.

"I'm getting them turtlenecks to wear tomorrow, and a vest.... Maybe a snowsuit...we can go with an arctic theme.... And goggles to hide their faces...of course, Rose would still look hot, the snow pants would be snug.....Crap!" He slammed the key into the trashcan and sulked off after her.

"I have an order I need filled ...Boss..." I heard Bella's silky voice say from behind me emphasizing the 'boss' part. She leaned around me to put the slip of paper on the counter, making her body press against mine intentionally. Her playful grin confirmed my suspicion as did the slight swat in the rear she gave me before bending down to grab a glass from under the bar.

Two can play at this game...."Bella..." I said as I walked up behind her, running my fingertips down the center of her back. "Thanks again for helping out tonight. I really appreciate it..." I moved my body right behind her, and pressed her soft body into the bar. "Can you feel my appreciation?"

"Um, yeah.... I think I canBoss." Her cheeks turned pink.

I leaned my face to hers and whispered, "And do you have any idea how much I like it when you call me boss?" I wrapped my arms around her, pressing into her even more.

"Oh my....yes, I can definitely tell..." she mumbled breathlessly. "How long..... until we close?" she asked, glancing suggestively toward the office door.

"Another hour..." I smiled. "Can you wait that long?" My finger ran lightly across her jaw line, making her shiver.

"I'm not sure..." she squeaked out as I stroked her cheek with my thumb. "Not if you keep doing that..."

I felt her relax and close her eyes, leaning her head against my hand. Her fingers latched onto the belt loops of my pants, pulling my hips into her. The small whimper she let out at the close contact lit a fire in my body that I found difficult to control; my eyes went to the office door instinctively. I wonder if we have time....

"Hey, when you're done feeling up the waitress, can I get a Corona with a lime?" A very deep voice asked from the other side of the bar.

"Duty calls..." I whispered as I brushed my lip against hers, smiling when I heard her let out a frustrated sigh as I walked over to the big burly guy and handed him the beer.

He glanced over my shoulder to check out Bella. "Sorry to interrupt, man, don't let me keep you from the hottie. And you should give a raise to whoever picked out those uniforms, they are smokin'..." He gave a wave to the deeply red Bella and headed back to his buddies.

The next hour passed in slow motion for all of us. Alice sat down at the bar trying to talk to Jasper as often as possible, her fingers running along his arm tenderly when he whispered in her ear. Rose was enjoying herself immensely, as she kept blowing Emmett kisses and wiggling her hips every time she walked past the bar, making him tense up and run a frustrated hand through his hair before glancing impatiently at his watch. Bella would bring all her drink orders directly to me, bending deeply over the bar giving a spectacular peek at her chest and calling me 'boss' in a suggestive voice as much as possible.

Emmett actually counted down the seconds until he could say last call and turn up the bar lights, signaling the end of the night. The remaining thirty people or so quickly exited the bar, with Jasper locking the door behind them.

I went over the receipts and found we had a very successful opening night which put everyone in a good mood. Henry finished cleaning up the glassware and gave a wave goodbye as he too headed out for the evening. Bella, Alice and Rosalie strolled over to the bar and plopped down on the stools. I heard the thuds of their empty shoes hitting the floor followed by the groans of relief that escaped their lips.

"My feet..." Alice whined.

"Well, you really should have worn more sensible footwear knowing you were going to be on your feet all night, Alice," Jasper pointed out, earning him a death look from Alice.

"Thanks for that, Jazz... Of course, if you idiots hadn't picked out these hussy outfits for us, we wouldn't have needed to get revenge, so actually, it's your fault." She waved her finger angrily in his direction.

"So how did you ladies do tonight?" Rose asked as she eyed Bella and Alice. They all reached into their tops and began rummaging for what I assumed, were their tips.

A cascade of paper and napkins fell onto the bar in front of each of them along with a few more pieces of plastic; similar to the one Rose had given Emmett earlier in the evening. They each made a pile and began counting them out, giggling and comparing.

"Are those..." Emmett started.

"Phone numbers?" I snarled, looking at Emmett and Jasper, who were just as furious as I was.

"Here...." Jasper grabbed a trashcan and started to swipe the pile in front of Alice into the can, but she threw her body over her pile protectively. "Alice, put them in here...."

"No way!" she snarled "Look... this is Brent's number. He's a firefighter and wants to take me to a movie..." She waved the small blue shred of paper in Jasper's face, grinning.

"Ohhh, I got his too!" Bella squealed followed by Rose, who threw a similar piece of blue paper into the air victoriously.

"Did you get one from John?" Rose said with a sigh, fanning herself with a business card.

"The personal trainer..." Bella sighed.

"With all the muscles..." Alice said in a dreamy voice.

"I'll show you muscles!" Emmett snapped. He took the card out of Rosalie's hand and ripped it into tiny pieces and threw it into the air, making it scatter onto the bar top in front of her.

Without missing a beat she turned to Bella and said with a wink, "I'll just borrow your card if I decide to take him up on his offer for that personal training session."

"I have a key to a lawyer's room!" Rosalie said proudly.

"Correction, you had a key to the lawyer's room, now the dumpster out back has the key..." Emmett grinned triumphantly from behind the bar as Rose scowled back at him.

"I got a doctor's key!" Bella gloated, waving the key to the Ritz in my face. "He's a surgeon..."

"Well, I got the key to a photographer's room. He offered to take some pictures of me for my modeling portfolio." Alice giggled as Jasper's mouth hung open, his hands clutched into tight fists on the bar top.

"..." Jasper hissed through clenched teeth, his whole body seething with anger.

"Well, he said with the right pictures, my career would take off. He also asked if I had a problem with nudity. I, of course, said no..."

That was the last straw for poor Jasper and he snapped. Without warning, he scooped up the pile of numbers off the table and put them in the trashcan and poured vodka on them to make them into a soupy mess. The can hit the ground with a metallic thud that echoed through the now empty club. He came around from behind the bar, gathered Alice into his arms, her tiny feet kicking wildly and stormed toward the door.

"I had twenty-three numbers.... Tell me if I won in the morning! Bye..." She waved her hand at us over Jasper's shoulder, giggling loudly.

"Won what?" I asked Bella, my eyebrow cocked in curiosity.

"Well, we might have made a small wager amongst ourselves..." She smirked in Rosalie's direction. "About who would get the most phone numbers tonight in these ridiculous outfits."

"So you tried to get guy's phone numbers?" I asked incredulously.

Emmett's hands hit the bar with a sharp smack.

"No, relax. We were not allowed to ask for them, they had to be offered. We wouldn't do

that to you guys.” She covered my hand with hers, her fingers gently tickling across my skin.

“And how many did you get, love?” I asked slightly amused now.

“Thirty-one,” she said loudly, beaming.

“I’m so proud,” I said sarcastically as I looked over at Emmett, who was huddled close to Rose, deep in what appeared to be a negotiation.

“Ick, I’m going to run and wash my hands, they are disgusting.” Bella got up from the bar. “And here, you can toss these for me.” She pushed the scraps of paper over to me before slipping her shoes back on with a wince and heading to the bathroom.

I didn’t waste a second after she left. I snatched up the trashcan and deposited Bella’s collection of phone numbers in with Alice’s, hiding the can under the bar, and making a mental note to empty it later.

Emmett and Rose continued their negotiation a few minutes longer while I cleaned the rest of the bar area. He finally must have met her price, because she got a wicked grin on her face and shoved the numbers to the side while he launched himself over the bar, grabbing her into his arms.

“You Ok to lock up Edward? We have, um.....something to go do...” His waggling eyebrows told me all I needed to know.

“I got it under control.” I shook my head as I slid Rosalie’s numbers into the trashcan as well. “I’ll talk to you tomorrow,” I called after them as they made a speedy exit out of the club, Emmett’s hands already roaming over her sequined pants as they ran out the door.

“Tell Bella, I got thirty-three!” Rose yelled as the back door closed behind her.

Speaking of Bella, where was she? I thought, suddenly getting worried.

Out of nowhere, the lights of the club clicked off, leaving me alone in complete darkness. “Bella?” I called out, as I stumbled along the length of the bar, trying to make my way over to the hallway where the light switches were located. “Bella!” I called sharply when she didn’t answer.

“I’m right here, Edward...relax.” Her voice was so close, that I reached my hand out blindly into the dark and felt her silky hair at my fingertips. She leaned into my hand, nuzzling her soft cheek against me, taking a step closer.

“Why are the lights off?”

Her hands swiftly untucked my shirt from my jeans and I felt myself being pulled forward. “Don’t you like being alone with me in the dark, Edward?” She slowly lifted my shirt up and over my head, her lips and tongue covering my bare chest with kisses. Her long hair tickled as it brushed against me while she continued running her lips across my skin.

“Bella...” My hands reached out into the darkness and again I found her hair, the outline of her head becoming barely visible as my eyes started adjusting to the darkness. The sounds of her heavy breath led me to her lips, so soft, so full, and so eager to be kissed. As I swept my tongue between her inviting lips, feeling the warmth of her mouth, she dug her nails into my back, and she returned my kiss with great fervor.

“God, you are exquisite.... and sexy.... You have no idea how delicious you looked in this uniform tonight. The things I wanted to do to you when I saw you in it...” My voice was low and husky, the passion of the moment completely taking over my body.

“Well, right now, I am a little more interested in the things you are going to do when I am out of my uniformBoss....” Her voice was the most seductive sound, a low purr when she said ‘boss’ driving me crazy. The gentle brush of her lips again on my chest made my body tense, on the verge of losing control.

With great speed, my hands found their way to the bottom hem of her stretchy shirt and I gently lifted, only to have it refuse to budge up and over her ample breasts. I tried again to wrestle the rubber shirt over her head, trying to get it off but not wanting to be too rough on her.

“God damn it...” I cursed softly. “Yet another reason to hate these stupid uniforms...”

I felt two tiny hands tightly clamp onto my wrists and pull me away from her chest. “Allow me.” I heard a few grunts as she thrashed her way out of the top.

After another second of silence, I felt her shirt resting on my shoulder while Bella’s now bare breasts made contact with my chest. “Do you think you can get the rest of my uniform off without any more help now ...Boss?” Her hand slipped to the waistband of my suddenly very tight jeans.

“Yeah, I got it from here.” I bent my head down to capture her lips again with mine, our mouths meeting and pleasing one another to the point of breathlessness. My hands followed the curves of her body until I felt the rough edges of her sequined shorts.

As I held onto her shorts, she took a few more steps back, leading us down the hallway toward the office, stopping just outside the door. I slipped my thumbs into the elastic waist of her shorts and began slowly easing them down over her hips, kissing her stomach as I bent down to help her shorts fall gently to the ground. On my knees in front of her, I reached up and slid her stockings down her smooth sexy legs, leaving a trail of kisses behind on her skin. I leaned toward her and let my fingers explore the lace of her panties, following the edges of the fabric with my lips.

Bella stumbled back a few more steps, giggling as she fumbled open the office door.

“Where are you going, love?” I asked as I caught her wrist, my tongue snaking its way up her arm to her shoulder as I stood back up, tasting the sweetness of her skin along the way.

“Well, you said you wanted to see me in your office, Boss.....”

I found her waist and wrapped my arms around her, the sensation of our bodies brushing together nearly bringing me to my knees. I picked her up and felt her legs lock behind my back tightly, her soft breasts pressed into my chest as she kissed and sucked on my neck. Not wasting any more time, I carried her through the office door, shutting it firmly behind us.

Bella unlocked her legs and slid very deliberately down my body, her hips rubbing against me in all the right places. When she reached for the waistband of my jeans and began unbuttoning them, I fell back against the door, unable to steady myself. I quickly turned the lock on the door, the loud click letting me know that even in my highly distracted

state, I had been successful.

She made quick work of the button and as she slid the fly down, her fingers grazed against my boxers causing a loud hiss to escape my lips when I felt her hands on me. She moved her fingers inside my jeans to the back of my hips as she worked the pants down over my rear and onto the ground at my feet. I felt her delicate leg wrap around mine as she rubbed herself against me, creating the most erotic friction between our bodies.

"Come here...." I took her hand and led her over to the large leather recliner in the corner of the room. I sat down into the chair and pulled her on top of me. When I reached over the side of the chair and released the latch to make it recline, Bella let out a squeal of delight.

"You really did think of everything, didn't you, boss?" She giggled as she lowered her body down onto mine.

We both froze for a second when we heard the back door open, followed by giggles. Bella whispered in my ear, "Rosalie." Her tiny body was shaking with silent laughter.

I could hear Emmett's deep voice saying something about 'Christening the office' as the handle of the door shook, once, twice, three times before he began cursing softly.

Bella had buried her face into my neck so Emmett wouldn't hear her laughter and I was doing everything to stay silent and not let a loud chuckle escape yet. I wondered how many times he would try the door before he realized we were in here.

"I can't see anything Rose, flip on the hall light." We could hear Rosalie running her hands along the walls, before finding the tiny switch.

"Why isn't this opening?" Emmett snarled as once again we heard the door handle jiggle.

"Um, Emmett.... You may want to see this...." Rosalie said snickering.

"Our clothes!" Bella gasped softly.

I held up three fingers, two fingers, one finger.....

"What the.....Edward! Are you in there? Bella?" Emmett growled as he sharply banged on the door. "There is a trail of clothes leading to this door... and is that a bra on one of the tables?"

"Hi, Emmett. Hi, Rose," Bella said in a sing-song voice.

"Do you need something, Emmett?" I asked, trying to sound annoyed and make Emmett feel even more uncomfortable.

"Um, well... no, Rose thought she forgot her purse... Ouch." We heard Emmett get smacked for his blatant lie. "But she found it so I guess we will just go..." he said sadly, obviously disappointed his plans for the evening fell through.

Rose called a quick goodbye and started down the hall. "Ok, well, we'll see you guys later....um, I'll lock the back door so you aren't interrupted...again."

"Thanks guys!" Bella called, now laughing openly at the situation.

"Hey, Emmett..." I hollered.

"Yeah?" He walked back to the office door.

"I just wanted to tell youThe lock on the office door works really well, just so you know... if you ever get a chance to use it that is..."

"You suck!" We listened to his heavy footsteps march down the hall, the back door slamming shut behind him as we laughed.

"Now, where were we before we were so rudely interrupted?" I asked as my hands made their way up the velvety skin of her back.

She slithered herself into a better position, straddling my hips as she lowered herself onto me, the heat from her body gliding over mine. "I believe you were right about here....Edward."

Unable to control myself, I let out a low moan.

"Still want me to get rid of the uniform?" Bella teased as she nipped at my earlobe.

"No, keep the uniform. I kinda like it now..." My head fell back onto the cushion of the chair as her hips continued to rock above me.

Bella smiled wickedly. "Whatever you say...Boss."

Xoxoxoxoxoxoxoxox

The End....

For real this time.....

No Joke.....

That's all folks! Thanks for the bazillion reviews you guys are the best!!

The END